



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

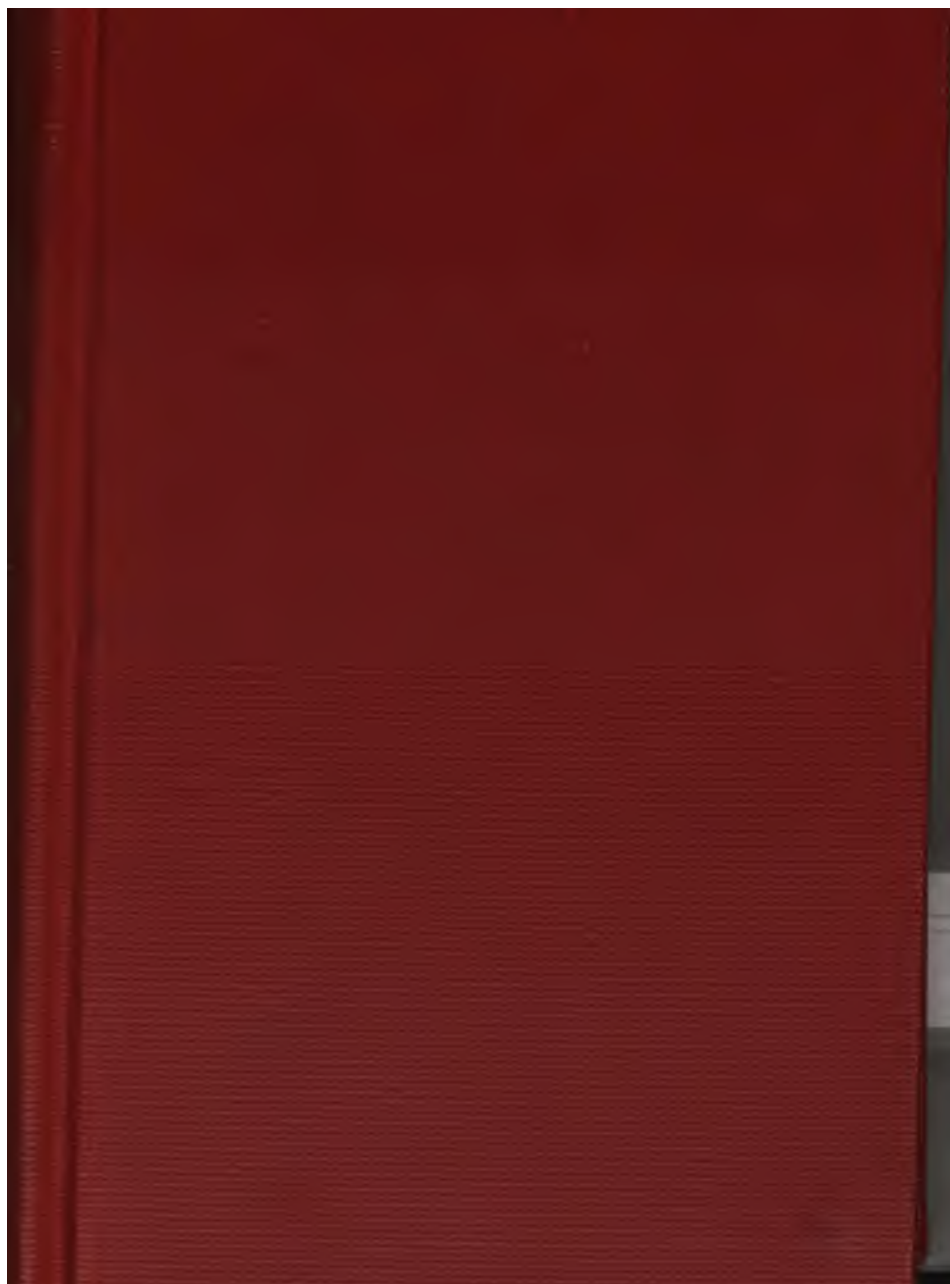
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



From the library of
Edward K. Putnam
presented by
Mrs. Edward K. Putnam



**STANFORD
UNIVERSITY
LIBRARIES**





HEROES AND HERO-WORSHIP



HEROES, HERO-WORSHIP

AND

THE HEROIC IN HISTORY

BY

THOMAS CARLYLE

EDITED, WITH NOTES AND INTRODUCTION, BY

MRS. ANNIE RUSSELL MARBLE, A.M.

New York

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY

LONDON: MACMILLAN & CO., LTD.

1897

All rights reserved

lv

824.6
C28 hmr
cop. 1

565952

COPYRIGHT, 1897,
By THE MACMILLAN COMPANY.

VAN NEST

Norwood Press
J. S. Cushing & Co. - Berwick & Smith
Norwood Mass. U.S.A.

PREFACE

IN offering to the public this edition of "Heroes and Hero-Worship," the editor hopes that the annotations may prove of some service not alone to students in schools and colleges, but also to the general reading public.

The varied allusions to mythology, philosophy, history of all ages, the many quotations from recondite sources, when not readily found, have often discouraged the student of Carlyle, and have interfered with a thoroughly intelligent and pleasurable reading of "Hero-Worship." The editor regrets her inability to elucidate all passages adequately; yet she has endeavored to make the explanations and reading references suggestive and helpful for more scholarly, exhaustive study of Carlyle's essays on "The Heroic in History."

WORCESTER, MASS., October 1, 1897.



CONTENTS

| | PAGE |
|---|------|
| INTRODUCTION | ix |
| LITERARY SUMMARY AND BIBLIOGRAPHY | xxxi |

LECTURE I

| | |
|--|---|
| THE HERO AS DIVINITY. Odin. Paganism: Scandinavian Mythology | 1 |
|--|---|

LECTURE II

| | |
|---|----|
| THE HERO AS PROPHET. Mahomet: Islam | 56 |
|---|----|

LECTURE III

| | |
|---|-----|
| THE HERO AS POET. Dante; Shakspeare | 104 |
|---|-----|

LECTURE IV

| | |
|---|-----|
| THE HERO AS PRIEST. Luther; Reformation: Knox; Puritanism | 154 |
|---|-----|

LECTURE V

| | |
|--|-----|
| THE HERO AS MAN OF LETTERS. Johnson, Rousseau, Burns | 206 |
|--|-----|

LECTURE VI

| | PAGE . |
|---|--------|
| THE HERO AS KING. Cromwell, Napoleon: Modern Revolutionism | 262 |
| SUMMARY | 327 |
| <hr/> | |
| NOTES | 330 |
| INDEX TO HERO-WORSHIP | 403 |
| INDEX TO NOTES AND INTRODUCTION | 407 |

INTRODUCTION

WE read in Carlyle's journal, Oct. 10, 1843: "To have my life surveyed and commented on by all men even wisely is no object with me, but rather the opposite; how much less to have it done *unwisely*! The world has no business with my life; the world will never know my life if it should write and read a hundred biographies of me. The main facts of it even are known and likely to be known to myself alone of created men."¹

When Carlyle, in his literary prime, expressed this independent attitude toward the public, he scarcely realized how often his wishes would be ignored. Even before his death, forced to yield to popular demand, he arranged for his biography. That work, committed to James Anthony Froude, and accomplished sincerely yet unwisely, has furnished a battle-ground for biographers and critics during the last fifteen years.

In introducing this edition of "Heroes and Hero-Worship," it may not seem superfluous, in spite of the scores of critical volumes on Carlyle, to include a brief survey of his life and literary

¹ Froude's "Thomas Carlyle: Life in London," I. 1.

influence. For the authentic facts of Carlyle's life, we are largely indebted to Froude's four volumes of biography, compiled from such primal sources as Carlyle's journal, note-books, and letters.¹ If, however, Boswell has been lauded as the model biographer, Froude has been condemned more, perhaps, than any other literary executor. Despite his defensive tone in the last two volumes of biography, despite his earnest patience, students of Carlyle agree that Froude lacked sympathetic insight, not alone in publishing the "Reminiscences," so sacredly entrusted, but also in his delineation of Carlyle's character. The latent humor, sympathy, nature-worship, affection, and friendship of Carlyle all seem submerged under the irony, doubt, misanthropy, and struggle of Froude's portrait. As David Masson aptly says, Mr. Froude has constantly the aspect "of a man driving a hearse."²

Many friendly critics have tried to correct the lugubrious impressions left by Froude's very valuable memoirs. Among the best revelations of Carlyle's character may be cited: the "Reminiscences" and "Letters" edited by Professor Charles Eliot Norton, who has also compiled the "Goethe-Carlyle" and "Carlyle-Emerson Correspondence"; David Masson's "Carlyle Personally and in his Writings," Richard Garnett's "Life of Carlyle," H. J. Nicoll's "Thomas Carlyle," and Moncure D. Conway's "Thomas Carlyle."¹

¹ See Bibliography for editions of these and other volumes.

² "Carlyle Personally and in his Writings," p. 17.

The future "sage of Chelsea" was born at Ecclefechan, Dumfries, Dec. 4, 1795, of sturdy parents, who have been immortalized in Carlyle's "Reminiscences." Integrity, persistence, repressed affection, vehemence, and scorn characterized both father and son. Hatred of sham and devotion to bare truth were also inheritances from the stonemason, James Carlyle, who, when urged to paint his house, answered scornfully: "Ye can jist slent the bog wi' yer ash-baket feet, for ye'll put nane o' yer glaur on ma door." Nor should one forget — for Carlyle never did — the influence of the devoted mother who, in her quiet life, gave sympathy and counsel to her son in his varied moods and struggles.

The Carlyles had a fixed ambition that their sons should have a broad education, — a racial aspiration so delicately portrayed in recent fiction by Barrie and "Ian Maclaren." Thomas, accordingly, at fourteen, entered Edinburgh University and graduated without winning special rank or appreciation except from Professor Leslie of the mathematical department. Through the latter's influence, Carlyle gained an appointment as teacher of mathematics at Annan Academy. Later at Kirkcaldy and Edinburgh he continued his teaching and studies.

Carlyle now formed his first warm friendship, — with Edward Irving, — and two important events resulted. Irving secured for his friend a position as tutor to Charles Buller, later to win brief renown as statesman, and thus Carlyle gained the advan-

tages of increased income and opportunities for study and travel. A second and more important introduction, in 1821, was to Irving's former pupil, the graceful, alert Jane Welsh. Carlyle was passing through grave doubts as to his material and spiritual future. He early realized that he could not satisfy his father's ambition that "he should enter the kirk." Apprenticeship to law was also distasteful. His studies brought restlessness and longing, rather than peace; his religious ferment was later revealed in "The Everlasting No" of "Sartor Resartus." This recorded an actual experience in Leith Walk, Edinburgh. Gradually he emerged from spiritual darkness into the reawakened life of "The Everlasting Yea."

At this critical period, when teaching seemed drudgery to his aspiring nature, he began to study German literature. Within the masterpieces of Schiller, Fichte, Novalis, and Richter he found new mental zest; and he gained personal inspiration from Goethe, his spiritual guide and "saviour." One cannot overestimate German thought as a formative influence in Carlyle's life. His philosophy, aspirations, and style, later to be embodied in "Sartor Resartus" and "Hero-Worship," received the stamp and seal of his German masters. Immediate results of his studies were "Life of Schiller" and translations of "Wilhelm Meister's Apprenticeship and Travels" and "Specimens of German Romance," published 1823-27.

Meanwhile, Carlyle's dyspeptic moods, his "eating of heart," tinged his correspondence with Jane

Welsh from 1822-26. Though permeated with latent love and tenderness, these letters have not inaptly been called "a great legal argument," in which the lovers discuss arrangements for their marriage and probabilities of future happiness. One is inclined often to utter indignant protests that such intimate relations in Carlyle's life should have been offered to public ridicule and distortion. No less unpardonable have been the curious inquiries into Carlyle's earlier associations with Margaret Gordon and Katharine or "Kitty" Fitzpatrick. The friends of each lady have claimed her as the original of "Blumine" in "Sartor Resartus," though many traits of the literary creation closely resemble those of Jane Welsh Carlyle.¹

Carlyle clearly gave his entire, unflinching loyalty to the young wife whom he had married in 1826. Their first home was at Comely Bank, Edinburgh, where, through Jeffrey's friendly aid, Carlyle wrote articles for the *Edinburgh Review*, many of which were later collected in his "Miscellaneous and Critical Essays." His "Life of Schiller" and translations had already found favor with Goethe, and a correspondence began which brought great happiness to the Carlyles and atoned, in a measure, for financial duress and the vain efforts to gain a University professorship.² The early essays on German authors, followed by the fine analysis of

¹ See *Westminster Review*, August, 1894, "Carlyle and the Blumine of Sartor Resartus."

² "Goethe-Carlyle Correspondence," edited by C. E. Norton, London and New York, 1887.

Burns,¹ showed originality and scholarship, but were merely tentative efforts. An attempt to write a novel ended at the seventh chapter. This fiction, later published as "Wotton Reinfred,"² was largely incorporated into Book II. of "Sartor Resartus."

In his journal, Oct. 28, 1830, Carlyle wrote "Written a strange piece on clothes," etc. This sentence chronicled the beginning of Carlyle's real literary power. Their Edinburgh home had been abandoned for Craigenputtock, whose isolated location has caused so many anathemas against Carlyle. Financial stress brought them to this lonely farm house, belonging to the Welshes, and here Carlyle, in truth an intellectual recluse, worked on his "Apocalypse of Soul," as "Sartor Resartus" has been called. Mrs. Carlyle, in spite of exaggerated domestic trials, was proud and happy in the completion of this "work of genius, dear." In the second lecture on "Hero-Worship," Carlyle emphasized Mahomet's loyal memory of Kadijah, who "believed in me when none else would believe. In the whole world I had but one friend and she was that!" It requires no great imagination to accept the analogy, found by critics, between this tribute to Kadijah's faith and Mrs. Carlyle's inspiration and encouragement.

Publishers, however, did not share her tribute and "Sartor Resartus" vainly sought recognition. The actual financial struggles of Carlyle, with capital

¹ "Miscellaneous and Critical Essays," Vol. I.

² "The Last Words of Thomas Carlyle," New York, 1892.

varying "from £5 to twelvepence," were secondary to his mental gloom. No one can resist pity for Mrs. Carlyle, compelled to endure vexations and social starvation, yet does her martyrdom overshadow sympathy for Carlyle's spiritual distress?

The wife needed an admixture of unemotional, unexaggerated frankness with her courage. With false pride, now and later, she concealed her disappointments and jealousies from the husband who lacked intuition, but who never failed in tender, deep affection. It is not strange that the revelations of her nervous sufferings, read in her journal after her death, should have caused a shock to Carlyle's heart and brain. The Carlyles enjoyed many seasons of rare companionship and devotion, as their letters witness, yet they were both often unhappy, and the cause was not alone in Carlyle. They seemed to disprove the adage, "*Similia similibus curantur*"; their traits were too similar, they supplemented not complemented each other. Mrs. Alexander Ireland has given a just analysis of the character of each,¹ while John Burroughs, in pungent, graphic style, summarizes their traits in his essay, "A Sunday in Cheyne Row."²

To return from Carlyle's home life to his slowly developing literary genius, we find him writing essays for *Fraser's Magazine* and other reviews. Some of the subjects, Croker's Boswell, Cagliostro, Voltaire, and Diderot, doubtless proved incentives to the "French Revolution" and lectures on "Heroes."

¹ "Life of Jane Welsh Carlyle."

² "Fresh Fields," pp. 241-243.

The story of the reception of "Sartor Resartus" by the public, when it appeared in *Fraser's Magazine* in 1833, two years after its completion, has become so familiar that it needs no repetition. It gained, we are told, but two known admirers, Emerson and a priest in Cork. To-day, variously regarded as symbolic biography, philosophy, or prose-poem, "Sartor Resartus" has found a merited, unique place among literary masterpieces.

Undaunted by critics' frowns, Carlyle had begun work on his "French Revolution,"—first, however, removing his residence to the shrine so familiar to tourists, 5 Cheyne Row, Chelsea. Few incidents in literary history have elicited more sympathy than Carlyle's loss by fire of the first manuscript volume of the history, which had been loaned to John Stuart Mill. Carlyle's natural irascibility was conquered by Christian forbearance in this trial. With dogged perseverance he rewrote the first and finished the second volume, declaring the work "came direct and flamingly from the heart of a living man."¹

This "French Revolution," published 1838, startling and epic, aroused the lethargic public to an interest in Carlyle. Its text seems the one which became more familiar in "Hero-Worship," "History is the biography of Great Men." Critics, then and later, have arraigned Carlyle for his extravagant hero-worship and his imaginative treatment of events at the expense of minor inaccuracies. Yet as a work of vivid dramatic force, George Saintsbury speaks

¹ Froude's "Thomas Carlyle: Life in London," I. 72.

truly: "The French Revolution of Carlyle is the French Revolution as it happened, as it was. The French Revolution of the others is the French Revolution dug up in lifeless fragments by excellent persons with the newest patent pickaxes."¹

Carlyle was still hampered financially, before and after the history was published, and, to increase his income, a course of lectures on German literature was arranged by certain friends, notably Harriet Martineau and Miss Wilson. This first experiment, 1836-37, was followed by three more courses on "Periods of European Culture," "History of Literature," and "Heroes and Hero-Worship." Portions of the lectures on "History of Literature" have been published in magazines, from notes taken by Thomas Anstey. A volume, containing notes on eleven of the twelve lectures delivered, was published recently by Professor J. Raey Greene.² Beginning with the classic authors, Carlyle traced the development of literature through mediæval romanticism and eighteenth-century scepticism down to modern transcendentalism and social problems. Many themes suggest more detailed analysis in "Heroes and Hero-Worship" and, evidently, the earlier course was preparatory to his lectures on Dante and Shakespeare, Luther and Knox, Johnson and Rousseau. The last and most successful course on "Heroes" included the only lectures revised and published by Carlyle.

Biographers say that the lectures were attended

¹"Corrected Impressions," by George Saintsbury, p. 54.

²"History of Literature," New York, 1892.

by cultivated and fashionable audiences, number from two to three hundred. That Carlyle was a successful lecturer, if one gauges success by oratorical skill and fine presence, no listener would affirm; that his manner, like his thoughts, was fervent and potent, carrying his auditors with him in his appreciation of lofty ideals and vehement remonstrances, none would deny. Carlyle's reminiscences of the lectures are both droll and pathetic, showing his indifference to the honors of the rostrum.

"Our main revenue three or four years now was from lectures in Edward Street, Portman Square, the only free room there was. Brought in on the average, perhaps £200 for a month's hard labour. . . . Detestable mixture of prophecy and play-acting, as I sorrowfully defined it; nothing could well be hatefuller to me; but I was obliged."¹ Again, his journal, July 27, 1838, we read: "The lecture terminated quite triumphantly, thank Heaven! . . . If dire famine drive me, I must even lecture, if not otherwise. Whoever he may be that wants to get into the centre of a fuss, it is not I. Freed under the blue sky—ah me! with a bit of bread and peace and pepticity to eat it with, thank for my money before all the glory of Portman Square or the solar system itself. But we must take what we can get and be thankful."² The first course on "Heroes" was delivered in May, 1840, and was considered a great success. Carlyle, with its depreciation, called the lectures his "bad best."

¹ "Reminiscences," Jane Welsh Carlyle, p. 261.

² Froude's "Thomas Carlyle: Life in London," I. 121.

began at once to revise them for publication and they won ready sale. David Masson says they represented the climax to "Carlyle's literary effulgence."¹ A brief examination of the volume will be found in later pages of this introduction.

Wearied by the labor of revision, Carlyle spent a few months in rest, — or restlessness, as it proved, — before beginning "Cromwell's Letters and Speeches." He paused in his researches to write rapidly "Past and Present," (1843) a partial reply to his earlier economic treatise, "Chartism." Though he had renounced the faith of Mill and his disciples, yet Carlyle's ideas for social and economic reform were always vague and unstable. Unquestionably, "Past and Present" pictured a vivid literary contrast between mediævalism and modern England, yet it lacked continuity and practical influence.

"Cromwell's Letters and Speeches," which appeared in 1845, was wholly unlike the "French Revolution" in scope and treatment. As in the lecture on Cromwell in "Heroes and Hero-Worship," Carlyle greatly idealized his hero. True, he allows Cromwell to be his own biographer in the history, yet the editor carefully suppresses all "elucidations" which would be unfavorable to his subject. "Cromwell" was a monumental historical work, but it failed to startle and awaken the public like the pictorial "French Revolution."

A period of doubt and of discontent with political affairs found expression in "Latter-Day Pamphlets," 1850, severe upon the mercantile and utili-

¹ "Carlyle Personally and in his Writings," p. 60.

tarian "spirit of the age." This bitter gloom, however, did not shadow an almost coeval work of friendship, "Life of John Sterling." Other friends of middle life who have, in many cases, paid grateful tribute to Carlyle, were Ruskin, Kingsley, Dickens, Mazzini, Browning, Tennyson, Maurice, and Masson. Emerson, also, whose visit to the Craigenputtoch home had seemed a benediction, came to England to lecture, 1847-48, and strengthened the warm friendship with Carlyle, which had never waned during the years of correspondence.

Carlyle's last ambitious work was his "History of Frederick the Great." It proved, indeed, "labour and sorrow"; for, in addition to the excessive research, Carlyle was early disillusioned regarding his "greatest of modern men." Dogged, though disappointed, he labored on for thirteen years, with two faithful assistants, and completed the last and sixth volume in 1865. To his journal he unburdened his soul in relief when he had finished that "unutterable book."¹ A work which caused its author such travail failed to win spontaneous applause from the public. Its ponderous and somewhat disjointed structure, however, can never dim the many unequalled scenes of brilliant, dramatic action, and Carlyle's "Frederick" ranks among the few great histories.

The same year that "Frederick" appeared, Carlyle was chosen Lord Rector of Edinburgh University. Averse to all public honors, he was persuaded to accept this signal recognition and

¹ Froude's "Thomas Carlyle : Life in London," II. 241.

and pleasure in the proud delight of his wife, whose later years of invalidism had evoked his anxious tenderness. Yet, at the very period of triumph, came the fatal telegram, announcing Carlyle's sudden death.

For the surviving fifteen years of his life Carlyle accomplished little normal mental work. Lonely, morbid, reproachful, he wrote the "Reminiscences" of Jane Welsh Carlyle, of Irving, and of Jeffrey. There is frequent evidence that Carlyle did not intend to have the "Reminiscences," nor his broken-hearted journal-memories, given to the public. Explicit is the postscript, suppressed by Froude, wherein Carlyle doubts the wisdom of publication and forbids any portion to be published without his editing.¹ We must accept Froude's explanation,² yet we must also deplore the lack of "fitting" which has allowed a seeming stain upon the memory of one of the world's most upright and conscientious men.

In addition to the "Reminiscences," Carlyle's last literary work included "Shooting Niagara" and a few other vigorous polemics, "Early Kings of Norway" and "Portraits of John Knox," the last two essays published jointly in 1875. He likewise revised his more complete works for collected editions.³ Refusing knighthood and pension, he lived quietly at his Chelsea home, with his niece,

¹ See Richard Garnett's "Life of Carlyle," p. 157.

² Froude's "Thomas Carlyle: Life in London," II. 348-352.

³ The Library Edition, still standard, was published in London, 1911-14. See *Bibliography*.

until his death, Feb. 5, 1834. By his request he was buried at Ecclefechan.

How complex was Carlyle's nature! Graphic, poetic imagination, broad scholarship, keen insight, and interest in humanity's sorrows and enthusiasms, tender, latent love, sardonic humor, delight in nature and animal life, unswerving faith in God and duty,—these traits were existent with vehemence, which often became pugnacity, doubt, gloom, undeveloped tastes, and perverted judgments. While Carlyle's character, with its nobleness and its limitations, has been recognized at last by students, there is no such consensus of opinion regarding his literary influence. He has been eulogized as "the greatest seer of the century"; he has been scorned as "a rugged peasant" whose unique denunciations created only a temporary and waning interest. Among contemporaneous critics, perhaps none has possessed more sympathetic judgment than the recently deceased Richard Holt Hutton. He has written detached essays upon Carlyle, which form a careful, historical study of his influence not only upon the thought but also upon the literature of the age.¹ Denying Carlyle's right to be called a "prophet," with a special message, he denominates him "a prophetic artist." The defects and weaknesses, the potency and influence of Carlyle are admirably summarized in this climatic period: "In origin a peasant, who originated a new sort of

¹ "Contemporary Thought and Thinkers," Vol. I., London and New York, 1894; also, "Modern Guides to English Thought in Matters of Faith," London and New York, 1891.

culture, and created a most artificial style full at once of affectation and genuine power; in faith a Calvinistic sceptic, who rejected Christianity while clinging ardently to the symbolic style of the Hebrew teaching; in politics a pioneer of democracy, who wanted to persuade the people to trust themselves to the almost despotic guidance of Lord-protectors whom he could not tell them how to find; in literature a rugged sort of poet, who could not endure the chains of rhythm, and even jeered at rhyme; — Carlyle certainly stands out a paradoxical figure, solitary, proud, defiant, vivid. No literary man in the nineteenth century is likely to stand out more distinctly than Thomas Carlyle, both for faults and genius, to the centuries which will follow.”¹

Among the most recent critiques upon Carlyle's literary rank is Frederick Harrison's "Carlyle's Place in Literature," which appeared in the *Forum*, July, 1894, and has since been embodied in book-form.² Mr. Harrison has been a fearless iconoclast in this series of essays, defying many a reader to again firmly place his literary idol on its pedestal. He has, however, uttered many indisputable truths about the "Greater Victorian Writers." Mr. Harrison considers Carlyle's influence historically; he notes its permanence thus far amid the fluctuating tastes of two generations. While convinced that the past has listened more reverently to Carlyle's teachings than will the future, yet he justly praises the literary beauties of the masterpieces.

¹ "Modern Guides to English Thought in Matters of Faith," pp. 44, 45.

² See Bibliography.

Among the truest friends of the Carlyles was Joseph Mazzini, and his letters to Mrs. Carlyle in her unhappiness are full of insight and help.¹ Though Carlyle and Mazzini differed in political tastes, yet each recognized the sincerity and nobleness of the other. In the *British and Foreign Review*, October, 1843, Mazzini published an essay on "The Genius and Writings of Thomas Carlyle."² This analysis had more than contemporary value, and has since been published in varied forms. As Mazzini attended some of Carlyle's lectures on "Heroes" and refuted some extravagant statements, the criticism has special pertinence to this volume. "In his vocation as a writer," said Mazzini "he fills the tribune of an apostle, and it is here that we must judge him." The critic emphasized the negative quality of Carlyle's social reform principles, yet he recognized the service done to humanity by the bold attacks on formalism, sham, materialism, and selfishness. Carlyle compelled a study of social questions; he awakened an interest, also, in the ethical and spiritual problems. Mazzini ranked Carlyle as "a powerful literary artist," whose influence as teacher and prophet was dwarfed by his recognition of the individual only,—his emphasis of the history of "Great Men" to the exclusion of racial unity and progress of humanity, wherein Great Men are only "Marking-stones."

In "Heroes and Hero-Worship" one finds cause

¹ Froude's "Thomas Carlyle: Life in London," I. 336, 328.

² Appendix to "The Socialism and Unsocialism of Thomas Carlyle," Vol. II., New York, 1891.

culture, and created a most artificial style full at once of affectation and genuine power; in faith a Calvinistic sceptic, who rejected Christianity while clinging ardently to the symbolic style of the Hebrew teaching; in politics a pioneer of democracy, who wanted to persuade the people to trust themselves to the almost despotic guidance of Lord-protectors whom he could not tell them how to find; in literature a rugged sort of poet, who could not endure the chains of rhythm, and even jeered at rhyme; —Carlyle certainly stands out a paradoxical figure, solitary, proud, defiant, vivid. No literary man in the nineteenth century is likely to stand out more distinctly than Thomas Carlyle, both for faults and genius, to the centuries which will follow.”¹

Among the most recent critiques upon Carlyle’s literary rank is Frederick Harrison’s “Carlyle’s Place in Literature,” which appeared in the *Forum*, July, 1894, and has since been embodied in book-form.² Mr. Harrison has been a fearless iconoclast in this series of essays, defying many a reader to again firmly place his literary idol on its pedestal. He has, however, uttered many indisputable truths about the “Greater Victorian Writers.” Mr. Harrison considers Carlyle’s influence historically; he notes its permanence thus far amid the fluctuating tastes of two generations. While convinced that the past has listened more reverently to Carlyle’s teachings than will the future, yet he justly praises the literary beauties of the masterpieces.

¹ “Modern Guides to English Thought in Matters of Faith,” pp. 44, 45.

² See Bibliography.

Among the ~~most~~ friends of the Carlyles was Joseph Mazzini, and his letters to Mrs. Carlyle in her unhappiness are full of insight and help.¹ Though Carlyle and Mazzini differed in political tenets, yet each recognized the sincerity and nobleness of the other. In the *British and Foreign Review*, October, 1843, Mazzini published an essay on "The Genius and Writings of Thomas Carlyle."² This analysis had more than contemporary value, and has since been published in varied forms. As Mazzini attended some of Carlyle's lectures on "Heroes," and refuted some extravagant statements, the criticism has special pertinence to this volume. "In his vocation as a writer," said Mazzini, "he fills the tribune of an apostle, and it is here that we must judge him." The critic emphasized the negative quality of Carlyle's social reform principles, yet he recognized the service done to humanity by the bold attacks on formulism, sham, materialism, and selfishness. Carlyle compelled a study of social questions; he awakened an interest, also, in the ethical and spiritual problems. Mazzini ranked Carlyle as "a powerful literary artist," whose influence as teacher and prophet was dwarfed by his recognition of the individual only,—his emphasis of the history of "Great Men" to the exclusion of racial unity and progress of humanity, wherein Great Men are only "Marking-stones."

In "Heroes and Hero-Worship" one finds cause

¹ Froude's "Thomas Carlyle: Life in London," I. 326, 328.

² Appendix to "The Socialism and Unsocialism of Thomas Carlyle," Vol. II, New York, 1891.

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTEN

yet defying assimilation into his general history. Despite his reiteration, "A Hero is a Hero at all points,"¹ the careful reader finds it difficult to include in his category of "Heroes" such diverse characters as the mythical Odin, the questionable Rousseau, the disputed Cromwell, and the revolutionary Mirabeau.

This very speculation, however, regarding Carlyle's heroes may furnish one merit of the volume. The student is given incentive to broad and thoughtful historical reading; he realizes that Carlyle is an inspiration, not a final authority in criticism. To quote Thoreau again: "No doubt some of Carlyle's worthies, should they ever return to earth, would find themselves unpleasantly put upon their good behavior to sustain their characters; but if he can return a man's life more perfect to our hands than it was left at his death, following out the design of its author, we shall have no great cause to complain."

There is great literary inspiration and delight in these essays. Carlyle's familiarity with mythology, with history, secular and religious, with literature, in its masterpieces and minor efforts, is attested on every page. Few authors can incorporate so many apt allusions from remote and familiar sources, so many quotations and renditions from classic and modern authors. Study of German literature has borne fruit in direct and assimilated thoughts from Goethe, Schiller, Richter, Novalis, Fichte, and others. The man Carlyle, with his mingled humor,

¹ "Heroes and Hero-Worship," p. 37: 12.

athos, scorn, and sympathy, is clearly revealed in such graphic passages as the story of Dante's wanderings, the analysis of Burns and his "fire-flies," the delicate, pathetic reference to Cromwell's mother. A pictorial and poetic imagination alone could paint such scenes as the description of Iceland, the lurid panorama of Dante's "Inferno," or Luther's historic trial.

"Heroes and Hero-Worship" contains many repetitions of thought and phrase from "Sartor Resartus," and the "French Revolution." There are also many suggestions expanded later in "Past and Present," "Latter-Day Pamphlets," "Cromwell," and "Frederick." He deplores dilettantism and scepticism with more regret and less denunciation than in "Past and Present"; he denounces cant and quackery as responsible for many current evils. He urges gratitude for past heroes and confidence in future "Great Men," who symbolize the "divineness in Man and Nature." As usual "the dynamics," not "the mechanics," of life arouse his interest. In truth, the sage and seer, Carlyle, justifies John Morley's tribute: "One of Mr. Carlyle's chief and just glories is, that for more than forty years he has clearly seen and kept constantly in his own sight and that of his readers the profoundly important crisis in the midst of which we are living."¹

The diction of "Hero-Worship" is less startling than that of his other masterpieces, and yet it is unique and "Carlylese." The attitude of later critics toward Carlyle's style is significant. In by-

¹ "Critical Miscellanies," p. 196.

gone days Taine raised a general echo by denouncing it as "demoniacal." Progress of years, however, has given freedom of style as well as of thought. A brilliant author need no longer model his diction after the calm, impassioned Cicero or Addison. If the form is spontaneous and effective, adapted to the thought, critics will overlook, though they deplore, eccentricities, inversions, occasional barbarisms. No writer ever possessed a more individual and forceful style to express intense thoughts than Carlyle chose. If some phrases savor of affectation, and suggest to the careful study of Richter's peculiar forms, yet on the whole Carlyle must be classified as a literary artist of unique, chiaroscuro style.

It may be difficult for the reader to forgive the unlicensed, erratic use of compound words and the strange inverted sentence-structure, yet to atone for these peculiarities we meet such aphoristic sentences as: "A man lives by believing something not by debating and arguing about many things." "The sincere alone can recognize sincerity."² "The true University of these days is a Collection of Books."³ "Adversity is sometimes hard upon a man; but for one man who can stand prosperity there are a hundred that will stand adversity."⁴

Carlyle is a teacher and a preacher, if not prophet and a seer. "Heroes and Hero-Worship," like all his writings, contains negations, contradic-

¹ "Heroes and Hero-Worship," p. 233: 28.

² "Heroes and Hero-Worship," p. 289: 31.

³ "Heroes and Hero-Worship," p. 217: 19.

⁴ "Heroes and Hero-Worship," p. 260: 14-17.

tions, incompleteness, half-formed tastes, and overgrown prejudices, yet it brings an inspiring message to every reader. We read, in Carlyle's journal, that his auditors, in 1840, "Sate breathless or broke out into all kinds of testimonies of good will."¹ The defensive and fearless tributes which he paid to such heroes as Mahomet, Burns, Knox, and Cromwell, comparatively unknown and unvalued fifty years ago, have been accepted now as common truths. Other views and statements made by Carlyle have been largely disproved by later scholars. The value of these essays, however, as incentive to scholarly reading and as revelation of Carlyle's magnetic thought and style, will ever remain, for in them he has spoken words of sincerity and heroism to each individual soul.

¹ Froude's "Thomas Carlyle: Life in London," I. 157.



LITERARY SUMMARY AND BIBLIOGRAPHY

- 95 Thomas Carlyle born at Ecclefechan, Dumfries, Dec. 4.
- 96 [Burns died at Dumfries.]
- 99 Carlyle entered Edinburgh University, intending to study for the ministry.
- 4 Teacher of Mathematics at Annan Academy.
- 7 Teacher at Kirkcaldy; formed friendship with Edward Irving.
- 3 A season of study yet gloom at Edinburgh.
- 1821 Wrote sixteen articles for Edinburgh Encyclopædia; influenced by German authors.
- Beginning of acquaintance and correspondence with Jane Welsh.
- : Critique on Faust in New Edinburgh Review; translation of Legendre's Elements of Geometry and Trigonometry.
- 1824 Tutor to Charles Buller; visits to London, Paris, etc.
- : Finished translation of Wilhelm Meister's Apprenticeship and Travels, 3 vols.; began correspondence with Goethe; translation of Legendre with Essay on Proportion published.
- 1824 Life of Schiller in London Magazine.
- Life of Schiller published in book form.
- Married Jane Welsh, Oct. 17; lived at 21 Comely Bank, Edinburgh.
- 1827 Translation of Specimens of German Romance, including tales by Musæus, LaMotte-Fouqué, Tieck, Hoffman, Richter, and Goethe; published 1827, 4

- vols. ; seven chapters of incomplete novel, Wotton Reinfred, written ; essays on Goethe, Werner, Heine, etc., in *Edinburgh Review* and *Foreign Review*.
- 1828 Residence at Craigenputtoch ; financial stress and mental gloom ; Essay on Burns in *Edinburgh Review*.
- 1829 Essays on Voltaire, Novalis, and Signs of the Times in *Foreign Review* and *Edinburgh Review*.
- 1830 Translation of Richter's review of *L'Allemagne* in *Fraser's Magazine*, also poem, *Cui Bono* ; Sartor Resartus begun, Oct.
- 1830-1831 Vain search for publisher for *Sartor Resartus* ; poems, *The Beetle*, *The Sower's Song*, *Tragedy of the Night-Moth* in *Fraser's Magazine* ; acquaintance with Mill ; the *Nibelungen Lied* in *Westminster Review*.
- 1831 Characteristics published in *Edinburgh Review* ; Luther's Psalm in *Fraser's Magazine*.
- 1832 Death of father ; Reminiscences of James Carlyle ; Essays on Johnson and Diderot in *Fraser's Magazine* and *Foreign Quarterly* ; [death of Goethe] ; essays on Goethe in *Fraser's Magazine* and *Foreign Quarterly*.
- 1833 Essay on *Cagliostro* in *Fraser's Magazine* ; *Sartor Resartus* published in *Fraser's Magazine* ; Emerson's visit to Craigenputtoch.
- 1834 Failure to secure professorship ; removal of Carlyles to 5 Cheyne Row, Chelsea.
- 1835 First volume of *French Revolution* burned and rewritten.
- 1836 *Sartor Resartus* published in America ; Essay on Mirabeau in London and *Westminster Review* ; *The Diamond Necklace* in *Fraser's Magazine*.
- 1837 *French Revolution* finished and published.
- 1837-1840 Courses of Lectures in London on German Literature, History of Literature, and Heroes and Hero-Worship.

- 3 Sartor Resartus published in England; essays on Walter Scott and Varnhagen von Ense's Memoirs in London and Westminster Review.
- 3 Chartism published; Critical and Miscellaneous Essays, 4 vols., published (reprints of magazine essays).
- 1 Heroes and Hero-Worship published.
- 2 Visits to Naseby and other scenes connected with Cromwell's history.
- 3 Past and Present published.
- 5 Oliver Cromwell's Letters and Speeches, with elucidations, published, 2 vols.
- 7-1849 Years of unrest; visit to Ireland.
- 0 Latter-Day Pamphlets published.
- 2 First trip to Germany to gain material for History of Frederick; second trip, 1858.
- 8 First two volumes of Frederick the Great.
- 5 Frederick completed, 6 vols.; elected Lord Rector of Edinburgh University.
- 6 Inaugural at Edinburgh, April 2; Mrs. Carlyle's sudden death, April 21.
- 3-1867 Years of sadness; wrote Reminiscences of Jane Welsh Carlyle, Irving, and Jeffrey.
- 87-1870 Shooting Niagara and other political essays published.
- 71 Mr. Carlyle on the war; reprints from letters in London Times.
- 72 Early Kings of Norway } Published in one volume,
75 Portraits of John Knox } 1875.
- 81 Died Feb. 5; buried at Ecclefechan, Feb. 10.

An exhaustive bibliography of Carlyle, by John P. Anderson, is appended to Richard Garnett's *Life of Carlyle*, London, 1887 (Great Writers Series). The following references are designed to aid general reading, and include only Carlyle's important works and selected criticisms.

I. LIBRARY EDITION — 34 vols. London, 1871, 8vo.

Sartor Resartus.

The French Revolution, 3 vols.

Life of Schiller.

Critical and Miscellaneous Essays, 6 vols.

On Heroes, Hero-Worship, and the Heroic in History.

Past and Present.

Oliver Cromwell's Letters and Speeches, 5 vols.

Latter-Day Pamphlets.

Life of John Sterling.

History of Friedrich II. of Prussia, 10 vols.

The Early Kings of Norway; Portraits of John Knox;
General Index.

Translations from the German, 3 vols.

Other editions of Carlyle's collected works are:

The People's Edition, 37 vols. London, 1871-1874.

The Ashburton Edition, 20 vols. London, 1885-1891.

The Centenary Edition. New York, 1896-1897, 30 vols
8vo., now in publication.

II. EDITIONS OF SINGLE WORKS NOT INCLUDED IN COLLECTED WORKS.

On the Choice of Books; the Inaugural Address at Edinburgh. London, 1866.

Last Words of Thomas Carlyle. Edinburgh, 1882; New York, 1891.

Lectures on History of Literature. New York, 1892.

Correspondence between Goethe and Carlyle, edited by Charles Eliot Norton. London, 1887; New York, 1888.

The Correspondence of Thomas Carlyle and Ralph Waldo Emerson, edited by Charles Eliot Norton, 2 vols. Boston, 1883.

Early Letters of Thomas Carlyle, edited by Charles Eliot Norton, 2 vols. London and New York, 1886.

- Reminiscences by Thomas Carlyle, edited by Charles Elliot Norton, 2 vols. London, 1887; 2 vols. in one, New York, 1887.
- Reminiscences by Thomas Carlyle, edited by James Anthony Froude, 2 vols. London, 1881; 2 vols. in one, New York, 1881.
- Reminiscences of my Irish Journey in 1849. London, 1882.

III. BIOGRAPHY AND CRITICISM

- Arnold, Matthew. Discourses in America; Emerson and Carlyle. London, 1885.
- Bayne, Peter. Lessons from my Masters (Carlyle, Ruskin, Tennyson). London, 1879.
- Birrell, Augustine. Obiter Dicta. London, 1884; New York, 1891.
- Boyesen, H. H. Essays on German Literature, Goethe and Carlyle. New York, 1892.
- Burroughs, John. Fresh Fields. Boston, 1890. In Carlyle's Country, A Sunday in Cheyne Row; Indoor Studies. Boston, 1893. Emerson and Carlyle.
- Conway, Moncure D. Thomas Carlyle. London and New York, 1881.
- Emerson, Ralph Waldo. English Traits, new ed. Boston, 1894.
- Froude, James Anthony. Thomas Carlyle: History of First Forty Years. London and New York, 1882. Thomas Carlyle: Life in London, 2 vols. in one. London and New York, 1884.
- Fuller, Margaret (Ossoli). Memoirs, Vol. II. Boston, 1874.
- Garnett, Richard. Life of Carlyle. London, 1887.
- Harrison, Frederick. Studies in Early Victorian Literature. New York, 1896.
- Hutton, Richard H. Contemporary Thought and Thinkers, Vol. I. London and New York, 1894. Modern Guides to English Thought in Matters of Faith. London and New York, 1891.

- Ireland, Mrs. Alexander. *Life of Jane Welsh Carlyle.* New York, 1891.
- Masson, David. *Carlyle Personally and in his Writings.* London, 1885.
- Mazzini, Joseph. *Essay on the Genius and Writings of Carlyle: Appendix to Socialism and Unsocialism of Carlyle.* New York, 1891. Also, in *Life and Writings of Mazzini*, Vol. IV. London, 1870.
- Mead, Edwin D. *The Philosophy of Carlyle.* Boston, 1881.
- Morley, John. *Critical Miscellanies, Ser. I.* London, 1886.
- Nicoll, H. J. *Thomas Carlyle.* London and New York, 1885.
- Robertson, J. M. *Modern Humanists.* London, 1891.
- Saintsbury, George. *Corrected Impressions.* New York, 1896.
- Stephen, Leslie. *Hours in a Library*, Vol. III. ; *Carlyle's Ethics.* London, 1892.
- Sterling, John. *Essays and Tales*, Vol. I. London, 1848.
- Taine, H. A. *English Literature*, Vol. IV. Edinburgh, 1874.
- Thoreau, Henry David. *A Yankee in Canada, etc.* Boston, 1866.
- Whipple, Edwin P. *Essays and Reviews*, Vol. II. Boston, 1856.

HEROES, HERO-WORSHIP

AND

THE HEROIC IN HISTORY

LECTURE I

THE HERO AS DIVINITY. ODIN. PAGANISM:
SCANDINAVIAN MYTHOLOGY

[Tuesday, 5th May 1840]

WE have undertaken to discourse here for a little on Great Men, their manner of appearance in our world's business, how they have shaped themselves in the world's history, what ideas men formed of them, what work they did; — on Heroes, namely, 5 and on their reception and performance; what I call Hero-worship and the Heroic in human affairs. Too evidently this is a large topic; deserving quite other treatment than we can expect to give it at present. A large topic; indeed, an illimitable one; 10 wide as Universal History itself. For, as I take it, Universal History, the history of what man has accomplished in this world, is at bottom the History of the Great Men who have worked here. They were the leaders of men, these great ones; the mod- 15

1 others, ~~givers~~ and in a wide sense creators,
 whatever the general mass of men contrived
 to or to attain: all things that we see stand
 accomplished in the world are properly the out-
 5 material result the practical realisation and ei-
 bodiment of Thoughts that dwelt in the Gre-
 Men sent into the world: the soul of the who
 world's history, it may justly be considered, we
 the history of these. Too clearly it is a topic w
 10 shall do no justice to in this place!

One comfort is, that Great Men, taken up in an
 way, are profitable company. We cannot look, how-
 ever imperfectly, upon a great man, without gaining
 something by him. He is the living light-fountain
 15 which it is good and pleasant to be near. The light
 which enlightens, which has enlightened the dark-
 ness of the world; and this not as a kindled lamp
 only, but rather as a natural luminary shining by the
 gift of Heaven; a flowing light-fountain, as I say
 20 of native original insight, of manhood and hero-
 nobleness; — in whose radiance all souls feel that
 is well with them. On any terms whatsoever, you
 will not grudge to wander in such neighbourhood
 for a while. These Six classes of Heroes, chosen
 25 out of widely-distant countries and epochs, and in
 mere external figure differing altogether, ought, if you
 look faithfully at them, to illustrate several things
 for us. Could we see *them* well, we should get some
 glimpses into the very marrow of the world's his-
 30 tory. How happy, could I but, in any measure, in
 such times as these, make manifest to you the mean-
 ings of Heroism; the divine relation (for I may we

call it such) which in all times unites a Great Man to other men; and thus, as it were, not exhaust my subject, but so much as break ground on it! At all events, I must make the attempt.

It is well said, in every sense, that a man's religion is the chief fact with regard to him. A man's, or a nation of men's. By religion I do not mean here the church-creed which he professes, the articles of faith which he will sign and, in words or otherwise, assert; not this wholly, in many cases 10 not this at all. We see men of all kinds of professed creeds attain to almost all degrees of worth or worthlessness under each or any of them. This is not what I call religion, this profession and assertion; which is often only a profession and assertion 15 from the outworks of the man, from the mere argumentative region of him, if even so deep as that. But the thing a man does practically believe (and this is often enough *without* asserting it even to himself, much less to others); the thing a man does 20 practically lay to heart, and know for certain, concerning his vital relations to this mysterious Universe, and his duty and destiny there, that is in all cases the primary thing for him, and creatively determines all the rest. That is his *religion*; or, it 25 may be, his mere scepticism and *no-religion*: the manner it is in which he feels himself to be spiritually related to the Unseen World or No-World; and I say, if you tell me what that is, you tell me to a very great extent what the man is, what the 30 kind of things *he will do* is. Of a man or of a

nation we inquire, therefore, first of all, What religion they had? Was it Paganism, — plurality of gods, mere sensuous representation of this Mystery of Life, and its chief recognised element therein Physical Force? Was it Christianity; faith in an Invisible, not as real only, but as the only reality: Time, through every meanest moment of its resting in Eternity: Pagan empire of Force displaced by a nobler supremacy, that of Holiness?

10 Was it Scepticism, uncertainty and inquiry whether there was an Unseen World, any Mystery of Life except a mad one: — doubt as to all this, or perhaps unbelief and flat denial? Answering of this question is giving us the soul of the history of the man

15 or nation. The thoughts they had were the parents of the actions they did: their feelings were parents of their thoughts: it was the unseen and spiritual in them that determined the outward and actual; — their religion, as I say, was the great fact about

20 them. In these Discourses, limited as we are, it will be good to direct our survey chiefly to that religious phasis of the matter. That once known well, all is known. We have chosen as the first Hero in our series, Odín the central figure of Scandinavian Paganism; an emblem to us of a most extensive province of things. Let us look for a little

25 at the Hero as Divinity, the oldest primary form of Heroism.

Surely it seems a very strange-looking thing this

30 Paganism; almost inconceivable to us in these days. A bewildering, inextricable jungle of delusions, confusions, falsehoods and absurdities, cov-

ering the whole field of Life! A thing that fills us with astonishment, almost, if it were possible, with incredulity, — for truly it is not easy to understand that sane men could ever calmly, with their eyes open, believe and live by such a set of doctrines. 5 That men should have worshipped their poor fellow-man as a God, and not him only, but stocks and stones, and all manner of animate and inanimate objects; and fashioned for themselves such a distracted chaos of hallucinations by way of Theory 10 of the Universe: all this looks like an incredible fable. Nevertheless it is a clear fact that they did it. Such hideous inextricable jungle of misworships, misbeliefs, men, made as we are, did actually hold by, and live at home in. This is strange. Yes, 15 we may pause in sorrow and silence over the depths of darkness that are in man; if we rejoice in the heights of purer vision he has attained to. Such things were and are in man; in all men; in us too.

Some speculators have a short way of accounting 20 for the Pagan religion: mere quackery, priestcraft, and dupery, say they; no sane man ever did believe it, — merely contrived to persuade other men, not worthy of the name of sane, to believe it! It will be often our duty to protest against this sort 25 of hypothesis about men's doings and history; and I here, on the very threshold, protest against it in reference to Paganism, and to all other *isms* by which man has ever for a length of time striven to walk in this world. They have all had a truth 30 in them, or men would not have taken them up. Quackery and dupery do abound; in religions,

above all in the more advanced decaying stages of religions, they have fearfully abounded: but quackery was never the originating influence in such things; it was not the health and life of such things, but their disease, the sure precursor of their being about to die! Let us never forget this. It seems to me a most mournful hypothesis, ~~that~~ of quackery giving birth to any faith even in savage men. Quackery gives birth to nothing; ~~gives~~
 10 ~~death to all things.~~ We shall not see into the true heart of anything, if we look merely at the quackeries of it; if we do not reject the quackeries altogether; as mere diseases, corruptions, with which our and all men's sole duty is to have done
 15 with them, to sweep them out of our thoughts as out of our practice. Man everywhere is the born enemy of lies. I find Grand Lamaism itself to have a kind of truth in it. Read the candid, clear-sighted, rather sceptical Mr. Turner's *Account of his*
 20 *Embassy* to that country, and see. They have their belief, these poor Thibet people, that Providence sends down always an Incarnation of Himself into every generation. At bottom some belief in a kind of Pope! At bottom still better, belief that ~~there~~
 25 ~~is a Greatest Man; that he is discoverable; that,~~ once discovered, we ought to treat him with an obedience which knows no bounds! This is the truth of Grand Lamaism; the 'discoverability' is the only error here. The Thibet priests have
 30 methods of their own of discovering what Man is Greatest, fit to be supreme over them. Bad methods: ~~but are they so much worse than our methods, —~~

of understanding him to be always the eldest-born of a certain genealogy? Alas, it is a difficult thing to find good methods for!—We shall begin to have a chance of understanding Paganism, when we first admit that to its followers it was, at one time, earnestly true. Let us consider it very certain that men did believe in Paganism; men with open eyes, sound senses, men made altogether like ourselves; that we, had we been there, should have believed in it. Ask now, What Paganism could have been? 10

Another theory, somewhat more respectable, attributes such things to Allegory. It was a play of poetic minds, say these theorists; a shadowing-forth, in allegorical fable, in personification and visual form, of what such poetic minds had known 15 and felt of this Universe. Which agrees, add they, with a primary law of human nature, still everywhere observably at work, though in less important things, That what a man feels intensely, he struggles to speak-out of him, to see represented 20 before him in visual shape, and as if with a kind of life and historical reality in it. Now doubtless there is such a law, and it is one of the deepest in human nature; neither need we doubt that it did operate fundamentally in this business. The hypothesis which ascribes Paganism wholly or mostly 25 to this agency, I call a little more respectable; but I cannot yet call it the true hypothesis. Think, would we believe, and take with us as our life-guidance, an allegory, a poetic sport? Not sport 30 but earnest is what we should require. It is a most *earnest thing to be alive in this world; to die is*

not sport for a man. Man's life never was a sport to him; it was a stern reality, altogether a serious matter to be alive!

I find, therefore, that though these Allegory
5 theorists are on the way towards truth in this matter, they have not reached it either. Pagan Religion is indeed an Allegory, a Symbol of what men felt and knew about the Universe; and all Religions are symbols of that, altering always as
10 that alters: but it seems to me a radical perversion, and even *inversion*, of the business, to put that forward as the origin and moving cause, when it was rather the result and termination. To get beautiful allegories, a perfect poetic symbol, was not the
15 want of men; but to know what they were to believe about this Universe, what course they were to steer in it; what, in this mysterious Life of theirs, they had to hope and to fear, to do and to forbear doing. The *Pilgrim's Progress* is an Allegory, and a beautiful, just, and serious one: but
20 consider whether Bunyan's Allegory could have preceded the Faith it symbolises! The Faith had to be already there, standing believed by everybody; — of which the Allegory could *then* become a
25 shadow; and, with all its seriousness, we may say a *sportful* shadow, a mere play of the Fancy, in comparison with that awful Fact and scientific certainty which it poetically strives to emblem. The Allegory is the product of the certainty, not the
30 producer of it; not in Bunyan's nor in any other case. For Paganism, therefore, we have still to inquire, Whence came that scientific certainty, the

parent of such a bewildered heap of allegories, errors, and confusions? How was it, what was it? Surely it were a foolish attempt to pretend 'explaining,' in this place, or in any place, such a phenomenon as that far-distant distracted cloudy imbroglío of Paganism,—more like a cloudfield than a distant continent of firm land and facts! It is no longer a reality, yet it was one. We ought to understand that this seeming cloudfield was once a reality; that not poetic allegory, least of all that dupery and deception was the origin of it. Men, I say, never did believe idle songs, never risked their soul's life on allegories: men in all times, especially in early earnest times, have had an instinct for detecting quacks, for detesting quacks. Let us try if, leaving out both the quack theory and the allegory one, and listening with affectionate attention to that far-off confused rumour of the Pagan ages, we cannot ascertain so much as this at least, That there was a kind of fact at the heart of them; that they too were not mendacious and distracted, but in their own poor way true and sane!

You remember that fancy of Plato's, of a man who had grown to maturity in some dark distance, and was brought on a sudden into the upper air to see the sun rise. What would his wonder be, his rapt astonishment at the sight we daily witness with indifference! With the free open sense of a child, yet with the ripe faculty of a man, his whole heart would be kindled by that sight, he would discern it well to be Godlike, his soul would fall down

IN HERDS

I have just such a childlike
familiarity with Nature. The first
time I met the first man that
I met, I met this childman of
Nature, with the depth
of Nature and as yet no name
under a name the in-
finite shapes and motions,
the name "Nature". Nature
is not a name. I dismiss it from
my mind. All this yet new,
as it stood naked,
unfamiliar, awful, unspeak-
able, what to the Thinker
is "Nature". This green
world, the trees, the mountains,
the great deep sea
the winds sweeping
themselves to
the new hail and rain;
all this, we do not yet
know. It is not by our
attention, our want of
attention, that we cease to
know, encasing wholly
ourselves in traditions,
the fire of the
and lecture learn-
ing, out of glass
and Whence
Science has done

much for us; but it is a poor science that would hide from us the great deep sacred infinitude of Nescience, whither we can never penetrate, on which all science swims as a mere superficial film. This world, after all our science and sciences, is still a miracle; wonderful, inscrutable, *magical* and more, to whosoever will think of it.

That great mystery of **TIME**, were there no other; the illimitable, silent, never-resting thing called Time, rolling, rushing on, swift, silent, like an all-embracing ocean-tide, on which we and all the Universe swim like exhalations, like apparitions which *are*, and then *are not*: this is forever very literally a miracle; a thing to strike us dumb,—for we have no word to speak about it. This Universe, ah me—what could the wild man know of it; what can we yet know? That it is a Force, and thousandfold Complexity of Forces; a Force which is *not we*. That is all; it is not we, it is altogether different from *us*. Force, Force, everywhere Force; we ourselves a mysterious Force in the centre of that. ‘There is not a leaf rotting on the highway but has Force in it: how else could it rot?’ Nay surely, to the Atheistic Thinker, if such a one were possible, it must be a miracle too, this huge illimitable whirlwind of Force, which envelops us here; never-resting whirlwind, high as Immensity, old as Eternity. What is it? God’s creation, the religious people answer; it is the Almighty God’s! Atheistic science babbles poorly of it, with scientific nomenclatures, experiments and what-not, as if it were a poor dead thing, to be bottled-up in Leyden jars and sold

over counters; but the natural sense of man, in all times, if he will honestly apply his sense, proclaims it to be a living thing, — ah, an unspeakable, godlike thing; towards which the best attitude for us, after
5 never so much science, is awe, devout prostration and humility of soul; worship if not in words, then in silence.

But now I remark farther: What in such a time as ours it requires a Prophet or Poet to teach us,
10 namely, the stripping-off of those poor undevout wrappages, nomenclatures and scientific hearsays, — this, the ancient earnest soul, as yet unencumbered with these things, did for itself. The world, which is now divine only to the gifted, was then divine to
15 whosoever would turn his eye upon it. He stood bare before it face to face. 'All was Godlike or God:' — Jean Paul still finds it so; the giant Jean Paul, who has power to escape out of hearsays: but there then were no hearsays. Canopus shining-down
20 over the desert, with its blue diamond brightness (that wild blue spirit-like brightness, far brighter than we ever witness here), would pierce into the heart of the wild Ishmaelitish man, whom it was guiding through the solitary waste there. To his
25 wild heart, with all feelings in it, with no *speech* for any feeling, it might seem a little eye, that Canopus, glancing-out on him from the great deep Eternity; revealing the inner Splendour to him. Cannot we understand how these men *worshipped* Canopus; became what we call Sabians, worshipping the stars?
30 Such is to me the secret of all forms of Paganism. Worship is transcendent wonder; wonder for which

~~there is now no limit or measure; that is worship. these primeval men, all things and everything they saw exist beside them were an emblem of the dlike, of some God.~~

And look what perennial fibre of truth was in it. To us also, through every star, through every blade of grass, is not a God made visible, if ~~we will open our minds and eyes?~~ We do not worship in that way now: but is it not reckoned ill a merit, proof of what we call a 'poetic nature,' at we recognise how every object has a divineauty in it; how every object still verily is 'a window through which we may look into Infinitude self'? He that can discern the loveliness of things, we call him Poet, Painter, Man of Genius, 15 lifted, loveable. These poor Sabeans did even what we does, — in their own fashion. That they did it, in what fashion soever, was a merit: better than what the entirely stupid man did, what the horse and camel did, — namely, nothing! 20

~~But now if all things whatsoever that we look upon are emblems to us of the Highest God, I add that more so than any of them is man such an emblem.~~ You have heard of St. Chrysostom's celebrated saying in reference to the Shekinah, or Ark of Testimony, visible Revelation of God, among the Hebrews: "The true Shekinah is Man!" Yes, it is even so: this is no vain phrase; it is veritably so. The essence of our being, the mystery in us that calls itself "I," — ah, what words have we for such things? — is a breath of Heaven; the Highest being reveals himself in man. This body, these

faculties, this life of ours, is it not all as a vesture for that Unnamed? 'There is but one Temple in 'the Universe,' says the devout Novalis, 'and that 'is the Body of Man. Nothing is holier than that
 5 'high form. Bending before men is a reverence 'done to this Revelation in the Flesh. We touch 'Heaven when we lay our hand on a human body!' This sounds much like a mere flourish of rhetoric; but it is not so. If well meditated, it will turn out
 10 to be a scientific fact; the expression, in such words as can be had, of the actual truth of the thing. We are the miracle of miracles,—the great inscrutable mystery of God. We cannot understand it, we know not how to speak of it; but we may feel and
 15 know, if we like, that it is verily so.

Well; these truths were once more readily felt than now. The young generations of the world, who had in them the freshness of young children, and yet the depth of earnest men, who did not think
 20 that they had finished-off all things in Heaven and Earth by merely giving them scientific names, but had to gaze direct at them there, with awe and wonder: they felt better what of divinity is in man and Nature;—they, without being mad, could
 25 worship Nature, and man more than anything else in Nature. Worship, that is, as I said above, admire without limit: this, in the full use of their faculties, with all sincerity of heart, they could do. I consider Hero-worship to be the grand modifying
 30 element in that ancient system of thought. What I call the perplexed jungle of Paganism sprang, we may say, out of many roots: every admiration, adora-

tion of a star, or natural object, was a root or fibre of a root; but Hero-worship is the deepest root of all; the tap-root, from which in a great degree all the rest were nourished and grown.

And now if worship even of a star had some 5 meaning in it, how much more might that of a Hero! Worship of a Hero is transcendent admiration of a Great Man. I say great men are still admirable; I say there is, at bottom, nothing else 10 admirable! No nobler feeling than this of admiration for one higher than himself dwells in the breast of man. It is to this hour, and at all hours, the vivifying influence in man's life. Religion I find stand upon it; not Paganism only, but far higher and truer religions, — all religion hitherto known. Hero- 15 worship, heartfelt prostrate admiration, submission, burning, boundless, for a noblest godlike Form of Man, — is not that the germ of Christianity itself? The greatest of all Heroes is One — whom we do not name here! Let sacred silence meditate that 20 sacred matter; you will find it the ultimate perfection of a principle extant throughout man's whole history on earth.

Or coming into lower, less unspeakable provinces, is not all Loyalty akin to religious Faith also? 25 Faith is loyalty to some inspired Teacher, some spiritual Hero. And what therefore is loyalty proper, the life-breath of all society, but an effluence of Hero-worship, submissive admiration for the truly great? Society is founded on Hero-worship. 30 All dignities of rank, on which human association rests, are what we may call a Heroarchy

(Government of Heroes),—or a Hierarchy, for it is 'sacred' enough withal! The Duke means *Duz*, Leader; King is *Kön-ning*, *Kan-ning*, Man that knows or cans. Society everywhere is some representation, not insupportably inaccurate, of a graduated Worship of Heroes;—reverence and obedience done to men really great and wise. Not insupportably inaccurate, I say! They are all as bank-notes, these social dignitaries, all representing gold;—and several of them, alas, always are *forged* notes. We can do with some forged false notes; with a good many even; but not with all, or the most of them forged! No: there have to come revolutions then; cries of Democracy, Liberty and Equality, and I know not what:—the notes being all false, and no gold to be had for *them*, people take to crying in their despair that there is no gold, that there never was any!—'Gold,' Hero-worship, is nevertheless, as it was always and everywhere, and cannot cease till man himself ceases.

I am well aware that in these days Hero-worship, the thing I call Hero-worship, professes to have gone out, and finally ceased. This, for reasons which it will be worth while some time to inquire into, is an age that as it were denies the existence of great men; denies the desirableness of great men. Show our critics a great man, a Luther for example, they begin to what they call 'account' for him; not to worship him, but take the dimensions of him, —and bring him out to be a little kind of man! He was the 'creature of the Time,' they say; the Time called him forth, the Time did everything, he

othing — but what we the little critic could have one too! This seems to me but melancholy work. The Time call forth? Alas, we have known times *call* loudly enough for their great man; but not find him when they called! He was not there; Providence had not sent him; the Time, *calling* its rudest, had to go down to confusion and wreck because he would not come when called. 5

For if we will think of it, no Time need have one to ruin, could it have *found* a man great enough, a man wise and good enough: wisdom to discern truly what the Time wanted, valour to lead it on the right road thither; these are the salvation of any Time. But I liken common languid Times, with their unbelief, distress, perplexity, with their languid doubting characters and embarrassed circumstances, impotently crumbling-down into ever worse distress towards final ruin; — all this I liken to dry dead fuel, waiting for the lightning out of Heaven that shall kindle it. The great man, with his free force direct out of God's own hand, is the lightning. His word is the wise healing word which all can believe in. All blazes round him now, when he has once struck on it, into fire like his own. The dry mouldering sticks are thought to have called him forth. They did want him greatly; but as to calling him forth —! — Those are critics of small vision, I think, who cry: "See, is it not the sticks that made the fire?" No sadder proof can be given by a man of his own littleness than disbelief in great men. There is no sadder symptom of a generation than such general blind- 30

ness to the spiritual lightning, with faith
 the heap of barren dead fuel. It is the
 summation of unbelief. In all epochs of the
 history, we shall find the Great Man to ha
 5 the indispensable saviour of his epoch;—th
 ning, without which the fuel never woul
 burnt. The History of the World, I said,
 was the Biography of Great Men.

Such small critics do what they can to
 10 unbelief and universal spiritual paralysis: b
 pily they cannot always completely succeed.
 times it is possible for a man to arise great
 to feel that they and their doctrines are c
 and cobwebs. And what is notable, in no tin
 15 ever can they entirely eradicate out of livin
 hearts a certain altogether peculiar revere
 Great Men; genuine admiration, loyalty, ad
 however dim and perverted it may be. H
 ship endures forever while man endures.
 20 venerates his Johnson, right truly even in th
 teenth century. The unbelieving French be
 their Voltaire; and burst-out round him ir
 curious Hero-worship, in that last act of
 when they 'stifle him under roses.' It has
 25 seemed to me extremely curious this of V
 Truly, if Christianity be the highest inst
 Hero-worship, then we may find here in Vol
 one of the lowest! He whose life was th
 kind of Antichrist, does again on this side
 30 a curious contrast. No people ever were
 prone to admire at all as those French of V
Persiflage was the character of their whole

doration had nowhere a place in it. Yet see! The old man of Ferney comes up to Paris; an old, tottering, infirm man of eighty-four years. They feel that he too is a kind of Hero; that he has spent his life in opposing error and injustice, delivering Calases, unmasking hypocrites in high places; — in short that *he* too, though in a strange way, has fought like a valiant man. They feel withal that, if *persiflage* be the great thing, there never was such a *persifleur*. He is the realised ideal of every one of them; the thing they are all wanting to be; of all Frenchmen the most French. *He* is properly their god, — such god as they are fit for. Accordingly all persons, from the Queen Antoinette to the Douanier at the Porte St. Denis, do they not worship him? People of quality disguise themselves as tavern-waiters. The Maitre de Poste, with a broad oath, orders his Postillion, “*Va bon train ;* thou art driving M. de Voltaire.” At Paris his carriage is ‘the nucleus of a comet, whose train fills whole streets.’ The ladies pluck a hair or two from his fur, to keep it as a sacred relic. There was nothing highest, beautifullest, noblest in all France, that did not feel this man to be higher, beautifuler, nobler.

Yes, from Norse Odin to English Samuel Johnson, from the divine Founder of Christianity to the withered Pontiff of Encyclopedism, in all times and places, the Hero has been worshipped. It will ever be so. We all love great men; love, venerate and bow down submissive before great men: nay can we honestly bow down to anything else? Ah, does

not every true man feel he is himself made higher by doing reverence to what is really above him? No nobler or more blessed feeling dwells in man's heart. And to me it is very cheering to consider
5 that no sceptical logic, or general triviality, insincerity and aridity of any Time and its influences can destroy this noble inborn loyalty and worship that is in man. In times of unbelief, which soon have to become times of revolution, much down-
10 rushing, sorrowful decay and ruin is visible to everybody. For myself in these days, I seem to see in this indestructibility of Hero-worship the everlasting adamant lower than which the confused wreck of revolutionary things cannot fall. The con-
15 fused wreck of things crumbling and even crashing and tumbling all round us in these revolutionary ages, will get down so far; *no* farther. It is an eternal corner-stone, from which they can begin to build themselves up again. That man, in some
20 sense or other, worships Heroes; that we all of us reverence and must ever reverence Great Men: this is, to me, the living rock amid all rushings-down whatsoever;—the one fixed point in modern revolutionary history, otherwise as if bottomless and
25 shoreless.

So much of truth, only under an ancient obsolete vesture, but the spirit of it still true, do I find in the Paganism of old nations. Nature is still divine, the revelation of the workings of God; the Hero is
30 still worshipable: this, under poor cramped incipient forms, is what all Pagan religions have struggled,

as they could, to set forth. I think Scandinavian Paganism, to us here, is more interesting than any other. It is, for one thing, the latest; it continued in these regions of Europe till the eleventh century: eight hundred years ago the Norwegians were still worshippers of Odin. It is interesting also as the creed of our fathers; the men whose blood still runs in our veins, whom doubtless we still resemble in so many ways. Strange: they did believe that, while we believe so differently. Let us look a little at this poor Norse creed, for many reasons. We have tolérable means to do it; for there is another point of interest in these Scandinavian mythologies: that they have been preserved so well.

In that strange island Iceland, — burst-up, the geologists say, by fire from the bottom of the sea; a wild land of barrenness and lava; swallowed many months of every year in black tempests, yet with a wild gleaming beauty in summer-time; towering up there, stern and grim, in the North Ocean; with its snow jokuls, roaring geysers, sulphur-pools and horrid volcanic chasms, like the waste chaotic battle-field of Frost and Fire; — where of all places we least looked for Literature or written memorials, the record of these things was written down. On the seaboard of this wild land is a rim of grassy country where cattle can subsist, and men by means of them and of what the sea yields; and it seems they were poetic men these, men who had deep thoughts in them, and uttered musically their thoughts. Much would be lost, had Iceland not been burst-up from the sea, not been discovered by

the Northmen! The old Norse Poets were many of them natives of Iceland.

Sæmund, one of the early Christian Priests there, who perhaps had a lingering fondness for Paganism, collected certain of their old Pagan songs, just about becoming obsolete then, — Poems or Chants of a mythic, prophetic, mostly all of a religious character; that is what Norse critics call the *Elder* or Poetic *Edda*. *Edda*, a word of uncertain etymology, is thought to signify *Ancestress*. Snorro Sturleson, an Iceland gentleman, an extremely notable personage, educated by this Sæmund's grandson, took in hand next, near a century afterwards, to put together, among several other books he wrote, a kind of Prose Synopsis of the whole Mythology; elucidated by new fragments of traditionary verse. A work constructed really with great ingenuity, native talent, what one might call unconscious art; altogether a perspicuous clear work, pleasant reading still: this is the *Younger* or Prose *Edda*. By these and the numerous other *Sagas*, mostly Icelandic, with the commentaries, Icelandic or not, which go on zealously in the North to this day, it is possible to gain some direct insight even yet; and see that old Norse system of Belief, as it were, face to face. Let us forget that it is erroneous Religion; let us look at it as old Thought, and try if we cannot sympathise with it somewhat.

The primary characteristic of this old Northland Mythology I find to be Impersonation of the visible workings of Nature. Earnest simple recognition of the workings of Physical Nature, as a thing wholly

miraculous, stupendous and divine. What we now lecture of as Science, they wondered at, and fell down in awe before, as Religion. The dark hostile Powers of Nature they figure to themselves as 'Jötuns,' Giants, huge shaggy beings of a demonic character. Frost, Fire, Sea-tempest; these are Jötuns. The friendly Powers again, as Summer-heat, the Sun, are Gods. The empire of this Universe is divided between these two; they dwell apart, in perennial internecine feud. The Gods dwell above in Asgard, the Garden of the Asen, or Divinities; Jötunheim, a distant dark chaotic land, is the home of the Jötuns.

Curious all this; and not idle or inane, if we will look at the foundation of it! The power of Fire, or *Flame*, for instance, which we designate by some trivial chemical name, thereby hiding from ourselves the essential character of wonder that dwells in it as in all things, is with these old North-men, Loke, a most swift subtle *Demon*, of the brood of the Jötuns. The savages of the Ladrões Islands too (say some Spanish voyagers) thought Fire, which they never had seen before, was a devil or god, that bit you sharply when you touched it, and that lived upon dry wood. From us too no Chemistry, if it had not Stupidity to help it, would hide that Flame is a wonder. What is Flame? — *Frost* the old Norse Seer discerns to be a monstrous hoary Jötun, the Giant *Thrym*, *Hrym*; or *Rime*, the old word now nearly obsolete here, but still used in Scotland to signify hoar-frost. *Rime* was not then as now a dead chemical thing, but a living Jötun or Devil;

the monstrous Jötun *Rime* drove home his Horses at night, sat 'combing their manes,' — which Horses were *Hail-Clouds*, or fleet *Frost-Winds*. His Cows — No, not his, but a kinsman's, the Giant Hymir's
 5 Cows are *Icebergs*: this Hymir 'looks at the rocks' with his devil-eye, and they *split* in the glance of it.

Thunder was not then mere Electricity, vitreous or resinous; it was the God Donner (Thunder) or Thor, — God also of beneficent Summer-heat. The
 10 thunder was his wrath; the gathering of the black clouds is the drawing-down of Thor's angry brows; the fire-bolt bursting out of Heaven is the all-rending Hammer flung from the hand of Thor: he urges his loud chariot over the mountain-tops, — that is
 15 the peal; wrathful he 'blows in his red beard,' — that is the rustling stormblast before the thunder begins. Balder again, the White God, the beautiful, the just and benignant (whom the early Christian Missionaries found to resemble Christ), is the Sun,
 20 — beautifulest of visible things; wondrous too, and divine still, after all our Astronomies and Almanacs! But perhaps the notablest god we hear tell-of is one of whom Grimm the German Etymologist finds trace: the God *Wünsch*, or Wish. The God *Wish*;
 25 who could give us all that we *wished*! Is not this the sincerest and yet rudest voice of the spirit of man? The *rudest* ideal that man ever formed; which still shows itself in the latest forms of our spiritual culture. Higher considerations have to
 30 teach us that the God *Wish* is not the true God.

Of the other Gods or Jötuns I will mention only for etymology's sake, that Sea-tempest is the Jötun

legir, a very dangerous Jötun;—and now to this
ay, on our river Trent, as I learn, the Nottingham
argemen, when the River is in a certain flooded
tate (a kind of backwater, or eddying swirl it has,
very dangerous to them), call it *Eager*; they cry 5
out, “Have a care, there is the *Eager* coming!”
Curious; that word surviving, like the peak of a
submerged world! The *oldest* Nottingham barge-
men had believed in the God Aegir. Indeed our
English blood too in good part is Danish, Norse; 10
or rather, at bottom, Danish and Norse and Saxon
have no distinction, except a superficial one,—as
of Heathen and Christian, or the like. But all over
our Island we are mingled largely with Danes
proper,—from the incessant invasions there were: 15
and this, of course, in a greater proportion along
the east coast; and greatest of all, as I find, in the
North Country. From the Humber upwards, all
over Scotland, the Speech of the common people is
still in a singular degree Icelandic; its German- 20
ism has still a peculiar Norse tinge. They too
are ‘Normans,’ Northmen,—if that be any great
beauty!—

Of the chief god, Odin, we shall speak by and by.
Mark at present so much; what the essence of 25
Scandinavian and indeed of all Paganism is: a
recognition of the forces of Nature as godlike, stu-
pendous, personal Agencies,—as Gods and Demons.
Not inconceivable to us. It is the infant Thought
of man opening itself, with awe and wonder, on this 30
ever-stupendous Universe. To me there is in the
Norse *System something* very genuine, very great

and manlike. A broad simplicity, rusticity, so very different from the light gracefulness of the old Greek Paganism, distinguishes this Scandinavian System. It is Thought; the genuine Thought of
5 deep, rude, earnest minds, fairly opened to the things about them; a face-to-face and heart-to-heart inspection of the things, — the first characteristic of all good Thought in all times. Not graceful lightness, half-sport, as in the Greek Paganism; a
10 certain homely truthfulness and rustic strength, a great rude sincerity, discloses itself here. It is strange, after our beautiful Apollo statues and clear smiling mythuses, to come down upon the Norse Gods 'brewing ale' to hold their feast with
15 Aegir, the Sea-Jötun; sending out Thor to get the caldron for them in the Jötun country; Thor, after many adventures, clapping the Pot on his head, like a huge hat, and walking off with it, — quite lost in it, the ears of the Pot reaching down to his heels!
20 A kind of vacant hugeness, large awkward giant-hood, characterises that Norse System; enormous force, as yet altogether untutored, stalking helpless with large uncertain strides. Consider only their primary mythus of the Creation. The Gods, having got the Giant Ymer slain, a Giant made by
25 'warm wind,' and much confused work, out of the conflict of Frost and Fire, — determined on constructing a world with him. His blood made the Sea; his flesh was the Land, the Rocks his bones; of his eyebrows they formed Asgard their Gods'-
dwelling; his skull was the great blue vault of Immensity, and the brains of it became the Clouds.

hat a Hyper-Brobdignagian business! Untamed thought, great, giantlike, enormous; — to be tamed due time into the compact greatness, not giantlike, but godlike and stronger than gianthood, of the Shakespeares, the Goethes! — Spiritually as well as 5
 ordily these men are our progenitors.

I like, too, that representation they have of the tree Igdrasil. All Life is figured by them as a tree. Igdrasil, the Ash-tree of Existence, has its roots deep-down in the kingdoms of Hela or Death; 10
 its trunk reaches up heaven-high, spreads its boughs over the whole Universe: it is the Tree of Existence. At the foot of it, in the Death-kingdom, sit Three *Nornas*, Fates, — the Past, Present, Future; watering its roots from the Sacred Well. Its 15
 'boughs,' with their buddings and disleafings, — events, things suffered, things done, catastrophes, — stretch through all lands and times. Is not every leaf of it a biography, every fibre there an act or word? Its boughs are Histories of Nations. 20
 The rustle of it is the noise of Human Existence, onwards from of old. It grows there, the breath of Human Passion rustling through it; — or storm-tost, the stormwind howling through it like the voice of all the gods. It is Igdrasil, the Tree of 25
 Existence. It is the past, the present, and the future; what was done, what is doing, what will be done; 'the infinite conjugation of the verb *To do*.' Considering how human things circulate, each inextricably in communion with all, — how the word 30
 I speak to you today is borrowed, not from Ulfila the Mœsogoth only, but from all men since the first

man began to speak, — I find no similitude so true as this of a Tree. Beautiful; altogether beautiful and great. The '*Machine* of the Universe,' — alas, do but think of that in contrast!

- 5 Well, it is strange enough this old Norse view of Nature; different enough from what we believe of Nature. Whence it specially came, one would not like to be compelled to say very minutely! One thing we may say: It came from the thoughts of
10 Norse men; — from the thought, above all, of the *first* Norse man who had an original power of thinking. The First Norse 'man of genius,' as we should call him! Innumerable men had passed by, across this Universe, with a dumb vague wonder,
15 such as the very animals may feel; or with a painful, fruitlessly inquiring wonder, such as men only feel; — till the great Thinker came, the original man, the Seer; whose shaped spoken Thought awakes the slumbering capability of all into Thought. It is ever
20 the way with the Thinker, the spiritual Hero. What he says, all men were not far from saying, were longing to say. The Thoughts of all start up, as from painful enchanted sleep, round his Thought; answering to it, Yes, even so! Joyful to men as the dawning
25 of day from night; — is it not, indeed, the awakening for them from no-being into being, from death into life? We still honour such a man; call him Poet, Genius, and so forth: but to these wild men he was a very magician, a worker of miraculous unexpected
30 blessing for them; a Prophet, a God! — Thought once awakened does not again slumber; unfolds

elf into a System of Thought; grows, in man-
 ter man, generation after generation,—till its
 ll stature is reached, and *such* System of Thought
 n grow no farther, but must give place to another.
 For the Norse people, the Man now named Odin, 5
 id Chief Norse God, we fancy, was such a man.

Teacher, and Captain of soul and of body; a
 ero, of worth *immeasurable*; admiration for
 hom, transcending the known bounds, became
 loration. Has he not the power of articulate 10
 hinking; and many other powers, as yet miracu-
 ous? So, with boundless gratitude, would the
 ude Norse heart feel. Has he not solved for them
 he sphinx-enigma of this Universe; given assur-
 ance to them of their own destiny there? By him 15
 hey know now what they have to do here, what to
 look for hereafter. Existence has become articu-
 late, melodious by him; he first has made Life
 alive!—We may call this Odin, the origin of
 Norse Mythology: Odin, or whatever name the 20
 First Norse Thinker bore while he was a man
 among men. His view of the Universe once pro-
 mulgated, a like view starts into being in all
 minds; grows, keeps ever growing, while it con-
 tinues credible there. In all minds it lay written, 25
 but invisibly, as in sympathetic ink; at his word it
 starts into visibility in all. Nay, in every epoch
 of the world, the great event, parent of all others,
 is it not the arrival of a Thinker in the world!—

One other thing we must not forget; it will ex- 30
 plain, a little, the confusion of these Norse Eddas.
 They are not one coherent System of Thought; but

properly the *summation* of several successive systems. All this of the old Norse Belief which is flung-out for us, in one level of distance in the Edda, like a picture painted on the same canvas,
5 does not at all stand so in the reality. It stands rather at all manner of distances and depths, of successive generations since the Belief first began. All Scandinavian thinkers, since the first of them, contributed to that Scandinavian System
10 of Thought; in ever-new elaboration and addition, it is the combined work of them all. What history it had, how it changed from shape to shape, by one thinker's contribution after another, till it got to the full final shape we see it under in the
15 *Edda*, no man will now ever know: *its* Councils of Trebisonde, Councils of Trent, Athanasiuses, Dantes, Luthers, are sunk without echo in the dark night! Only that it had such a history we can all know. Wheresoever a thinker appeared, there in the thing
20 he thought-of was a contribution, accession, a change or revolution made. Alas, the grandest 'revolution' of all, the one made by the man Odin himself, is not this too sunk for us like the rest! Of Odin what history? Strange rather to reflect
25 that he *had* a history! That this Odin, in his wild Norse vesture, with his wild beard and eyes, his rude Norse speech and ways, was a man like us; with our sorrows, joys, with our limbs, features; — intrinsically all one as we: and did such a work!
30 But the work, much of it, has perished; the worker, all to the name. "*Wednesday*," men will say tomorrow; Odin's day! Of Odin there exists

no history; no document of it; no guess about it worth repeating.

Snorro indeed, in the quietest manner, almost in a brief business style, writes down in his *Heimskringla*, how Odin was a heroic Prince, in the Black-Sea region, with Twelve Peers, and a great people straitened for room. How he led these *Asen* (Asiatics) of his out of Asia; settled them in the North parts of Europe, by warlike conquest; invented Letters, Poetry and so forth, — and came by and by to be worshipped as Chief God by these Scandinavians, his Twelve Peers made into Twelve Sons of his own, Gods like himself: Snorro has no doubt of this. Saxo Grammaticus, a very curious Northman of that same century, is still more unhesitating; scruples not to find out a historical fact in every individual mythus, and writes it down as a terrestrial event in Denmark or elsewhere. Torfæus, learned and cautious, some centuries later, assigns by calculation a *date* for it: Odin, he says, came into Europe about the Year 70 before Christ. Of all which, as grounded on mere uncertainties, found to be untenable now, I need say nothing. Far, very far beyond the Year 70! Odin's date, adventures, whole terrestrial history, figure and environment are sunk from us forever into unknown thousands of years.

Nay Grimm, the German Antiquary, goes so far as to deny that any man Odin ever existed. He proves it by etymology. The word *Wuotan*, which is the original form of *Odin*, a word spread, as name of their chief Divinity, over all the Teutonic

Nations everywhere; this word, which connects itself, according to Grimm, with the Latin *vade* with the English *wade* and suchlike, — means primarily *Movement*, Source of Movement, Power; and is the fit name of the highest god, not of any man. The word signifies Divinity, he says, among the old Saxon, German and all Teutonic Nations; the adjectives formed from it all signify *divine*, *supreme* or something pertaining to the chief god. Like enough! We must bow to Grimm in matters etymological. Let us consider it fixed that *Wuotan* means *Wading*, force of *Movement*. And now still what hinders it from being the name of a Heroic Man and *Mover*, as well as of a god? As for the adjectives, and words formed from it, — did not the Spaniards in their universal admiration for Lope, get into the habit of saying ‘a Lope flower,’ ‘a Lope *dama*,’ if the flower or woman were of surpassing beauty? Had this lasted, *Lope* would have grown, in Spain, to be an adjective signifying *godlike* also. Indeed, Adam Smith, in his *Essay on Language*, surmises that all adjectives whatsoever were formed precisely in that way: some very green thing, chiefly notable for its greenness, got the appellative name *Green*, and then the next thing remarkable for that quality, a tree for instance, was named the *green* tree, — as we still say ‘the *steam* coach,’ ‘four-horse coach,’ or the like. All primary adjectives, according to Smith, were formed in this way; were at first substantives and things. We cannot annihilate a man for etymologies like that! Surely there was a First Teacher and Cap-

in; surely there must have been an Odin, palpable to the sense at one time; no adjective, but a real Hero of flesh and blood! The voice of all tradition, history or echo of history, agrees with all that thought will teach one about it, to assure us of this. 5

How the man Odin came to be considered a *god*, the chief god? — that surely is a question which nobody would wish to dogmatise upon. I have said, his people knew no *limits* to their admiration of him; they had as yet no scale to measure admiration by. Fancy your own generous heart's-love of some greatest man expanding till it *transcended* all bounds, till it filled and overflowed the whole field of your thought! Or what if this man Odin, 15 — since a great deep soul, with the afflatus and mysterious tide of vision and impulse rushing on him — knows not whence, is ever an enigma, a kind of error and wonder to himself, — should have felt that perhaps *he* was divine; that *he* was some effluence of the 'Wuotan,' 'Movement,' Supreme Power and Divinity, of whom to his rapt vision all Nature was the awful Flame-image; that some effluence of *Wuotan* dwelt here in him! He was not necessarily false; he was but mistaken, speaking the truest 25 — he knew. A great soul, any sincere soul, knows not *what* he is, — alternates between the highest height and the lowest depth; can, of all things, the least measure — Himself! What others take him for, and what he guesses that he may be; these two seem strangely act on one another, help to determine one another. With all men reverently admir-

ing him; with his own wild soul full of noble ardours and affections, of whirlwind chaotic darkness and glorious new light; a divine Universe bursting all into godlike beauty round him, and no man to
5 whom the like ever had befallen, what could he think himself to be? "Wuotan?" All men answered, "Wuotan!" —

And then consider what mere Time will do in such cases; how if a man was great while living, he
10 becomes tenfold greater when dead. What an enormous *camera-obscura* magnifier is Tradition! How a thing grows in the human Memory, in the human Imagination, when love, worship and all that lies in the human Heart, is there to encourage it. And in
15 the darkness, in the entire ignorance; without date or document, no book, no Arundel-marble; only here and there some dumb monumental cairn. Why, in thirty or forty years, were there no books, any great man would grow *mythic*, the contemporaries who
20 had seen him, being once all dead. And in three-hundred years, and in three-thousand years —! — To attempt *theorising* on such matters would profit little: they are matters which refuse to be *theoremed* and diagramed; which Logic ought to know that
25 she *cannot* speak of. Enough for us to discern, far in the uttermost distance, some gleam as of a small real light shining in the centre of that enormous camera-obscura image; to discern that the centre of it all was not a madness and nothing, but a sanity
30 and something.

This light, kindled in the great dark vortex of the Norse mind, dark but living, waiting only for light;

s is to me the centre of the whole. How such
 ht will then shine out, and with wondrous thou-
 idfold expansion spread itself, in forms and
 ours, depends not on *it*, so much as on the Na-
 nal Mind recipient of it. The colours and forms 5
 your light will be those of the *cut-glass* it has to
 ine through. — Curious to think how, for every
 an, any, the truest fact is modelled by the nature
 the man! I said, The earnest man, speak-
 g to his brother men, must always have stated 10
 hat seemed to him a *fact*, a real Appearance of
 ature. But the way in which such Appearance or
 ct shaped itself, — what sort of *fact* it became for
 im, — was and is modified by his own laws of
 sinking; deep, subtle, but universal, ever-operating 15
 ws. The world of Nature, for every man, is the
 'hantasy of Himself; this world is the multiplex
 Image of his own Dream.' Who knows to what un-
 ameable subtleties of spiritual law all these Pagan
 fables owe their shape! The number *Twelve*, divisi- 20
 blest of all, which could be halved, quartered, parted
 nto three, into six, the most remarkable number, —
 his was enough to determine the *Signs of the Zodiac*,
 the number of Odin's *Sons*, and innumerable other
 Twelves. Any vague rumour of number had a ten- 25
 dency to settle itself into Twelve. So with regard
 to every other matter. And quite unconsciously
 too, — with no notion of building-up 'Allegories'!
 But the fresh clear glance of those First Ages would
 be prompt in discerning the secret relations of things, 30
 and wholly open to obey these. Schiller finds in
 the *Cestus of Venus* an everlasting æsthetic truth as

to the nature of all Beauty; curious: — but he is careful not to insinuate that the old Greek *Mythists* had any notion of lecturing about the ‘Philosophy of Criticism’! — On the whole, we must leave
5 those boundless regions. Cannot we conceive that Odin was a reality? Error indeed, error enough: but sheer falsehood, idle fables, allegory aforesaid, — we will not believe that our Fathers believed in these.

10 Odin’s *Runes* are a significant feature of him. Runes, and the miracles of ‘magic’ he worked by them, make a great feature in tradition. Runes are the Scandinavian Alphabet; suppose Odin to have been the inventor of Letters, as well as ‘magic,’
15 among that people! It is the greatest invention man has ever made, this of marking-down the unseen thought that is in him by written characters. It is a kind of second speech, almost as miraculous as the first. You remember the astonishment and
20 incredulity of Atahualpa the Peruvian King; how he made the Spanish Soldier who was guarding him scratch *Dios* on his thumb-nail, that he might try the next soldier with it, to ascertain whether such a miracle was possible. If Odin brought Letters
25 among his people, he might work magic enough!

Writing by Runes has some air of being original among the Norsemen: not a Phœnician Alphabet, but a native Scandinavian one. Snorro tells us farther that Odin invented Poetry; the music of
30 human speech, as well as that miraculous runic marking of it. Transport yourselves into the early *childhood* of nations; the first beautiful morning-

light of our Europe, when all yet lay in fresh young radiance as of a great sunrise, and our Europe was first beginning to think, to be! Wonder, hope; infinite radiance of hope and wonder, as of a young child's thoughts, in the hearts of these strong men! 5 Strong sons of Nature; and here was not only a wild Captain and Fighter; discerning with his wild flashing eyes what to do, with his wild lion-heart daring and doing it; but a Poet too, all that we mean by a Poet, Prophet, great devout Thinker 10 and Inventor,—as the truly Great Man ever is. A Hero is a Hero at all points; in the soul and thought of him first of all. This Odin, in his rude semi-articulate way, had a word to speak. A great heart laid open to take in this great Universe, 15 and man's Life here, and utter a great word about it. A Hero, as I say, in his own rude manner; a wise, gifted, noble-hearted man. And now, if we still admire such a man beyond all others, what must these wild Norse souls, first awakened into 20 thinking, have made of him! To them, as yet without names for it, he was noble and noblest; Hero, Prophet, God; *Wuotan*, the greatest of all. Thought is Thought, however it speak or spell itself. Intrinsically, I conjecture, this Odin must have been of 25 the same sort of stuff as the greatest kind of men. A great thought in the wild deep heart of him! The rough words he articulated, are they not the rudimental roots of those English words we still use? He worked so, in that obscure element. But he 30 was as a *light* kindled in it; a light of Intellect, rude Nobleness of heart, the only kind of lights we

have yet; a Hero, as I say: and he had to shine there, and make his obscure element a little lighter, — as is still the task of us all.

We will fancy him to be the Type Norseman; the
5 finest Teuton whom that race had yet produced. The rude Norse heart burst-up into *boundless* admiration round him; into adoration. He is as a root of so many great things; the fruit of him is found growing, from deep thousands of years,
10 over the whole field of Teutonic Life. Our own Wednesday, as I said, is it not still Odin's Day? Wednesbury, Wansborough, Wanstead, Wands-worth: Odin grew into England too, these are still leaves from that root! He was the Chief God to
15 all the Teutonic Peoples; their Pattern Norseman; — in such way did *they* admire their Pattern Norseman; that was the fortune he had in the world.

Thus if the man Odin himself have vanished utterly, there is this huge Shadow of him which
20 still projects itself over the whole History of his People. For this Odin once admitted to be God, we can understand well that the whole Scandinavian Scheme of Nature, or dim No-scheme, whatever it might before have been, would now begin to develop
25 itself altogether differently, and grow thenceforth in a new manner. What this Odin saw into, and taught with his runes and his rhymes, the whole Teutonic People laid to heart and carried forward. His way of thought became their way of thought:
30 — such, under new conditions, is the history of every great thinker still. In gigantic confused lineaments, like some enormous camera-obscura

shadow thrown upwards from the dead deeps of the Past, and covering the whole Northern Heaven, is not that Scandinavian Mythology in some sort the Portraiture of this man Odin? The gigantic mage of *his* natural face, legible or not legible here, expanded and confused in that manner! Ah, Thought, I say, is always Thought. No great man lives in vain. The History of the world is but the Biography of great men.

To me there is something very touching in this primeval figure of Heroism; in such artless, helpless, but hearty entire reception of a Hero by his fellow-men. Never so helpless in shape, it is the noblest of feelings, and a feeling in some shape or other perennial as man himself. If I could show in any measure, what I feel deeply for a long time now, That it is the vital element of manhood, the soul of man's history here in our world, — it would be the chief use of this discoursing at present. We do not now call our great men Gods, nor admire *without* limit; ah no, *with* limit enough! But if we have no great men, or do not admire at all, — that were a still worse case.

This poor Scandinavian Hero-worship, that whole Norse way of looking at the Universe, and adjusting oneself there, has an indestructible merit for us. A rude childlike way of recognising the divineness of Nature, the divineness of Man; most rude, yet heartfelt, robust, giantlike; betokening what a giant of a man this child would yet grow to! — It was a truth, and is none. Is it not as the half-dumb stifled voice of the long-buried generations of our

own Fathers, calling out of the depths of ages
 us, in whose veins their blood still runs: "Th
 then, this is what *we* made of the world: this is *al*
 the image and notion we could form to ourselves *of*
 5 this great mystery of a Life and Universe. Despise
 it not. You are raised high above it, to large free
 scope of vision; but you too are not yet at the top.
 No, your notion too, so much enlarged, is but a par-
 tial, imperfect one; that matter is a thing no man
 10 will ever, in time or out of time, comprehend; after
 thousands of years of ever-new expansion, man will
 find himself but struggling to comprehend again a
 part of it: the thing is larger than man, not to be
 comprehended by him; an Infinite thing!"

15 The essence of the Scandinavian, as indeed of all
 Pagan Mythologies, we found to be recognition of
 the divineness of Nature; sincere communion of
 man with the mysterious invisible Powers visibly
 seen at work in the world round him. This, I
 20 should say, is more sincerely done in the Scandina-
 vian than in any Mythology I know. Sincerity is
 the great characteristic of it. Superior sincerity
 (far superior) consoles us for the total want of old
 Grecian grace. Sincerity, I think, is better than
 25 grace. I feel that these old Northmen were looking
 into Nature with open eye and soul: most earnest,
 honest; childlike, and yet manlike; with a great-
 hearted simplicity and depth and freshness, in a
 true, loving, admiring, unfearing way. A right
 30 valiant, true old race of men. Such recognition of
 Nature one finds to be the chief element of Pagan-

ism: recognition of Man, and his Moral Duty, though this too is not wanting, comes to be the chief element only in purer forms of religion. Here, indeed, is a great distinction and epoch in Human Beliefs; a great landmark in the religious development of Mankind. Man first puts himself in relation with Nature and her Powers, wonders and worships over those; not till a later epoch does he discern that all Power is Moral, that the grand point is the distinction for him of Good and Evil, of *Thou shalt* and *Thou shalt not*. 5 10

With regard to all these fabulous delineations in the *Edda*, I will remark, moreover, as indeed was already hinted, that most probably they must have been of much newer date; most probably, even from the first, were comparatively idle for the old Norsemen, and as it were a kind of Poetic sport. Allegory and Poetic Delineation, as I said above, cannot be religious Faith; the Faith itself must first be there, then Allegory enough will gather round it, as the fit body round its soul. The Norse Faith, I can well suppose, like other Faiths, was most active while it lay mainly in the silent state, and had not yet much to say about itself, still less to sing. 20 25

Among those shadowy *Edda* matters, amid all that fantastic congeries of assertions, and traditions, in their musical Mythologies, the main practical belief a man could have was probably not much more than this: of the *Valkyrs* and the *Hall of Odin*; of an inflexible *Destiny*; and that the one thing needful for a man was *to be brave*. T 30

Valkyrs are Choosers of the Slain; a Destiny inexorable, which it is useless trying to bend or soften, has appointed who is to be slain; this was a fundamental point for the Norse believer; — as indeed it is for all earnest men everywhere, for a Mahomet, a Luther, for a Napoleon too. It lies at the basis of this for every such man; it is the woof out of which his whole system of thought is woven. The *Valkyrs*; and then that these *Choosers* lead the brave to a heavenly *Hall of Odin*; only the base and slavish being thrust elsewhere, into the realms of Hela the Death-goddess: I take this to have been the soul of the whole Norse Belief. They understood in their heart that it was indispensable to be brave; that Odin would have no favour for them, but despise and thrust them out, if they were not brave. Consider too whether there is not something in this! It is an everlasting duty, valid in our day as in that, the duty of being brave. *Valour* is still *value*. The first duty for a man is still that of subduing *Fear*. We must get rid of Fear; we cannot act at all till then. A man's acts are slavish not true but specious; his very thoughts are false; he thinks too as a slave and coward, till he has got Fear under his feet. Odin's creed, if we entangle the real kernel of it, is true to this. A man shall and must be valiant; he must move forward, and quit himself like a man, — triumph imperturbably in the appointment and choice of the upper Powers; and, on the whole, not fear. Now and always, the completeness of his victory over Fear will determine how much of a man

For the first time, that kind of valour of the old Scandinavians, such as they thought it a shame to desert, was in the battle; and of natural courage, which was going on, they were curiously ignorant. That Odin might receive then a share of the glory of kings, about to be hallooed out with a song; the ship sent forth wild sails, and the crew were turning it; that, once on fire, it blazed in flame, and in the same manner burnt the old hero, at once in the sky and in the sea. Wild bloody valour, the valour of the North, I say, than none of the old Scandinavians; what an indomitable rage of energy!—strong with closed lips, as I fancy them, unconscious that they were specially brave, only doing the work of death with its monsters, and adorning things,—predecessors of our own Blake and Nelson! No Homer sang these Norse Seaking-ages, but Agamemnon's was a small audacity, and of small fruit to the world, to some of them; to the Hroff's of Normandy, for instance! Hroff, or Rollo Duke of Normandy, the wild Seaking, had a share in governing England at this hour.

Nor was it altogether nothing, even that wild
 sea-roving and battling, through so many genera- 25
 tions. It needed to be ascertained which was the
 strongest kind of men; who were to be ruler over
 whom. Among the Northland Sovereigns, too, I
 find some who got the title *Wood-cutter*; *Forest-*
felling Kings. Much lies in that. I suppose at 30
 bottom many of them were forest-fellers as well
 as fighters, though the Skalds talk mainly of the

latter,—misleading certain critics not a little
 no nation of men could ever live by fighting al
 there could not produce enough come out of t
 I suppose the right good fighter was oftenest
 5 the right good forest-feller,—the right good
 prover, discerner, doer and worker in every k
 for true valour, different enough from ferocity, i
 basis of all. A more legitimate kind of valour t
 showing itself against the untamed Forests
 10 dark brute Powers of Nature, to conquer Na
 for us. In the same direction have not we t
 descendants since carried it far? May such va
 last forever with us!

That the man Odin, speaking with a Hero's v
 15 and heart, as with an impressiveness out of Hea
 told his People the infinite importance of Va
 how man thereby became a god; and that
 People, feeling a response to it in their own he
 believed this message of his, and thought it a
 20 sage out of Heaven, and him a Divinity for tel
 it them: this seems to me the primary seed-g
 of the Norse Religion, from which all manne
 mythologies, symbolic practices, speculations,
 gories, songs and sagas would naturally g
 25 Grow,—how strangely! I called it a small l
 shining and shaping in the huge vortex of N
 darkness. Yet the darkness itself *was alive* ;
 sider that. It was the eager inarticulate v
 structured Mind of the whole Norse People, lon
 30 only to become articulate, to go on articulating
 farther! The living doctrine grows, grows;—
 a Banyan-tree: the first *seed* is the essential th

any branch strikes itself down into the earth, becomes a new root; and so, in endless complexity, we have a whole wood, a whole jungle, one seed the parent of it all. Was not the whole Norse Religion, accordingly, in some sense, what we called 'the enormous shadow of this man's likeness'? Critics trace some affinity in some Norse mythuses, of the Creation and suchlike, with those of the Hindoos. The Cow Adumbla, 'licking the rime from the rocks,' has a kind of Hindoo look. A Hindoo Cow, transported into frosty countries. Probably enough; indeed we may say undoubtedly, these things will have a kindred with the remotest lands, with the earliest times. Thought does not die, but only is changed. The first man that began to think in this Planet of ours, he was the beginner of all. And then the second man, and the third man;—nay, every true Thinker to this hour is a kind of Odin, teaches men *his* way of thought, spreads a shadow of his own likeness over sections of the History of the World.

Of the distinctive poetic character or merit of this Norse Mythology I have not room to speak; nor does it concern us much. Some wild Prophecies we have, as the *Völuspá* in the *Elder Edda*; of a rapt, earnest, sibylline sort. But they were comparatively an idle adjunct of the matter, men who as it were but toyed with the matter, these later Skalds; and it is *their* songs chiefly that survive. In later centuries, I suppose, they would go on singing, poetically symbolising, as our modern

Painters paint, when it was no longer from the innermost heart, or not from the heart at all. This is everywhere to be well kept in mind.

- Gray's fragments of Norse Lore, at any rate,
5 will give one no notion of it; — any more than Pope will of Homer. It is no square-built gloomy palace of black ashlar marble, shrouded in awe and horror, as Gray gives it us: no; rough as the North rocks, as the Iceland deserts, it is; with a heartiness,
10 homeliness, even a tint of good humour and robust mirth in the middle of these fearful things. The strong old Norse heart did not go upon theatrical sublimities; they had not time to tremble. I like much their robust simplicity; their veracity, directness of conception. Thor 'draws down his
15 brows' in a veritable Norse rage; 'grasps his hammer till the *knuckles grow white*.' Beautiful traits of pity too, an honest pity. Balder 'the white God' dies; the beautiful, benignant; he is the
20 Sungod. They try all Nature for a remedy; but he is dead. Frigga, his mother, sends Hermoder to seek or see him: nine days and nine nights he rides through gloomy deep valleys, a labyrinth of gloom; arrives at the Bridge with its gold roof:
25 the Keeper says, "Yes, Balder did pass here; but the Kingdom of the Dead is down yonder, far towards the North." Hermoder rides on; leaps Hell-gate, Hela's gate; does see Balder, and speak with him: Balder cannot be delivered. Inexorable!
30 Hela will not, for Odin or any God, give him up. The beautiful and gentle has to remain there. His Wife had volunteered to go with him, to die with

him. They shall forever remain there. He sends his ring to Odin; Nanna his wife sends her *thimble* to Frigga, as a remembrance—Ah me!— *Nutt!*

For indeed Valour is the fountain of Pity too; —of Truth, and all that is great and good in man. 5 The robust homely vigour of the Norse heart attaches one much, in these delineations. Is it not a trait of right honest strength, says Uhland, who has written a fine *Essay* on Thor, that the old Norse heart finds its friend in the Thunder-god? That 10 it is not frightened away by his thunder; but finds that Summer-heat, the beautiful noble summer, must and will have thunder withal! The Norse heart *loves* this Thor and his hammer-bolt; sports with him. Thor is Summer-heat; the god of 15 Peaceable Industry as well as Thunder. He is the Peasant's friend; his true henchman and attendant is Thialfi, *Manual Labour*. Thor himself engages in all manner of rough manual work, scorns no business for its plebeianism; is ever and anon 20 travelling to the country of the Jötuns, harrying those chaotic Frost-monsters, subduing them, at least straitening and damaging them. There is a great broad humour in some of these things.

Thor, as we saw above, goes to Jötun-land, to 25 seek Hymir's Caldron, that the Gods may brew beer. Hymir the huge Giant enters, his gray beard all full of hoar-frost; splits pillars with the very glance of his eye; Thor, after much rough tumult, *snatches* the Pot, claps it on his head; the 'handles 30 of it reach down to his heels.' The Norse Skald has a kind of loving sport with Thor. This is the

- Hymir whose cattle, the critics have discovered, are Icebergs. Huge untutored Brobdignag genius, —needing only to be tamed-down; into Shakspeares, Dantes, Goethes! It is all gone now, that
5 old Norse work, —Thor the Thunder-god changed into Jack the Giant-killer: but the mind that made it is here yet. How strangely things grow, and die, and do not die! There are twigs of that great world-tree of Norse Belief still curiously traceable.
- 10 This poor Jack of the Nursery, with his miraculous shoes of swiftness, coat of darkness, sword of sharpness, he is one. *Hynde Etin*, and still more decisively *Red Etin of Ireland*, in the Scottish Ballads, these are both derived from Norseland; *Etin* is
15 evidently a *Jötun*. Nay, Shakspeare's *Hamlet* is a twig too of this same world-tree; there seems no doubt of that. *Hamlet*, *Amleth*, I find, is really a mythic personage; and his Tragedy, of the poisoned Father, poisoned asleep by drops in his ear,
/ and the rest, is a Norse mythus! Old Saxo, as his
20 wont was, made it a Danish history; Shakspeare, out of Saxo, made it what we see. That is a twig of the world-tree that has *grown*, I think; —by nature or accident that one has grown!
- 25 In fact, these old Norse songs have a *truth* in them, an inward perennial truth and greatness, —as, indeed, all must have that can very long preserve itself by tradition alone. It is a greatness not of mere body and gigantic bulk, but a rude
30 greatness of soul. There is a sublime uncomplaining melancholy traceable in these old hearts. A great free glance into the very deeps of thought-

They seem to have seen, these brave old Northmen,
what Meditation has taught all men in all ages,
That this world is after all but a show,— a phe-
nomenon or appearance, no real thing. All deep
souls see into that,— the Hindoo Mythologist, the
German Philosopher,— the Shakspeare, the earnest
Thinker, wherever he may be :

‘ We are such stuff as Dreams are made of ! ’

One of Thor’s expeditions, to Utgard (the *Outer*
Garden, central seat of Jötun-land), is remarkable
in this respect. Thialfi was with him, and Loke.
After various adventures, they entered upon Giant-
land; wandered over plains, wild uncultivated
places, among stones and trees. At nightfall they
noticed a house; and as the door, which indeed
formed one whole side of the house, was open, they
entered. It was a simple habitation; one large
hall, altogether empty. They stayed there. Sud-
denly in the dead of the night loud noises alarmed
them. Thor grasped his hammer; stood in the
door, prepared for fight. His companions within
ran hither and thither in their terror, seeking some
outlet in that rude hall; they found a little closet
at last, and took refuge there. Neither had Thor
any battle: for, lo, in the morning it turned out
that the noise had been only the *snoring* of a cer-
tain enormous but peaceable Giant, the Giant Skry-
mir, who lay peaceably sleeping near by; and this
that they took for a house was merely his *Glove*,
thrown aside there; the door was the *Glove-wrist*;
the little closet they had fled into was the *Thumb*!

Such a glove;—I remark too that it had not fingers as ours have, but only a thumb, and the rest undivided: a most ancient, rustic glove!

Skrymir now carried their portmanteau all day;
5 Thor, however, had his own suspicions, did not like the ways of Skrymir; determined at night to put an end to him as he slept. Raising his hammer, he struck down into the Giant's face a right thunderbolt blow, of force to rend rocks. The Giant
10 merely awoke; rubbed his cheek, and said, Did a leaf fall? Again Thor struck, so soon as Skrymir again slept; a better blow than before; but the Giant only murmured, Was that a grain of sand? Thor's third stroke was with both his hands (the
15 'knuckles white' I suppose), and seemed to dint deep into Skrymir's visage; but he merely checked his snore, and remarked, There must be sparrows roosting in this tree, I think; what is that they have dropt?—At the gate of Utgard, a place so
20 high that you had to 'strain your neck bending back to see the top of it,' Skrymir went his ways. Thor and his companions were admitted; invited to take share in the games going on. To Thor, for his part, they handed a Drinking-horn; it was a
25 common feat, they told him, to drink this dry at one draught. Long and fiercely, three times over, Thor drank; but made hardly any impression. He was a weak child, they told him: could he lift that Cat he saw there? Small as the feat seemed, Thor
30 with his whole godlike strength could not; he bent-up the creature's back, could not raise its feet off the ground, could at the utmost raise one foot.

Why, you are no man, said the Utgard people; here is an Old Woman that will wrestle you! Thor, heartily ashamed, seized this haggard Old Woman; but could not throw her.

And now, on their quitting Utgard, the chief 5
Jötun, escorting them politely a little way, said to Thor: "You are beaten then:—yet be not so much ashamed; there was deception of appearance in it. That Horn you tried to drink was the *Sea*; 10
you did make it ebb; but who could drink that, the bottomless! The Cat you would have lifted,—why, that is the *Midgard-snake*, the Great World-serpent, which, tail in mouth, girds and keeps-up the whole created world; had you torn that up, the world must have rushed to ruin! As for the 15
Old Woman, she was *Time*, Old Age, Duration: with her what can wrestle? No man nor no god with her; gods or men, she prevails over all! And then those three strokes you struck,—look at these *three valleys*; your three strokes made these!" 20
Thor looked at his attendant Jötun: it was Skrymir;—it was, say Norse critics, the old chaotic rocky *Earth* in person, and that glove-house was some Earth-cavern! But Skrymir had vanished; Utgard with its skyhigh gates, when Thor grasped 25
his hammer to smite them, had gone to air; only the Giant's voice was heard mocking: "Better come no more to Jötunheim!"—

This is of the allegoric period, as we see, and half play, not of the prophetic and entirely devout: 30
but as a mythus is there not real antique Norse gold in it? More true metal, rough from the Mimer-

Such a glove;—I remark too that
as ours have, but only a thumb,
divided: a most ancient, rustic glove.

Skrymir now carried their porter.

- 5 Thor, however, had his own suspicion
the ways of Skrymir; determined
an end to him as he slept. Raising
he struck down into the Giant's face
derbolt blow, of force to rend rock.
10 merely awoke; rubbed his cheek, and
leaf fall? Again Thor struck, so soon
again slept; a better blow than before.
Giant only murmured, Was that a glove?
Thor's third stroke was with both his
15 'knuckles white' I suppose), and seeing
deep into Skrymir's visage; but he merely
his snore, and remarked, There must be
roosting in this tree, I think; what is
have dropt?—At the gate of Utgard,
20 high that you had to 'strain your neck
back to see the top of it,' Skrymir went.
Thor and his companions were admitted
to take share in the games going on. To
his part, they handed a Drinking-horn; it
25 common feat, they told him, to drink this
one draught. Long and fiercely, three times
Thor drank; but made hardly any impression.
was a weak child, they told him: could he lift
Cat he saw there? Small as the feat seemed,
30 with his whole godlike strength could not
bent-up the creature's back, could not raise it
off the ground, could at the utmost raise one

And now, connected with this, let us glance at the *last* mythus of the appearance of Thor; and end there. I fancy it to be the latest in date of all these fables; a sorrowing protest against the advance of Christianity,—set forth reproachfully by some Conservative Pagan. King Olaf has been harshly blamed for his over-zeal in introducing Christianity; surely I should have blamed him far more for an under-zeal in that! He paid dear enough for it; he died by the revolt of his Pagan people, in battle, in the year 1033, at Sticklestad, near that Drontheim, where the chief Cathedral of the North has now stood for many centuries, dedicated gratefully to his memory as *Saint* Olaf. The mythus about Thor is to this effect. King Olaf, the Christian Reform King, is sailing with fit escort along the shore of Norway, from haven to haven; dispensing justice, or doing other royal work: on leaving a certain haven, it is found that a stranger, of grave eyes and aspect, red beard, of stately robust figure, has stepped in. The courtiers address him; his answers surprise by their pertinency and depth: at length he is brought to the King. The stranger's conversation here is not less remarkable, as they sail along the beautiful shore; but after some time, he addresses King Olaf thus: "Yes, King Olaf, it is all beautiful, with the sun shining on it there; green, fruitful, a right fair home for you; and many a sore day had Thor, many a wild fight with the rock Jötuns, before he could make it so. And now you seem minded to put away Thor. King Olaf, have a care!" said the stranger, drawing-down

his brows;—and when they looked again, he was nowhere to be found. — This is the last appearance of Thor on the stage of this world!

Do we not see well enough how the Fable might arise, without untruth on the part of any one. It is the way most Gods have come to appear among men: thus, if in Pindar's time 'Neptune was seen once at the Nemean Games,' what was this Neptune too but a 'stranger of noble grave aspect,'—*fit to be 'seen'!* There is something pathetic, tragic force in this last voice of Paganism. Thor is vanished; the whole Norse world has vanished; and will not return ever again. In like fashion to that pass away the highest things. All things that have been in this world, all things that are or will be in it have to vanish: we have our sad farewell to give them.

That Norse Religion, a rude but earnest, sternly impressive *Consecration of Valour* (so we may define it), sufficed for these old valiant Northmen. Consecration of Valour is not a *bad* thing! We will take it for good, so far as it goes. Neither is there no use in *knowing* something about this old Paganism of our Fathers. Unconsciously, and combined with higher things, it is in *us* yet, that old Faith withal! To know it consciously, brings us into closer and clearer relation with the Past,—with our own possessions in the Past. For the whole Past, as I keep repeating, is the possession of the Present; the Past had always something true and is a precious possession. In a different time in a different place, it is always some other *side*!

common Human Nature that has been developed itself. The actual True is the sum of all these; any one of them by itself constitutes what of man Nature is hitherto developed. Better to know them all than mis-know them. "To which of these Three Religions do you specially adhere?" asks Meister of his Teacher. "To all the three!" answers the other: "To all the Three; they by their union first constitute the True Religion."

LECTURE II

THE HERO AS PROPHET. MAHOMET: ISLAM

[Friday, 8th May 1840]

FROM the first rude times of Paganism among the Scandinavians in the North, we advance to a very different epoch of religion, among a very different people: Mahometanism among the Arabs.

5 A great change; what a change and progress is indicated here, in the universal condition and thoughts of men!

The Hero is not now regarded as a God among his fellow-men; but as one God-inspired, as a
10 Prophet. It is the second phasis of Hero-worship: the first or oldest, we may say, has passed away without return; in the history of the world there will not again be any man, never so great, whom his fellow-men will take for a god. Nay we might
15 rationally ask, Did any set of human beings ever really think the man they *saw* there standing beside them a god, the maker of this world? Perhaps not: it was usually some man they remembered, or *had* seen. But neither can this any more be. The
20 Great Man is not recognised henceforth as a god any more.

It was a rude gross error, that of counting the
reat Man a god. Yet let us say that it is at all
mes difficult to know *what* he is, or how to account
f him and receive him! The most significant feat- 5
re in the history of an epoch is the manner it has of
welcoming a Great Man. Ever, to the true instincts
f men, there is something godlike in him. Whether
they shall take him to be a god, to be a prophet,
or what they shall take him to be? that is ever a
grand question; by their way of answering that, we 10
shall see, as through a little window, into the very
heart of these men's spiritual condition. For at
bottom the Great Man, as he comes from the hand
of Nature, is ever the same kind of thing: Odin,
Luther, Johnson, Burns; I hope to make it appear 15
that these are all originally of one stuff; that only
by the world's reception of them, and the shapes
they assume, are they so immeasurably diverse.
The worship of Odin astonishes us,—to fall pro-
strate before the Great Man, into *deliquium* of love 20
and wonder over him, and feel in their hearts that
he was a denizen of the skies, a god! This was
imperfect enough: but to welcome, for example, a
Burns as we did, was that what we can call perfect?
The most precious gift that Heaven can give to the 25
Earth; a man of 'genius' as we call it; the Soul of
a Man actually sent down from the skies with a
God's message to us,—this we waste away as an
idle artificial firework, sent to amuse us a little, and
sink it into ashes, wreck and ineffectuality: *such* 30
reception of a Great Man I do not call very perfect
either! Looking into the heart of the thing, one

may perhaps call that of Burns a still uglier phenomenon, betokening still sadder imperfections in mankind's ways, than the Scandinavian method itself! To fall into mere unreasoning *delirium* of love and admiration, was not good; but such unreasoning, nay irrational supercilious no-love at all is perhaps still worse!—It is a thing forever changing, this of Hero-worship: different in each age, difficult to do well in any age. Indeed, the heart of the whole business of the age, one may say, is to do it well.

We have chosen Mahomet not as the most eminent Prophet; but as the one we are freest to speak of. He is by no means the truest of Prophets; but I do esteem him a true one. Farther, as there is no danger of our becoming, any of us, Mahometans, I mean to say all the good of him I justly can. It is the way to get at his secret: let us try to understand what *he* meant with the world; what the world meant and means with him, will then be a more answerable question. Our current hypothesis about Mahomet, that he was a scheming Impostor, a Falsehood incarnate, that his religion is a mere mass of quackery and fatuity, begins really to be now untenable to any one. The lies, which well-meaning zeal has heaped round this man, are disgraceful to ourselves only. When Pococke inquired of Grotius, Where the proof was of that story of the pigeon, trained to pick peas from Mahomet's ear, and pass for an angel dictating to him? Grotius answered that there was no proof! It is really time to dismiss all that. The word this man spoke has been

the life-guidance now of a hundred-and-eighty millions of men these twelve-hundred years. These hundred-and-eighty millions were made by God as well as we. A greater number of God's creatures believe in Mahomet's word at this hour than in any other word whatever. Are we to suppose that it was a miserable piece of spiritual legerdemain, this which so many creatures of the Almighty have lived by and died by? I, for my part, cannot form any such supposition. I will believe most things sooner than that. One would be entirely at a loss what to think of this world at all, if quackery so grew and were sanctioned here.

Alas, such theories are very lamentable. If we would attain to knowledge of anything in God's true Creation, let us disbelieve them wholly! They are the product of an Age of Scepticism; they indicate the saddest spiritual paralysis, and mere death-life of the souls of men: more godless theory, I think, was never promulgated in this Earth. A false man found a religion? Why, a false man cannot build a brick house! If he do not know and follow *truly* the properties of mortar, burnt clay and what else he works in, it is no house that he makes, but a rubbish-heap. It will not stand for twelve centuries, to lodge a hundred-and-eighty millions; it will fall straightway. A man must conform himself to Nature's laws, *be* verily in communion with Nature and the truth of things, or Nature will answer him, No, not at all! Speciosities are specious—ah me!—a Cagliostro, many Cagliostros, prominent world-leaders, do prosper by

their quackery, for a day. It is like a forged bank-note; they get it passed out of *their* worthless hands: others, not they, have to smart for it. Nature bursts-up in fire-flames, French Revolutions
5 and suchlike, proclaiming with terrible veracity that forged notes are forged.

But of a Great Man especially, of him I will venture to assert that it is incredible he should have been other than true. It seems to me the
10 primary foundation of him, and of all that can lie in him, this. No Mirabeau, Napoleon, Burns, Cromwell, no man adequate to do anything, but is first of all in right earnest about it; what I call a sincere man. I should say sincerity, a deep, great,
15 genuine sincerity, is the first characteristic of all men in any way heroic. Not the sincerity that calls itself sincere; ah no, that is a very poor matter indeed;—a shallow braggart conscious sincerity; oftenest self-conceit mainly. The Great
20 Man's sincerity is of the kind he cannot speak of, is not conscious of: nay, I suppose, he is conscious rather of *insincerity*; for what man can walk accurately by the law of truth for one day? No, the Great Man does not boast himself sincere, far
25 from that; perhaps does not ask himself if he is so: I would say rather, his sincerity does not depend on himself; he cannot help being sincere! The great Fact of Existence is great to him. Fly as he will, he cannot get out of the awful presence
30 of this Reality. His mind is so made; he is great by that, first of all. Fearful and wonderful, real as Life, real as Death, is this Universe to him.

Though all men should forget its truth, and walk in a vain show, he cannot. At all moments the Flame-image glares-in upon him; undeniable, there, there!—I wish you to take this as my primary definition of a Great Man. A little man may have this, it is competent to all men that God has made: but a Great Man cannot be without it. 5

Such a man is what we call an *original* man; he comes to us at first-hand. A messenger he, sent from the Infinite Unknown with tidings to us. We may call him Poet, Prophet, God;—in one way or other, we all feel that the words he utters are as no other man's words. Direct from the Inner Fact of things;—he lives, and has to live, in daily communion with that. Hearsays cannot hide it from him; he is blind, homeless, miserable, following hearsays; *it* glares-in upon him. Really his utterances, are they not a kind of 'revelation';—what we must call such for want of some other name? It is from the heart of the world that he comes; he is portion of the primal reality of things. God has made many revelations; but this man too, has not God made him, the latest and newest of all? The 'inspiration of the Almighty giveth *him* understanding': we must listen before all to him. 25

This Mahomet, then, we will in no wise consider as an Inanity and Theatricality, a poor conscious ambitious schemer; we cannot conceive him so. The rude message he delivered was a real one withal; an earnest confused voice from the unknown Deep. The man's words were not false, nor his workings here below; no Inanity and Simula- 30

crum; a fiery mass of Life cast-up from the great bosom of Nature herself. To *kindle* the world; the world's Maker had ordered it so. Neither can the faults, imperfections, insincerities even, of
5 Mahomet, if such were never so well proved against him, shake this primary fact about him.

On the whole, we make too much of faults; the details of the business hide the real centre of it. Faults? The greatest of faults, I should say, is
10 to be conscious of none. Readers of the Bible above all, one would think, might know better. Who is called there 'the man according to God's own heart'? David, the Hebrew King, had fallen into sins enough; blackest crimes; there was no
15 want of sins. And thereupon the unbelievers sneer and ask, Is this your man according to God's heart? The sneer, I must say, seems to me but a shallow one. What are faults, what are the outward details of a life; if the inner secret of it, the remorse, temp-
20 tations, true, often-baffled, never-ended struggle of it, be forgotten? 'It is not in man that walketh to direct his steps.' Of all acts, is not, for a man, *repentance* the most divine? The deadliest sin, I say, were that same supercilious consciousness of
25 no sin;—that is death; the heart so conscious is divorced from sincerity, humility and fact; is dead: it is 'pure' as dead dry sand is pure. David's life and history, as written for us in those Psalms of his, I consider to be the truest emblem ever given
30 of a man's moral progress and warfare here below. All earnest souls will ever discern in it the faithful struggle of an earnest human soul towards what

good and best. Struggle often baffled, sore
 led, down as into entire wreck; yet a struggle
 er ended; ever, with tears, repentance, true un-
 conquerable purpose, begun anew. Poor human
 ure! Is not a man's walking, in truth, always 5
 t: 'a succession of falls'? Man can do no other.
 this wild element of a Life, he has to struggle
 vards; now fallen, deep-abased; and ever, with
 s, repentance, with bleeding heart, he has to
 : again, struggle again still onwards. That his 10
 uggle *be* a faithful unconquerable one: that is
 question of questions. We will put-up with
 ny sad details, if the soul of it were true. De-
 s by themselves will never teach us what it is.
 xelieve we misestimate Mahomet's faults even 15
 faults: but the secret of him will never be got
 dwelling there. We will leave all this behind
 ; and assuring ourselves that he did mean some
 e thing, ask candidly what it was or might be.

These Arabs Mahomet was born among are cer- 20
 nly a notable people. Their country itself is
 table; the fit habitation for such a race. Savage
 xcessible rock-mountains, great grim deserts,
 xternating with beautiful strips of verdure: wher-
 er water is, there is greenness, beauty; odor- 25
 rous balm-shrubs, date-trees, frankincense-trees.
 nsider that wide waste horizon of sand, empty,
 ent, like a sand-sea, dividing habitable place from
 bitable. You are all alone there, left alone with
 e Universe; by day a fierce sun blazing down on it 30
 th intolerable radiance; by night the great deep

Heaven with its stars. Such a country is fit for :
 swift-handed, deep-hearted race of men. There i
 something most agile, active, and yet most medita
 tive, enthusiastic in the Arab character. The Per
 5 sians are called the French of the East; we wil
 call the Arabs Oriental Italians. A gifted nobl
 people; a people of wild strong feelings, and o
 iron restraint over these: the characteristic of noble
 mindedness, of genius. The wild Bedouin welcomes
 10 the stranger to his tent, as one having right to all
 that is there; were it his worst enemy, he will slay
 his foal to treat him, will serve him with sacred
 hospitality for three days, will set him fairly on
 his way;—and then, by another law as sacred, kill
 15 him if he can. In words too, as in action. They
 are not a loquacious people, taciturn rather; but
 eloquent, gifted when they do speak. An earnest,
 truthful kind of men. They are, as we know, of
 Jewish kindred: but with that deadly terrible ear-
 20 nestness of the Jews they seem to combine some-
 thing graceful, brilliant, which is not Jewish. They
 had 'Poetic contests' among them before the time
 of Mahomet. Sale says, at Ocadh, in the South of
 Arabia, there were yearly fairs, and there, when the
 25 merchandising was done, Poets sang for prizes:—
 the wild people gathered to hear that.

One Jewish quality these Arabs manifest; the
 outcome of many or of all high qualities: what we
 may call religiosity. From of old they had been
 30 zealous worshippers, according to their light. They
 worshipped the stars, as Sabeans; worshipped many
 natural objects,—recognised them as symbols, im-

mediate manifestations, of the Maker of Nature. It was wrong; and yet not wholly wrong. All God's works are still in a sense symbols of God. Do we not, as I urged, still account it a merit to recognise certain inexhaustible significance, 'poetic beauty' as we name it, in all natural objects whatsoever? A man is a poet, and honoured, for doing that, and speaking or singing it, — a kind of diluted worship. They had many Prophets, these Arabs; Teachers each to his tribe, each according to the light he had. But indeed, have we not from of old the noblest of proofs, still palpable to every one of us, of what devoutness and noble-mindedness had dwelt in these rustic thoughtful peoples? Biblical critics seem agreed that our own *Book of Job* was written in that region of the world. I call that, apart from all theories about it, one of the grandest things ever written with pen. One feels, indeed, as if it were not Hebrew; such a noble universality, different from noble patriotism or sectarianism, reigns in it. A noble Book; all men's Book! It is our first, oldest statement of the never-ending Problem, — man's destiny, and God's ways with him here in this earth. And all in such free flowing outlines; grand in its sincerity, in its simplicity; in its epic melody, and repose of reconciliation. There is the seeing eye, the mildly understanding heart. So true every way; true eyesight and vision for all things; material things no less than spiritual: the Horse, — 'hast thou clothed his neck with *thunder*?' — he *laughs* at the shaking of the spear! Such living likenesses were never since drawn. Sublime

sorrow, sublime reconciliation ; oldest choral melody as of the heart of mankind ; — so soft, and great ; as the summer midnight, as the world with its seas and stars ! There is nothing written, I think, in
5 the Bible or out of it, of equal literary merit. —

To the idolatrous Arabs one of the most ancient universal objects of worship was that Black Stone, still kept in the building called Caabah at Mecca. Diodorus Siculus mentions this Caabah in a way
10 not to be mistaken, as the oldest, most honoured temple in his time ; that is, some half-century before our Era. Silvestre de Sacy says there is some likelihood that the Black Stone is an aerolite. In that case, some man might *see* it fall out of Heaven !
15 It stands now beside the Well Zemzem ; the Caabah is built over both. A Well is in all places a beautiful affecting object, gushing out like life from the hard earth ; — still more so in those hot dry countries, where it is the first condition of being. The
20 Well Zemzem has its name from the bubbling sound of the waters, *zem-zem* ; they think it is the Well which Hagar found with her little Ishmael in the wilderness : the aerolite and it have been sacred now, and had a Caabah over them, for thousands of
25 years. A curious object, that Caabah ! There it stands at this hour, in the black cloth-covering the Sultan sends it yearly ; ‘ twenty-seven cubits high ; ’ with circuit, with double circuit of pillars, with festoon-rows of lamps and quaint ornaments : the
30 lamps will be lighted again *this* night, — to glitter again under the stars. An authentic fragment of the oldest Past. It is the *Keblah* of all Moslem :

from Delhi all onwards to Morocco, the eyes of innumerable praying men are turned towards it, five times, this day and all days: one of the notablest centres in the Habitation of Men.

It had been from the sacredness attached to this 5
Caabah Stone and Hagar's Well, from the pilgrimings of all tribes of Arabs thither, that Mecca took its rise as a Town. A great town once, though much decayed now. It has no natural advantage for a town; stands in a sandy hollow amid bare 10
barren hills, at a distance from the sea; its provisions, its very bread, have to be imported. But so many pilgrims needed lodgings: and then all places of pilgrimage do, from the first, become places of trade. The first day pilgrims meet, merchants have 15
also met: where men see themselves assembled for one object, they find that they can accomplish other objects which depend on meeting together. Mecca became the Fair of all Arabia. And thereby indeed the chief staple and warehouse of whatever Com- 20
merce there was between the Indian and the Western countries, Syria, Egypt, even Italy. It had at one time a population of 100,000; buyers, forwarders of those Eastern and Western products; importers for their own behoof of provisions and 25
corn. The government was a kind of irregular aristocratic republic, not without a touch of theocracy. Ten Men of a chief tribe, chosen in some rough way, were Governors of Mecca, and Keepers of the Caabah. The Koreish were the chief tribe 30
in Mahomet's time; his own family was of that tribe. The rest of the Nation, fractioned and cut-

asunder by deserts, lived under similar rude patriarchal governments by one or several: herdsmen, carriers, traders, generally robbers too; being oftenest at war one with another, or with all: held together by no open bond, if it were not this meeting at the Caabah, where all forms of Arab Idolatry assembled in common adoration; — held mainly by the *inward* indissoluble bond of a common blood and language. In this way had the Arabs lived for long ages, unnoticed by the world; a people of great qualities, unconsciously waiting for the day when they should become notable to all the world. Their Idolatries appear to have been in a tottering state; much was getting into confusion and fermentation among them. Obscure tidings of the most important Event ever transacted in this world, the Life and Death of the Divine Man in Judea, at once the symptom and cause of immeasurable change to all people in the world, had in the course of centuries reached into Arabia too; and could not but, of itself, have produced fermentation there.

It was among this Arab people, so circumstanced, in the year 570 of our Era, that the man Mahomet was born. He was of the family of Hashem, of the Koreish tribe as we said; though poor, connected with the chief persons of his country. Almost at his birth he lost his Father; at the age of six years his Mother too, a woman noted for her beauty, her worth and sense: he fell to the charge of his Grandfather, an old man, a hundred years old. A good old man: Mahomet's Father, Abdallah,

He had been his youngest favourite son. He saw in Mahomet, with his old life-worn eyes, a century later, the lost Abdallah come back again, all that was left of Abdallah. He loved the little orphan Boy dearly; used to say, They must take care of that beautiful little Boy, nothing in their kindred was more precious than he. At his death, while the boy was still but two years old, he left him in charge to Abu Thaleb the eldest of the Uncles, as to him that now was head of the house. By this Uncle, a just and rational man as everything betokens, Mahomet was brought-up in the best Arab way. 5 10

Mahomet, as he grew up, accompanied his Uncle on trading journeys and suchlike; in his eighteenth year one finds him a fighter following his Uncle in war. But perhaps the most significant of all his journeys is one we find noted as of some years' earlier date: a journey to the Fairs of Syria. The young man here first came in contact with a quite foreign world,—with one foreign element of endless moment to him: the Christian Religion. I know not what to make of that 'Sergius, the Nestorian Monk,' whom Abu Thaleb and he are said to have lodged with; or how much any monk could have taught one still so young. Probably enough it is greatly exaggerated, this of the Nestorian Monk. Mahomet was only fourteen; had no language but his own: much in Syria must have been a strange unintelligible whirlpool to him. But the eyes of the lad were open; glimpses of many things would doubtless be taken-in, and lie very enigmatic as yet, which were to ripen in a strange way into views, 20 25 30

into beliefs and insights one day. These journeys to Syria were probably the beginning of much to Mahomet.

- One other circumstance we must not forget: that
- 5 he had no school-learning; of the thing we call school-learning none at all. The art of writing was but just introduced into Arabia; it seems to be the true opinion that Mahomet never could write! Life in the Desert, with its experiences,
- 10 was all his education. What of this infinite Universe he, from his dim place, with his own eyes and thoughts, could take in, so much and no more of it was he to know. Curious, if we will reflect on it, this of having no books. Except by what
- 15 he could see for himself, or hear of by uncertain rumour of speech in the obscure Arabian Desert, he could know nothing. The wisdom that had been before him or at a distance from him in the world, was in a manner as good as not there for him. Of
- 20 the great brother souls, flame-beacons through so many lands and times, no one directly communicates with this great soul. He is alone there, deep down in the bosom of the Wilderness; has to grow up so, — alone with Nature and his own Thoughts.
- 25 But, from an early age, he had been remarked as a thoughtful man. His companions named him '*Al Amin*, The Faithful.' A man of truth and fidelity; true in what he did, in what he spake and thought. They noted that *he* always meant something. A
- 30 man rather taciturn in speech; silent when there was nothing to be said; but pertinent, wise, sincere, when he did speak; always throwing light on the

matter. This is the only sort of speech *worth speaking!* Through life we find him to have been regarded as an altogether solid, brotherly, genuine man. A serious, sincere character; yet amiable, cordial, companionable, jocose even; — a good laugh 5 in him withal: there are men whose laugh is as untrue as anything about them; who cannot laugh. One hears of Mahomet's beauty: his fine sagacious honest face, brown florid complexion, beaming black eyes; — I somehow like too that vein on the brow, 10 which swelled-up black when he was in anger: like the '*horse-shoe vein*' in Scott's *Redgauntlet*. It was a kind of feature in the Hashem family, this black swelling vein in the brow; Mahomet had it prominent, as would appear. A spontaneous, passionate, 15 yet just, true-meaning man! Full of wild faculty, fire and light; of wild worth, all uncultured; working out his life-task in the depths of the Desert there.

How he was placed with Kadijah, a rich Widow, 20 as her Steward, and travelled in her business, again to the Fairs of Syria; how he managed all, as one can well understand, with fidelity, adroitness; how her gratitude, her regard for him grew: the story of their marriage is altogether a graceful intelligi- 25 ble one, as told us by the Arab authors. He was twenty-five; she forty, though still beautiful. He seems to have lived in a most affectionate, peaceable, wholesome way with this wedded benefactress; loving her truly, and her alone. It goes greatly 30 ~~against~~ the impostor theory, the fact that he lived
7 unexceptionable, entirely quiet and

commonplace way, till the heat of his years was gone. He was forty before he talked of any mission from Heaven. All his irregularities, real and supposed, date from after his fiftieth year, when the good Kadijah died. All his 'ambition,' seemingly, had been, hitherto, to live an honest life; his 'fame,' the mere good opinion of neighbours that knew him, had been sufficient hitherto. Not till he was already getting old, the prurient heat of his life all burnt out, and peace growing to be the chief thing this world could give him, did he start on the 'career of ambition'; and, betraying all his past character and ~~reputation~~, set up as a wretched empty charlatan to attain what he could now no longer enjoy! For ~~me~~ I have no faith whatever in that.

The Scared Son of the Wilderness,
with black eyes and open social deep
in him than ambition. A
one of those who cannot
Nature herself has ap-
While others walk in for-
contented enough to dwell
screen himself in for-
with his own soul and the
Mystery of Existence,
him, with its terrors, with
could hide that unspeak-
Such sincerity, as we
truth something of divine.
is a Voice direct from Nat-
and must listen to that
is

person

rom of old, a thousand thoughts, in his pilgrim-
 gs and wanderings, had been in this man: What
 n I? What is this unfathomable Thing I live in,
 hich men name Universe? What is Life; what
 : Death? What am I to believe? What am I to 5
 lo? The grim rocks of Mount Hara, of Mount
 Sinai, the stern sandy solitudes answered not. The
 great Heaven rolling silent overhead, with its blue-
 glancing stars, answered not. There was no answer.
 The man's own soul, and what of God's inspiration 10
 dwelt there, had to answer!

It is the thing which all men have to ask them-
 selves; which we too have to ask, and answer.
 This wild man felt it to be of *infinite* moment; all
 other things of no moment whatever in comparison. 15
 The jargon of argumentative Greek Sects, vague tra-
 ditions of Jews, the stupid routine of Arab Idolatry :
 there was no answer in these. A Hero, as I repeat,
 has this first distinction, which indeed we may call
 first and last, the Alpha and Omega of his whole 20
 Heroism, That he looks through the shows of things
 into *things*. Use and wont, respectable hearsay,
 respectable formula: all these are good, or are not
 good. There is something behind and beyond all
 these, which all these must correspond with, be the 25
 image of, or they are — *Idolatries*; 'bits of black
 wood pretending to be God;' to the earnest soul a
 mockery and abomination. Idolatries never so
 gilded, waited on by heads of the Koreish, will do
 nothing for this man. Though all men walk by 30
 them, what good is it? The great Reality stands
 glaring there upon *him*. He there has to answer :

it, or perish miserably. Now, even now, or else through all Eternity never! Answer it; *thou* must find an answer. — Ambition? What could all Arabia do for this man; with the crown of Greek
5 Heraclius, of Persian Chosroes, and all crowns in the Earth; — what could they all do for him? It was not of the Earth he wanted to hear tell; it was of the Heaven above and of the Hell beneath. All crowns and sovereignties whatsoever, where would
10 *they* in a few brief years be? To be Sheik of Mecca or Arabia, and have a bit of gilt wood put into your hand, — will that be one's salvation? I decidedly think, not. We will leave it altogether, this impostor hypothesis, as not credible; not very
15 tolerable even, worthy chiefly of dismissal by us.

Mahomet had been wont to retire yearly, during the month Ramadhan, into solitude and silence; as indeed was the Arab custom; a praiseworthy custom, which such a man, above all, would find natural and
20 useful. Communing with his own heart, in the silence of the mountains; himself silent; open to the 'small still voices': it was a right natural custom! Mahomet was in his fortieth year, when having withdrawn to a cavern in Mount Hara, near
25 Mecca, during this Ramadhan, to pass the month in prayer, and meditation on those great questions, he one day told his wife Kadijah, who with his household was with him or near him this year, That by the unspeakable special favour of Heaven he had
30 now found it all out; was in doubt and darkness no longer, but saw it all. That all these Idols and Formulas were nothing, miserable bits of wood;

that there was One God in and over all; and we must leave all Idols, and look to Him. That God is great; and that there is nothing else great! He is the Reality. Wooden Idols are not real; He is real. He made us at first, sustains us yet; we and all things are but the shadow of Him; a transitory garment veiling the Eternal Splendour. '*Allah akbar*, God is great;'—and then also '*Islam*,' That we must submit to God. That our whole strength lies in resigned submission to Him, whatsoever He do to us. For this world, and for the other! The thing He sends to us, were it death and worse than death, shall be good, shall be best; we resign ourselves to God.—'If this be *Islam*,' says Goethe, 'do we not all live in *Islam*?' Yes, all of us that have any moral life; we all live so. It has ever been held the highest wisdom for a man not merely to submit to Necessity,—Necessity will make him submit,—but to know and believe well that the stern thing which Necessity had ordered was the wisest, the best, the thing wanted there. To cease his frantic pretension of scanning this great God's-World in his small fraction of a brain; to know that it *had* verily, though deep beyond his soundings, a Just Law, that the soul of it was Good;—that his part in it was to conform to the Law of the Whole, and in devout silence follow that; not questioning it, obeying it as unquestionable.

I say, this is yet the only true morality known. A man is right and invincible, virtuous and on the road towards sure conquest, precisely while he joins himself to the great deep Law of the World, in

spite of all superficial laws, temporary appearances, profit-and-loss calculations; he is victorious while he coöperates with that great central Law, not victorious otherwise: — and surely his first chance of

5 coöperating with it, or getting into the course of it, is to know with his whole soul that it *is*; that it is good, and alone good! This is the soul of Islam; it is properly the soul of Christianity; — for Islam is definable as a confused form of Christianity;

10 had Christianity not been, neither had it been. Christianity also commands us, before all, to be resigned to God. We are to take no counsel with flesh-and-blood; give ear to no vain cavils, vain sorrows and wishes: to know that we know nothing;

15 that the worst and cruelest to our eyes is not what it seems; that we have to receive whatsoever befalls us as sent from God above, and say, It is good and wise, God is great! “Though He slay me, yet will I trust in Him.” Islam means in its way Denial of Self, Annihilation of Self. This is yet the

20 highest Wisdom that Heaven has revealed to our Earth.

Such light had come, as it could, to illuminate the darkness of this wild Arab soul. A confused

25 dazzling splendour as of life and Heaven, in the great darkness which threatened to be death: he called it revelation and the angel Gabriel; — who of us yet can know what to call it? It is the ‘inspiration of the Almighty that giveth us un-

30 derstanding.’ To *know*; to get into the truth of anything, is ever a mystic act, — of which the best Logics can but babble on the surface. ‘Is

not Belief the true god-announcing Miracle ? ' says Novalis. — That Mahomet's whole soul, set in flame with this grand Truth vouchsafed him, should feel as if it were important and the only important thing, was very natural. That Providence had unspeakably honoured *him* by revealing it, saving him from death and darkness ; that he therefore was bound to make known the same to all creatures : this is what was meant by 'Mahomet is the Prophet of God' ; this too is not without its true meaning. — 5 10

The good Kadijah, we can fancy, listened to him with wonder, with doubt : at length she answered : Yes, it was *true* this that he said. One can fancy too the boundless gratitude of Mahomet ; and how of all the kindnesses she had done him, this of believing the earnest struggling word he now spoke was the greatest. 'It is certain,' says Novalis, 'my Conviction gains infinitely, the moment another soul will believe in it.' It is a boundless favour. — 20 He never forgot this good Kadijah. Long afterwards, Ayesha his young favourite wife, a woman who indeed distinguished herself among the Moslem, by all manner of qualities, through her whole long life ; this young brilliant Ayesha was, one day, questioning him : "Now am not I better than Kadijah ? She was a widow ; old, and had lost her looks : you love me better than you did her ?" — "No, by Allah !" answered Mahomet : "No, by Allah ! She believed in me when none else would believe. In the whole world I had but one friend, — ~~as~~ that !" — Seid, his Slave, also believed 25 30

in him; these with his young Cousin Ali, Abu Thaleb's son, were his first converts.

He spoke of his Doctrine to this man and that; but the most treated it with ridicule, with indifference; in three years, I think, he had gained but thirteen followers. His progress was slow enough. His encouragement to go on, was altogether the usual encouragement that such a man in such a case meets. After some three years of small success, he invited forty of his chief kindred to an entertainment; and there stood-up and told them what his pretension was: that he had this thing to promulgate abroad to all men; that it was the highest thing, the one thing: which of them would second him in that? Amid the doubt and silence of all, young Ali, as yet a lad of sixteen, impatient of the silence, started-up, and exclaimed in passionate fierce language, That he would! The assembly, among whom was Abu Thaleb, Ali's Father, could not be unfriendly to Mahomet; yet the sight there, of one unlettered elderly man, with a lad of sixteen, deciding on such an enterprise against all mankind, appeared ridiculous to them; the assembly broke-up in laughter. Nevertheless it proved not a laughable thing; it was a very serious thing! As for this young Ali, one cannot but like him. A noble-minded creature, as he shows himself, now and always afterwards; full of affection, of fiery daring. Something chivalrous in him; brave as a lion; yet with a grace, a truth and affection worthy of Christian knighthood. He died by assassination in the Mosque at Bagdad; a death occasioned by his own

generous fairness, confidence in the fairness of others: he said, If the wound proved not unto death, they must pardon the Assassin; but if it did, then they must slay him straightway, that so they two in the same hour might appear before 5 God, and see which side of that quarrel was the just one!

Mahomet naturally gave offence to the Koreish, Keepers of the Caabah, superintendents of the Idols. One or two men of influence had joined 10 him: the thing spread slowly, but it was spreading. Naturally he gave offence to everybody: Who is this that pretends to be wiser than we all; that rebukes us all, as mere fools and worshippers of wood! Abu Thaleb the good Uncle spoke with 15 him: Could he not be silent about all that; believe it all for himself, and not trouble others, anger the chief men, endanger himself and them all, talking of it? Mahomet answered: If the Sun stood on his right hand and the Moon on his left, ordering 20 him to hold his peace, he could not obey! No: there was something in this Truth he had got which was of Nature herself; equal in rank to Sun, or Moon, or whatsoever thing Nature had made. It would speak itself there, so long as the 25 Almighty allowed it, in spite of Sun and Moon, and all Koreish and all men and things. It must do that, and could do no other. Mahomet answered so; and, they say, 'burst into tears.' Burst into tears: he felt that Abu Thaleb was good to him; 30 that the task he had got was no soft, but a stern and great one.

He went on speaking to who would listen to him; publishing his Doctrine among the pilgrims as they came to Mecca; gaining adherents in this place and that. Continual contradiction, hatred, open or secret danger attended him. His powerful relations protected Mahomet himself; but by and by, on his own advice, all his adherents had to quit Mecca, and seek refuge in Abyssinia over the sea. The Koreish grew ever angrier; laid plots, and swore oaths among them, to put Mahomet to death with their own hands. Abu Thaleb was dead, the good Kadijah was dead. Mahomet is not solicitous of sympathy from us; but his outlook at this time was one of the dismalest. He had to hide in caverns, escape in disguise; fly hither and thither; homeless, in continual peril of his life. More than once it seemed all-over with him; more than once it turned on a straw, some rider's horse taking fright or the like, whether Mahomet and his Doctrine had not ended there, and not been heard of at all. But it was not to end so.

In the thirteenth year of his mission, finding his enemies all banded against him, forty sworn men, one out of every tribe, waiting to take his life, and no continuance possible at Mecca for him any longer, Mahomet fled to the place then called Yathreb, where he had gained some adherents; the place they now call Medina, or '*Medinat al Nabi*, the City of the Prophet,' from that circumstance. It lay some 200 miles off, through rocks and deserts; not without great difficulty, in such mood as we may fancy, he escaped thither, and

found welcome. The whole East dates its era from this Flight, *Hegira* as they name it: the Year 1 of this *Hegira* is 622 of our Era, the fifty-third of Mahomet's life. He was now becoming an old man; his friends sinking round him one by one; his path desolate, encompassed with danger: unless he could find hope in his own heart, the outward face of things was but hopeless for him. It is so with all men in the like case. Hitherto Mahomet had professed to publish his Religion by the way of preaching and persuasion alone. But now, driven foully out of his native country, since unjust men had not only given no ear to his earnest Heaven's-message, the deep cry of his heart, but would not even let him live if he kept speaking it,—the wild Son of the Desert resolved to defend himself, like a man and Arab. If the Koreish will have it so, they shall have it. Tidings, felt to be of infinite moment to them and all men, they would not listen to these; would trample them down by sheer violence, steel and murder: well, let steel try it then! Ten years more this Mahomet had; all of fighting, of breathless impetuous toil and struggle; with what result we know.

Much has been said of Mahomet's propagating his Religion by the sword. It is no doubt far nobler what we have to boast of the Christian Religion, that it propagated itself peaceably in the way of preaching and conviction. Yet withal, we take this for an argument of the truth or ! a religion, there is a radical mistake

in it. The sword indeed: but where will you get your sword! Every new opinion, at its starting, is precisely in a *minority of one*. In one man's head alone, there it dwells as yet. One man alone
5 of the whole world believes it; there is one man against all men. That *he* take a sword, and try to propagate with that, will do little for him. You must first get your sword! On the whole, a thing will propagate itself as it can. We do
10 not find, of the Christian Religion either, that it always disdained the sword, when once it had got one. Charlemagne's conversion of the Saxons was not by preaching. I care little about the sword: I will allow a thing to struggle for itself
15 in this world, with any sword or tongue or implement it has, or can lay hold of. We will let it preach, and pamphleteer, and fight, and to the uttermost bestir itself, and do, beak and claws, whatsoever is in it; very sure that it will, in the
20 long-run, conquer nothing which does not deserve to be conquered. What is better than itself, it cannot put away, but only what is worse. In this great Duel, Nature herself is umpire, and can do no wrong: the thing which is deepest-rooted in
25 Nature, what we call *truest*, that thing and not the other will be found growing at last.

Here however, in reference to much that there is in Mahomet and his success, we are to remember what an umpire Nature is; what a greatness, com-
30 posure of depth and tolerance there is in her. You take wheat to cast into the Earth's bosom: your wheat may be mixed with chaff, chopped straw,

arn-sweepings, dust and all imaginable rubbish;
o matter: you cast it into the kind, just, Earth;
he grows the wheat,—the whole rubbish she
ilently absorbs, shrouds *it* in, says nothing of the
ubbish. The yellow wheat is growing there; the 5
ood Earth is silent about all the rest,—has
ilently turned all the rest to some benefit too,
nd makes no complaint about it! So everywhere
n Nature! She is true and not a lie; and yet so
great, and just, and motherly in her truth. She 10
requires of a thing only that it *be* genuine of
heart; she will protect it if so; will not, if not
so. There is a soul of truth in all the things she
ever gave harbour to. Alas, is not this the history
of all highest Truth that comes or ever came into 15
the world? The *body* of them all is imperfection,
an element of light *in* darkness: to us they have
to come embodied in mere Logic, in some merely
scientific Theorem of the Universe; which *cannot*
be complete; which cannot but be found, one day, 20
incomplete, erroneous, and so die and disappear.
The body of all Truth dies; and yet in all, I say,
there is a soul which never dies; which in new
and ever-nobler embodiment lives immortal as man
himself! It is the way with Nature. The genuine 25
essence of Truth never dies. That it be genuine, a
voice from the great Deep of Nature, there is the
point at Nature's judgment-seat. What *we* call
pure or impure, is not with her the final question.
Not how much chaff is in you; but whether you 30
have any wheat. Pure? I might say to many a
man: Yes, you are pure; pure enough; but you

are chaff,—insincere hypothesis, hearsay, formality; you never were in contact with the great heart of the Universe at all; you are properly neither pure nor impure; you *are* nothing, Nature
 5 has no business with you.

Mahomet's Creed we called a kind of Christianity; and really, if we look at the wild rapt earnestness with which it was believed and laid to heart, I should say a better kind than that of those
 10 miserable Syrian Sects, with their vain janglings about *Homoiousion* and *Homoousion*, the head full of worthless noise, the heart empty and dead! The truth of it is embedded in portentous error and falsehood; but the truth of it makes it be
 15 believed, not the falsehood: it succeeded by its truth. A bastard kind of Christianity, but a living kind; with a heart-life in it; not dead, chopping barren logic merely! Out of all that rubbish of Arab idolatries, argumentative theologies, tradi-
 20 tions, subtleties, rumours and hypotheses of Greeks and Jews, with their idle wiredrawings, this wild man of the Desert, with his wild sincere heart, earnest as death and life, with his great flashing natural eyesight, had seen into the kernel of the
 25 matter. Idolatry is nothing: these Wooden Idols of yours, 'ye rub them with oil and wax, and the flies stick on them,'—these are wood, I tell you! They can do nothing for you; they are an impotent blasphemous pretence; a horror and abomi-
 30 nation, if ye knew them. God alone is; God alone has power; He made us, He can kill us and keep us alive: '*Allah akbar*, God is great.' Unda

that His will is the best for you; that howsoever sore to flesh-and-blood, you will find it the wisest, best: you are bound to take it so; in this world and in the next, you have no other thing that you can do!

5

And now if the wild idolatrous men did believe this, and with their fiery hearts lay hold of it to do it, in what form soever it came to them, I say it was well worthy of being believed. In one form or the other, I say it is still the one thing worthy 10 of being believed by all men. Man does hereby become the high-priest of this Temple of a World. He is in harmony with the Decrees of the Author of this World; coöperating with them, not vainly withstanding them: I know, to this day, no better 15 definition of Duty than that same. All that is *right* includes itself in this of coöperating with the real Tendency of the World: you succeed by this (the World's Tendency will succeed), you are good, and in the right course there. *Homoiousion, Ho-* 20 *moousion*, vain logical jangle, then or before or at any time, may jangle itself out, and go whither and how it likes: this is the *thing* it all struggles to mean, if it would mean anything. If it do not succeed in meaning this, it means nothing. Not 25 that Abstractions, logical Propositions, be correctly worded or incorrectly; but that living concrete Sons of Adam do lay this to heart: that is the important point. Islam devoured all these vain jangling Sects; and I think had right to do so. 30 It was a Reality, direct from the great Heart of Nature once more. Arab idolatries, Syrian for-

mulas, whatsoever was not equally real, had to go up in flame,—mere dead *fuel*, in various senses, for this which was *fire*.

It was during these wild warfarings and struggles, especially after the Flight to Mecca, that Mahomet dictated at intervals his Sacred Book, which they name *Koran*, or *Reading*, ‘Thing to be read.’ This is the Work he and his disciples made so much of, asking all the world, Is not that a miracle? The Mahometans regard their Koran with a reverence which few Christians pay even to their Bible. It is admitted everywhere as the standard of all law and all practice; the thing to be gone upon in speculation and life: the message sent direct out of Heaven, which this Earth has to conform to, and walk by; the thing to be read. Their Judges decide by it; all Moslem are bound to study it, seek in it for the light of their life. They have mosques where it is all read daily; thirty relays of priests take it up in succession, get through the whole each day. There, for twelve-hundred years has the voice of this Book, at all moments, kept sounding through the ears and the hearts of so many men. We hear of Mahometan Doctors that had read it seventy-thousand times!

Very curious: if one sought for ‘discrepancies of national taste,’ here surely were the most eminent instance of that! We also can read the Koran; our Translation of it, by Sale, is known to be a very fair one. I must say, it is as toilsome reading as I ever undertook. A wearisome confused jumble,

de, incondite; endless iterations, long-winded-
s, entanglement; most crude, incondite;—in-
portable stupidity, in short! Nothing but a
se of duty could carry any European through
Koran. We read in it, as we might in the State-
per Office, unreadable masses of lumber, that
chaps we may get some glimpses of a remarkable
n. It is true we have it under disadvantages: the
abs see more method in it than we. Mahomet's
flowers found the Koran lying all in fractions, 10
it had been written-down at first promulgation;
ch of it, they say, on shoulder-blades of mut-
a, flung pell-mell into a chest: and they pub-
hed it, without any discoverable order as to time
otherwise;—merely trying, as would seem, and 15
is not very strictly, to put the longest chapters
st. The real beginning of it, in that way, lies
most at the end: for the earliest portions were
e shortest. Read in its historical sequence it
erhaps would not be so bad. Much of it, too, they 20
y, is rhythmic; a kind of wild chanting song, in
e original. This may be a great point; much
erhaps has been lost in the Translation here. Yet
ith every allowance, one feels it difficult to see
ow any mortal ever could consider this Koran as 25
Book written in Heaven, too good for the Earth;
as a well-written book, or indeed as a *book* at all;
and not a bewildered rhapsody; *written*, so far as
riting goes, as badly as almost any book ever
was! So much for national discrepancies, and the 30
standard of taste.

Yet I should say, it was not unintelligible how

the Arabs might so love it. When once you get this confused coil of a Koran fairly off your hands, and have it behind you at a distance, the essential type of it begins to disclose itself; and in this there is a merit quite other than the literary one. If a book come from the heart, it will contrive to reach other hearts; all art and authorcraft are of small amount to that. One would say the primary character of the Koran is this of its *genuineness*, of its being a *bona-fide* book. Prideaux, I know, and others have represented it as a mere bundle of juggleries; chapter after chapter got-up to excuse and varnish the author's successive sins, forward his ambitions and quackeries: but really it is time to dismiss all that. I do not assert Mahomet's continual sincerity: who is continually sincere? But I confess I can make nothing of the critic, in these times, who would accuse him of deceit *prepense*; of conscious deceit generally, or perhaps at all;—still more, of living in a mere element of conscious deceit, and writing this Koran as a forger and juggler would have done! Every candid eye, I think, will read the Koran far otherwise than so. It is the confused ferment of a great rude human soul; rude, untutored, that cannot even read, but fervent, earnest, struggling vehemently to utter itself in words. With a kind of breathless intensity he strives to utter himself; the thoughts crowd on him pell-mell: for very multitude of things to say, he can get nothing said. The meaning that is in him shapes itself into no form of composition is stated in no sequence, method or coherence;—

they are not *shaped* at all, these thoughts of his; flung-out unshaped, as they struggle and tumble there, in their chaotic inarticulate state. We said 'stupid': yet natural stupidity is by no means the character of Mahomet's Book; it is natural uncultivation rather. The man has not studied speaking; in the haste and pressure of continual fighting, has not time to mature himself into fit speech. The panting breathless haste and vehemence of a man struggling in the thick of battle for life and salvation; this is the mood he is in! A headlong haste; for very magnitude of meaning, he cannot get himself articulated into words. The successive utterances of a soul in that mood, coloured by the various vicissitudes of three-and-twenty years; now well uttered, now worse: this is the Koran. 5 10 15

For we are to consider Mahomet, through these three-and-twenty years, as the centre of a world wholly in conflict. Battles with the Koreish and Heathen, quarrels among his own people, backslidings of his own wild heart; all this kept him in a perpetual whirl, his soul knowing rest no more. In wakeful nights, as one may fancy, the wild soul of the man, tossing amid these vortices, would hail any light of a decision for them as a veritable light from Heaven; *any* making-up of his mind, so blessed, indispensable for him there, would seem the inspiration of a Gabriel. Forger and juggler? No, no! This great fiery heart, seething, simmering like a great furnace of thoughts, was not a juggler's. His life was a Fact to him; this God's Universe an aw- 30
and Reality. He has faults enough. The

man was an uncultured semi-barbarous Son of Nature, much of the Bedouin still clinging to him: we must take him for that. But for a wretched Simulacrum, a hungry Impostor without eyes or heart
 5 practising for a mess of pottage such blasphemous swindlery, forgery of celestial documents, continuing high-treason against his Maker and Self, we will not and cannot take him.

Sincerity, in all senses, seems to me the merit
 10 the Koran; what had rendered it precious to the wild Arab men. It is, after all, the first and last merit in a book; gives rise to merits of all kind — nay, at bottom, it alone can give rise to merits of any kind. Curiously, through these incondi-
 15 masses of tradition, vituperation, complaint, exaltation in the Koran, a vein of true direct insight of what we might almost call poetry, is fourstragglingly. The body of the Book is made-up mere tradition, and as it were vehement enthusiastic extempore preaching. He returns forever
 20 the old stories of the Prophets as they were current in the Arab memory: how Prophet after Prophet, the Prophet Abraham, the Prophet Hagar, the Prophet Moses, Christian and other real and
 25 fabulous Prophets, had come to this Tribe and that, warning men of their sin; and been received by them even as he Mahomet was, — which is great solace to him. These things he repeats to perhaps twenty times; again and ever again, with
 30 wearisome iteration; has never done repeating them. A brave Samuel Johnson, in his forlorn garret, might con-over the Biographies of Autho-

in that way! This is the great staple of the Koran. But curiously, through all this, comes ever and anon some glance as of the real thinker and seer. He has actually an eye for the world, this Mahomet: with a certain directness and rugged vigour, he brings home still, to our heart, the thing his own heart has been opened to. I make but little of his praises of Allah, which many praise; they are borrowed I suppose mainly from the Hebrew, at least they are far surpassed there. But the eye that flashes direct into the heart of things, and *sees* the truth of them; this is to me a highly interesting object. Great Nature's own gift; which she bestows on all; but which only one in the thousand does not cast sorrowfully away: it is what I call sincerity of vision; the test of a sincere heart. 5 10 15

Mahomet can work no miracles; he often answers impatiently: I can work no miracles. I? 'I am a Public Preacher;' appointed to preach this doctrine to all creatures. Yet the world, as we can see, had really from of old been all one great miracle to him. Look over the world, says he; is it not wonderful, the work of Allah; wholly 'a sign to you,' if your eyes were open! This Earth, God made it for you; 'appointed paths in it;' you can live in it, go to and fro on it. — The clouds in the dry country of Arabia, to Mahomet they are very wonderful: Great clouds, he says, born in the deep bosom of the Upper Immensity, where do they come from! They hang there, the great black monsters; pour-down their rain-deluges 'to revive a dead 20 25 30

'earth,' and grass springs, and 'tall leafy palm-trees with their date-clusters hanging round. Is 'not that a sign?' Your cattle too, — Allah made them; serviceable dumb creatures; they change
5 the grass into milk; you have your clothing from them, very strange creatures; they come ranking home at evening-time, 'and,' adds he, 'and are a credit to you!' Ships also, — he talks often about ships: Huge moving mountains, they spread-out
10 their cloth wings, go bounding through the water there, Heaven's wind driving them; anon they lie motionless, God has withdrawn the wind, they lie dead, and cannot stir! Miracles? cries he: What miracle would you have? Are not you yourselves
15 there? God made *you*, 'shaped you out of a little clay.' Ye were small once; a few years ago ye were not at all. Ye have beauty, strength, thoughts, 'ye have compassion on one another.' Old age comes-on you, and gray hairs; your strength fades
20 into feebleness; ye sink down, and again are not. 'Ye have compassion on one another:' this struck me much: Allah might have made you having no compassion on one another, — how had it been then! This is a great direct thought, a glance at first
25 hand into the very fact of things. Rude vestiges of poetic genius, of whatsoever is best and truest, are visible in this man. A strong untutored intellect; eyesight, heart: a strong wild man, — might have shaped himself into Poet, King, Priest, any
30 kind of Hero.

To his eyes it is forever clear that this world wholly is miraculous. He sees what, as we said

before, all great thinkers, the rude Scandinavians themselves, in one way or other, have concluded to see: That this so solid-looking material is, at bottom, in very deed, Nothing; is a real and tactual Manifestation of God's power and presence, — a shadow hung-out by Him on the screen of the void Infinite; nothing more. The Prophet maintains, he says, these great rock-mountains, shall dissipate themselves 'like clouds'; melt the Blue as clouds do, and not be! He figures the Earth, in the Arab fashion, Sale tells us, as an immense Plain or flat Plate of ground, the mountains are set on that to *steady* it. At the Last Day shall disappear 'like clouds'; the whole Earth go spinning, whirl itself off into wreck, and dust and vapour vanish in the Inane. Allah draws his hand from it, and it ceases to be the universal empire of Allah, presence everywhere, unspeakable Power, a Splendour, and a Terror to be named, as the true force, essence and reality, in all things whatsoever, was continually to this man. What a modern talks-of by the name, Forces of Nature, Laws of Nature; and does figure as a divine thing; not even as one thing alone, but as a set of things, undivine enough, — able, curious, good for propelling steam-ships! In our Sciences and Cyclopædias, we are apt to forget the *divineness*, in those laboratories of ours. We ought not to forget it! That once well forgotten, I know not what else were worth remembering. Most sciences, I think, were then a very dead thing; withered, contentious, empty; — a thistle in

late autumn. The best science, without this, is but as the dead *timber*; it is not the growing tree and forest, — which gives ever-new timber, among other things! Man cannot *know* either, unless he can
5 *worship* in some way. His knowledge is a pedantry, and dead thistle, otherwise.

Much has been said and written about the sensuality of Mahomet's Religion; more than was just. The indulgences, criminal to us, which he permitted;
10 were not of his appointment; he found them practised, unquestioned from immemorial time in Arabia; what he did was to curtail them, restrict them, not on one but on many sides. His Religion is not an easy one: with rigorous fasts, lavations, strict
15 complex formulas, prayers five times a day, and abstinence from wine, it did not 'succeed by being an easy religion.' As if indeed any religion, or cause holding of religion, could succeed by that! It is a calumny on men to say that they are roused
20 to heroic action by ease, hope of pleasure, recompense, — sugar-plums of any kind, in this world or the next! In the meanest mortal there lies something nobler. The poor swearing soldier, hired to be shot, has his 'honour of a soldier,' different from
25 drill-regulations and the shilling a day. It is not to taste sweet things, but to do noble and true things, and vindicate himself under God's Heaven as a god-made Man, that the poorest son of Adam dimly longs. Show him the way of doing that, the
30 dullest daydrudge kindles into a hero. They wrong man greatly who say he is to be seduced by ease. Difficulty, abnegation, martyrdom, death are the

Urements that act on the heart of man. Kindle the inner genial life of him, you have a flame that burns up all lower considerations. Not happiness, but something higher: one sees this even in the frivolous classes, with their 'point of honour' and the like. Not by flattering our appetites; no, by awakening the Heroic that slumbers in every heart, can any Religion gain followers. 5 X

Mahomet himself, after all that can be said about him, was not a sensual man. We shall err widely if we consider this man as a common voluptuary, intent mainly on base enjoyments, — nay on enjoyments of any kind. His household was of the frugal-est; his common diet barley-bread and water: sometimes for months there was not a fire once lighted on his hearth. They record with just pride that he would mend his own shoes, patch his own cloak. A poor, hard-toiling, ill-provided man; careless of what vulgar men toil for. Not a bad man, I should say; something better in him than *hunger* of any sort, — or these wild Arab men, fighting and jostling three-and-twenty years at his hand, in close contact with him always, would not have revered him so! They were wild men, bursting ever and anon into quarrel, into all kinds of fierce sincerity; without right worth and manhood, no man could have commanded them. They called him Prophet, you say? Why, he stood there face to face with them; bare, not enshrined in any mystery; visibly clouting his own cloak, cobbling his own shoes; fighting, counselling, ordering in the midst of them: they must have seen what kind of a man he *was*, let him be 20 25 30

called what you like! No emperor with his tiar
 was obeyed as this man in a cloak of his own clo
 ing. During three-and-twenty years of rough actu
 trial. I find something of a veritable Hero nec
 5 sary for that, of itself.

His last words are a prayer; broken ejaculation
 of a heart struggling-up, in trembling hope, toward
 its Maker. We cannot say that his religion made
 him *worse*; it made him better; good, not bad.
 10 Generous things are recorded of him: when he lo
 his Daughter, the thing he answers is, in his own
 dialect, every way sincere, and yet equivalent to that
 of Christians, 'The Lord giveth, and the Lord taketh
 away; blessed be the name of the Lord.' He an
 15 swered in like manner of Seid, his emancipated wel
 beloved Slave, the second of the believers. Seid
 had fallen in the War of Tabûc, the first of Ma
 homet's fightings with the Greeks. Mahomet said
 It was well; Seid had done his Master's work, Seid
 20 had now gone to his Master: it was all well with
 Seid. Yet Seid's daughter found him weeping over
 the body; — the old gray-haired man melting in
 tears! "What do I see?" said she. — "You see
 friend weeping over his friend." — He went out for
 25 the last time into the mosque, two days before his
 death; asked, If he had injured any man? Let
 his own back bear the stripes. If he owed any
 man? A voice answered, "Yes, me three drachms
 borrowed on such an occasion. Mahomet ordered
 30 them to be paid: "Better be in shame now," said
 he, "than at the Day of Judgment." — You re
 member Kadijah, and the "No, by Allah!" Tra

of that kind show us the genuine man, the brother of us all, brought visible through twelve centuries, — the veritable Son of our common Mother.

Withal I like Mahomet for his total freedom from cant. He is a rough self-helping son of the wilderness ; does not pretend to be what he is not. There is no ostentatious pride in him ; but neither does he go much upon humility : he is there as he can be, in cloak and shoes of his own clouting ; speaks plainly to all manner of Persian Kings, Greek Emperors, what it is they are bound to do ; knows well enough, about himself, ‘the respect due unto thee.’ In a life-and-death war with Bedouins, cruel things could not fail ; but neither are acts of mercy, of noble natural pity and generosity wanting. Mahomet makes no apology for the one, no boast of the other. They were each the free dictate of his heart ; each called-for, there and then. Not a mealy-mouthed man ! A candid ferocity, if the case call for it, is in him ; he does not mince matters ! The War of Tabûc is a thing he often speaks of : his men refused, many of them, to march on that occasion ; pleaded the heat of the weather, the harvest, and so forth ; he can never forget that. Your harvest ? It lasts for a day. What will become of your harvest through all Eternity ? Hot weather ? Yes, it was hot ; ‘but Hell will be hotter !’ Sometimes a rough sarcasm turns-up : He says to the unbelievers, Ye shall have the just measure of your deeds at that Great Day. They will be weighed-out to you ; ye shall not have short weight ! — Every-where he fixes the matter in his eye ; he *sees* it :

his heart, now and then, is as if struck dumb by the greatness of it. 'Assuredly,' he says: that word, in the Koran, is written-down sometimes as a sentence by itself: 'Assuredly.'

- 5 No *Dilettantism* in this Mahomet; it is a business of Reprobation and Salvation with him, of Time and Eternity: he is in deadly earnest about it! Dilettantism, hypothesis, speculation, a kind of amateur-search for Truth, toying and coquetting
10 with Truth: this is the sorest sin. The root of all other imaginable sins. It consists in the heart and soul of the man never having been *open* to Truth; — 'living in a vain show.' Such a man not only utters and produces falsehoods, but *is* himself a
15 falsehood. The rational moral principle, spark of the Divinity, is sunk deep in him, in quiet paralysis of life-death. The very falsehoods of Mahomet are truer than the truths of such a man. He is the insincere man: smooth-polished, respectable in some
20 times and places; inoffensive, says nothing harsh to anybody; most *cleanly*, — just as carbonic acid is, which is death and poison.

- We will not praise Mahomet's moral precepts as always of the superfinest sort; yet it can be said
25 that there is always a tendency to good in them; that they are the true dictates of a heart aiming towards what is just and true. The sublime forgiveness of Christianity, turning of the other cheek when the one has been smitten, is not here: you
30 are to revenge yourself, but it is to be in measure, not overmuch, or beyond justice. On the other hand, Islam, like any great Faith, and insight into

the essence of man, is a perfect equaliser of men : the soul of one believer outweighs all earthly kingdoms ; all men, according to Islam too, are equal. Mahomet insists not on the propriety of giving alms, but on the necessity of it : he marks-down by law 5 how much you are to give, and it is at your peril if you neglect. The tenth part of a man's annual income, whatever that may be, is the *property* of the poor, of those that are afflicted and need help. Good all this : the natural voice of humanity, of 10 pity and equity dwelling in the heart of this wild Son of Nature speaks so.

Mahomet's Paradise is sensual, his Hell sensual : true ; in the one and the other there is enough that shocks all spiritual feeling in us. But we are 15 to recollect that the Arabs already had it so ; that Mahomet, in whatever he changed of it, softened and diminished all this. The worst sensualities, too, are the work of doctors, followers of his, not his work. In the Koran there is really very little 20 said about the joys of Paradise ; they are intimated rather than insisted on. Nor is it forgotten that the highest joys even there shall be spiritual : the pure Presence of the Highest, this shall infinitely transcend all other joys. He says, ' Your salutation 25 shall be, Peace.' *Salam*, Have Peace ! — the thing that all rational souls long for, and seek, vainly here below, as the one blessing. ' Ye shall sit on 'seats, facing one another : all grudges shall be taken 'away out of your hearts.' All grudges ! Ye shall 30 love one another freely ; for each of you, in the eyes of his brothers, there will be Heaven enough !

In reference to this of the sensual Paradise and Mahomet's sensuality, the sorest chapter of all for us, there were many things to be said ; which it is not convenient to enter upon here. Two remarks
5 only I shall make, and therewith leave it to your candour. The first is furnished me by Goethe ; it is a casual hint of his which seems well worth taking note of. In one of his Delineations, in *Meister's Travels* it is, the hero comes-upon a Society of men
10 with very strange ways, one of which was this : " We require," says the Master, " that each of our people shall restrict himself in one direction," shall go right against his desire in one matter, and *make* himself do the thing he does not wish, " should we
15 allow him the greater latitude on all other sides." There seems to me a great justness in this. Enjoying things which are pleasant ; that is not the evil : it is the reducing of our moral self to slavery by them that is. Let a man assert withal that he is
20 king over his habitudes ; that he could and would shake them off, on cause shown : this is an excellent law. The Month Ramadhan for the Moslem, much in Mahomet's Religion, much in his own Life, bears in that direction ; if not by forethought, or clear
25 purpose of moral improvement on his part, then by a certain healthy manful instinct, which is as good.

But there is another thing to be said about the Mahometan Heaven and Hell. This namely, that, however gross and material they may be, they are
30 an emblem of an everlasting truth, not always so well remembered elsewhere. That gross sensual Paradise of his ; that horrible flaming Hell ; the

great enormous Day of Judgment he perpetually insists on: what is all this but a rude shadow, in the rude Bedouin imagination, of that grand spiritual Fact, and Beginning of Facts, which it is ill for us too if we do not all know and feel: the Infinite Nature of Duty? That man's actions here are of *infinite* moment to him, and never die or end at all; that man, with his little life, reaches upwards high as Heaven, downwards low as Hell, and in his threescore years of Time holds an Eternity fearfully and wonderfully hidden: all this had burnt itself, as in flame-characters, into the wild Arab soul. As in flame and lightning, it stands written there; awful, unspeakable, ever present to him. With bursting earnestness, with a fierce savage sincerity, halt, articulating, not able to articulate, he strives to speak it, bodies it forth in that Heaven and that Hell. Bodied forth in what way you will, it is the first of all truths. It is venerable under all embodiments. What is the chief end of man here below? Mahomet has answered this question, in a way that might put some of us to shame! He does not, like a Bentham, a Paley, take Right and Wrong, and calculate the profit and loss, ultimate pleasure of the one and of the other; and summing all up by addition and subtraction into a net result, ask you, Whether on the whole the Right does not preponderate considerably? No; it is not *better* to do the one than the other; the one is to the other as life is to death, — as Heaven is to Hell. The one must in nowise be done, the other in nowise left undone. You shall

not measure them ; they are incommensurable : the one is death eternal to a man, the other is life eternal. Benthamite Utility, virtue by Profit and Loss ; reducing this God's-world to a dead brute Steam-engine, the infinite celestial Soul of Man to a kind of Hay-balance for weighing hay and thistles on, pleasures and pains on : — If you ask me which gives, Mahomet or they, the beggarlier and false view of Man and his Destinies in this Universe, I will answer, It is not Mahomet ! —

On the whole, we will repeat that this Religion of Mahomet's is a kind of Christianity ; has a genuine element of what is spiritually highest looking through it, not to be hidden by all its imperfections. The Scandinavian God *Wish*, the god of all rude men, — this has been enlarged into a Heaven by Mahomet ; but a Heaven symbolical of sacred Duty, and to be earned by faith and well-doing, by valiant action, and a divine patience which is still more valiant. It is Scandinavian Paganism, and a truly celestial element superadded to that. Call it not false ; look not at the falsehood of it, look at the truth of it. For these twelve centuries, it has been the religion and life-guidance of the fifth part of the whole kindred of Mankind. Above all things, it has been a religion heartily *believed*. These Arabs believe their religion, and try to live by it ! No Christians, since the early ages, or only perhaps the English Puritans in modern times, have ever stood by their Faith as the Moslem do by theirs, — believing it wholly, fronting Time with it, and Eternity with it. This night the

urchman on the streets of Cairo when he cries,
 Who goes ? " will hear from the passenger, along
 with his answer, " There is no God but God." *Uah akbar, Islam*, sounds through the souls, and
 whole daily existence, of these dusky millions. 5
 zealous missionaries preach it abroad among
 Malays, black Papuans, brutal Idolaters ; — dis-
 sacing what is worse, nothing that is better or
 good.

To the Arab Nation it was as a birth from dark- 10
 ness into light ; Arabia first became alive by
 means of it. A poor shepherd people, roaming
 unnoticed in its deserts since the creation of the
 world : a Hero-Prophet was sent down to them
 with a word they could believe : see, the unnoticed 15
 becomes world-notable, the small has grown world-
 great ; within one century afterwards, Arabia is at
 Granada on this hand, at Delhi on that ; — glanc-
 ing in valour and splendour and the light of genius,
 Arabia shines through long ages over a great sec- 20
 tion of the world. Belief is great, life-giving.
 The history of a Nation becomes fruitful, soul-ele-
 vating, great, so soon as it believes. These Arabs,
 the man Mahomet, and that one century, — is it
 not as if a spark had fallen, one spark, on a world 25
 of what seemed black unnoticeable sand ; but lo,
 the sand proves explosive powder, blazes heaven-
 high from Delhi to Granada ! I said, the Great
 Man was always as lightning out of Heaven ; the
 rest of men waited for him like fuel, and then they 30
 would flame.

LECTURE III

THE HERO AS POET. DANTE; SHAKSPEARE

[Tuesday, 12th May 1840]

THE Hero as Divinity, the Hero as Prophet, are productions of old ages; not to be repeated in the new. They presuppose a certain rudeness of conception, which the progress of mere scientific knowledge puts an end to. There needs to be, as it were, a world vacant, or almost vacant of scientific forms, if men in their loving wonder are to fancy their fellow-man either a god or one speaking with the voice of a god. Divinity and Prophet are past.
10 We are now to see our Hero in the less ambitious, but also less questionable, character of Poet; a character which does not pass. The Poet is a heroic figure belonging to all ages; whom all ages possess, when once he is produced, whom the newest age as
15 the oldest may produce; — and will produce, always when Nature pleases. Let Nature send a Hero-soul; in no age is it other than possible that he may be shaped into a Poet.

Hero, Prophet, Poet, — many different names, in
20 different times and places, do we give to Great Men; according to varieties we note in them, as

ording to the sphere in which they have displayed
hemselves! We might give many more names,
on this same principle. I will remark again, how-
ever, as a fact not unimportant to be understood,
that the different *sphere* constitutes the grand ori- 5
gin of such distinction; that the Hero can be Poet,
Prophet, King, Priest or what you will, according
to the kind of world he finds himself born into. I
confess, I have no notion of a truly great man that
could not be *all* sorts of men. The Poet who could 10
merely sit on a chair, and compose stanzas, would
never make a stanza worth much. He could not
sing the Heroic warrior, unless he himself were at
least a Heroic warrior too. I fancy there is in him
the Politician, the Thinker, Legislator, Philosopher; 15
—in one or the other degree, he could have been,
he is all these. So too I cannot understand how a
Mirabeau, with that great glowing heart, with the
fire that was in it, with the bursting tears that
were in it, could not have written verses, tragedies, 20
poems, and touched all hearts in that way, had his
course of life and education led him thitherward.
The grand fundamental character is that of Great
Man; that the man be great. Napoleon has words
in him which are like Austerlitz Battles. Louis 25
Fourteenth's Marshals are a kind of poetical men
withal; the things Turenne says are full of sagacity
and geniality, like sayings of Samuel Johnson. The
great heart, the clear deep-seeing eye: there it lies;
no man whatever, in what province soever, can 30
prosper at all without these. Petrarch and Boc-
accio did diplomatic messages, it seems, quite well:

one can easily believe it; they had done things a little harder than these! Burns, a gifted song writer, might have made a still better Mirabeau Shakspeare, — one knows not what *he* could not
 5 have made, in the supreme degree.

True, there are aptitudes of Nature too. Nature does not make all great men, more than all other men, in the self-same mould. Varieties of aptitude doubtless; but infinitely more of circumstance; and
 10 far oftener it is the *latter* only that are looked to. But it is as with common men in the learning of trades. You take any man, as yet a vague capability of a man, who could be any kind of craftsman; and make him into a smith, a carpenter, a mason:
 15 he is then and thenceforth that and nothing else. And if, as Addison complains, you sometimes see a street-porter staggering under his load on spindle-shanks, and near at hand a tailor with the frame of a Samson handling a bit of cloth and small White-
 20 chapel needle, — it cannot be considered that aptitude of Nature alone has been consulted here either! — The Great Man also, to what shall he be bound apprentice? Given your Hero, is he to become Conqueror, King, Philosopher, Poet? It is
 25 an inexplicably complex controversial-calculation between the world and him! He will read the world and its laws: the world with its laws will be there to be read. What the world, on *this* matter, shall permit and bid is, as we said, the most important fact about the world. —

Poet and Prophet differ greatly in our ~~last~~

modern notions of them. In some old languages, again, the titles are synonymous; *Vates* means both Prophet and Poet: and indeed at all times, Prophet and Poet, well understood, have much kindred of meaning. Fundamentally indeed they are still the same; in this most important respect especially, That they have penetrated both of them into the sacred mystery of the Universe; what Goethe calls 'the open secret.' "Which is the great secret?" asks one. — "The *open* secret," — open to all, seen by almost none! That divine mystery, which lies everywhere in all Beings, 'the Divine Idea of the World, that which lies at the bottom of Appearance,' as Fichte styles it; of which all Appearance, from the starry sky to the grass of the field, but especially the Appearance of Man and his work, is but the *vesture*, the embodiment that renders it visible. This divine mystery *is* in all times and in all places; veritably is. In most times and places it is greatly overlooked; and the Universe, defin-
able always in one or the other dialect, as the realised Thought of God, is considered a trivial, inert, commonplace matter, — as if, says the Satirist, it were a dead thing, which some upholsterer had put together! It could do no good, at present, to *speak* much about this; but it is a pity for every one of us if we do not know it, live ever in the knowledge of it. Really a most mournful pity; — a failure to live at all, if we live otherwise!

But now, I say, whoever may forget this divine mystery, the *Vates*, whether Prophet or Poet, has penetrated into it; is a man sent hither to make it

- more impressively known to us. That always is his message; he is to reveal that to us,—that sacred mystery which he more than others lives ever present with. While others forget it, he
- 5 knows it;—I might say, he has been driven to know it; without consent asked of *him*, he finds himself living in it, bound to live in it. Once more, here is no Hearsay, but a direct Insight and Belief; this man too could not help being a sincere man!
- 10 Whosoever may live in the shows of things, it is for him a necessity of nature to live in the very fact of things. A man once more, in earnest with the Universe, though all others were but toying with it. He is a *Vates*, first of all, in virtue of being sincere. So far Poet and Prophet, participators
- 15 in the 'open secret,' are one.

- With respect to their distinction again: The *Vates* Prophet, we might say, has seized that sacred mystery rather on the moral side, as Good and Evil,
- 20 Duty and Prohibition; the *Vates* Poet on what the Germans call the æsthetic side, as Beautiful, and the like. The one we may call a revealer of what we are to do, the other of what we are to love. But indeed these two provinces run into one another,
- 25 and cannot be disjoined. The Prophet too has his eye on what we are to love: how else shall he know what it is we are to do? The highest Voice ever heard on this earth said withal, "Consider the lilies of the field; they toil not, neither do they spin:
- 30 yet Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these." A glance, that, into the deepest deep of Beauty. 'The lilies of the field,'—dressed

inner than earthly princes, springing-up there in the
 humble furrow-field; a beautiful *eye* looking-out on
 you, from the great inner Sea of Beauty! How
 could the rude Earth make these, if her Essence,
 rugged as she looks and is, were not inwardly 5
 Beauty? In this point of view, too, a saying of
 Goethe's, which has staggered several, may have
 meaning: 'The Beautiful,' he intimates, 'is higher
 than the Good; the Beautiful, includes in it the
 Good.' The *true* Beautiful; which however, I have 10
 said somewhere, 'differs from the *false* as Heaven
 does from Vauxhall!' So much for the distinction
 and identity of Poet and Prophet. —

In ancient and also in modern periods we find
 a few Poets who are accounted perfect; whom it 15
 were a kind of treason to find fault with. This is
 noteworthy; this is right: yet in strictness it is
 only an illusion. At bottom, clearly enough, there
 is no perfect Poet! A vein of Poetry exists in the
 hearts of all men; no man is made altogether of 20
 Poetry. We are all poets when we *read* a poem
 well. The 'imagination that shudders at the Hell
 of Dante,' is not that the same faculty, weaker in
 degree, as Dante's own? No one but Shakspeare
 can embody, out of *Saxo Grammaticus*, the story of 25
Hamlet as Shakspeare did: but every one models
 some kind of story out of it; every one embodies it
 better or worse. We need not spend time in defin-
 ing. Where there is no specific difference, as be-
 tween round and square, all definition must be more 30
 or less arbitrary. A man that has so much more
 of the poetic element developed in him as to have

become noticeable, will be called Poet by his neighbours. World-Poets too, those whom we are to take for perfect Poets, are settled by critics in the same way. One who rises so far above the general
 5 level of Poets will, to such and such critics, seem a Universal Poet; as he ought to do. And yet it is, and must be, an arbitrary distinction. All Poets, all men, have some touches of the Universal; no man is wholly made of that. Most Poets are
 10 very soon forgotten: but not the noblest Shakespeare or Homer of them can be remembered *forever*; — a day comes when he too is not!

Nevertheless, you will say, there must be a difference between true Poetry and true Speech not
 15 poetical: what is the difference? On this point many things have been written, especially by late German Critics, some of which are not very intelligible at first. They say, for example, that the Poet has an *infinitude* in him; communicates an *Unend-*
 20 *lichkeit*, a certain character of 'infinitude,' to whatsoever he delineates. This, though not very precise, yet on so vague a matter is worth remembering: if well meditated, some meaning will gradually be
 ✓ found in it. For my own part, I find considerable
 25 meaning in the old vulgar distinction of Poetry being *metrical*, having music in it, being a Song. Truly, if pressed to give a definition, one might say this as soon as anything else: If your delineation be authentically *musical*, musical not in word only, but
 30 in heart and substance, in all the thoughts and utterances of it, in the whole conception of it, then it will be poetical; if not, not. — Musical: how much

is in that! A *musical* thought is one spoken by a mind that has penetrated into the inmost heart of the thing; detected the inmost mystery of it, namely the *melody* that lies hidden in it; the inward harmony of coherence which is its soul, whereby it exists, and has a right to be, here in this world. All inmost things, we may say, are melodious; naturally utter themselves in Song. The meaning of Song goes deep. Who is there that, in logical words, can express the effect music has on us? A kind of inarticulate unfathomable speech, which leads us to the edge of the Infinite, and lets us for moments gaze into that!

Nay all speech, even the commonest speech, has something of song in it: not a parish in the world but has its parish-accent;—the rhythm or *tune* to which the people there *sing* what they have to say! Accent is a kind of chanting; all men have accent of their own,—though they only *notice* that of others. Observe too how all passionate language does of itself become musical,—with a finer music than the mere accent; the speech of a man even in zealous anger becomes a chant, a song. All deep things are Song. It seems somehow the very central essence of us, Song; as if all the rest were but wrappings and hulls! The primal element of us, of us, and of all things. The Greeks fabled of Sphere-Harmonies: it was the feeling they had of the inner structure of Nature; that the soul of all her voices and utterances was perfect music. Poetry, therefore, we will call *musical Thought*. The poet is he who *thinks* in that manner. At bottom,

it turns still on power of intellect; it is a man's sincerity and depth of vision that makes him a Poet. See deep enough, and you see musically; the heart of Nature *being* everywhere music, if you can only
 5 reach it.

The *Vates* Poet, with his melodious Apocalypses of Nature, seems to hold a poor rank among us, in comparison with the *Vates* Prophet; his function, and our esteem of him for his function, alike slight.

10 The Hero taken as Divinity; the Hero taken as Prophet; then next the Hero taken only as Poet: does it not look as if our estimate of the Great Man, epoch after epoch, were continually diminishing? We take him first for a god, then for one god-
 15 inspired; and now in the next stage of it, his most miraculous word gains from us only the recognition that he is a Poet, beautiful verse-maker, man of genius, or suchlike!—It looks so; but I persuade myself that intrinsically it is not so. If we
 20 consider well, it will perhaps appear that in man still there is the *same* altogether peculiar admiration for the Heroic Gift, by what name soever called, that there at any time was.

I should say, if we do not now reckon a Great
 25 Man literally divine, it is that our notions of God, of the supreme unattainable Fountain of Splendour, Wisdom and Heroism, are ever rising *higher*; not altogether that our reverence for these qualities, as manifested in our like, is getting lower. This
 30 is worth taking thought of. Sceptical Dilettantism, the curse of these ages, a curse which will not last forever, does indeed in this the highest province

of human things, as in all Provinces, make sad
 work; and our reverence for great men, all crippled,
 blinded, paralytic as it is, comes out in poor plight,
 hardly recognisable. Men worship the shows of
 great men; the most disbelieve that there is any
 reality of great men to worship. The dreariest,
 shallowest faith; believing which, one would literally
 despair of human things. Nevertheless look, for
 example, at Napoleon! A Corsican lieutenant of
 artillery; that is the show of *him*: yet is he not
 obeyed, *worshipped* after his sort, as all the Tiaraed
 and Diademed of the world put together could not
 do? High Duchesses, and ostlers of inns, gather
 round the Scottish rustic, Burns;—a strange feel-
 ing dwelling in each that they never heard a man
 like this; that, on the whole, this is the man! In
 the secret heart of these people it still dimly re-
 veals itself, though there is no accredited way of
 uttering it at present, that this rustic, with his
 black brows and flashing sun-eyes, and strange
 words moving laughter and tears, is of a dignity
 far beyond all others, incommensurable with all
 others. Do not we feel it so? But now, were
 Dilettantism, Scepticism, Triviality, and all that
 sorrowful brood, cast-out of us,—as, by God's
 blessing, they shall one day be; were faith in the
 shows of things entirely swept-out, replaced by
 clear faith in the *things*, so that a man acted on the
 impulse of that only, and counted the other non-
 extant; what a new livelier feeling towards this
 Burns were it!

Nay here in these ages, such as they are, have

we not two mere Poets, if not deified, yet we may say beatified? Shakspeare and Dante are Saints of Poetry; really, if we will think of it, *canonised*, so that it is impiety to meddle with them. The
5 unguided instinct of the world, working across all these perverse impediments, has arrived at such result. Dante and Shakspeare are a peculiar Two. They dwell apart, in a kind of royal solitude; none equal, none second to them: in the general feeling
10 of the world, a certain transcendentalism, a glory as of complete perfection, invests these two. They *are* canonised, though no Pope or Cardinals took hand in doing it! Such, in spite of every perverting influence, in the most unheroic times, is still
15 our indestructible reverence for heroism. — We will look a little at these Two, the Poet Dante and the Poet Shakspeare: what little it is permitted us to say here of the Hero as Poet will most fitly arrange itself in that fashion.

20 Many volumes have been written by way of commentary on Dante and his Book; yet, on the whole, with no great result. His Biography is, as it were, irrecoverably lost for us. An unimportant, wandering, sorrowstricken man, not much note was
25 taken of him while he lived; and the most of that has vanished, in the long space that now intervenes. It is five centuries since he ceased writing and living here. After all commentaries, the Book itself is mainly what we know of him. The Book;—
30 and one might add that Portrait commonly attributed to Giotto, which, looking on it, you

alp inclining to think genuine, whoever did it.
 o me it is a most touching face; perhaps of all
 aces that I know, the most so. Lonely there,
 ainted as on vacancy, with the simple laurel
 ound round it; the deathless sorrow and pain, 5
 he known victory which is also deathless; — sig-
 aificant of the whole history of Dante! I think it is
 the mournfulest face that ever was painted from
 reality; an altogether tragic, heart-affecting face.
 There is in it, as foundation of it, the softness, 10
 tenderness, gentle affection as of a child; but all
 this is as if congealed into sharp contradiction, into
 abnegation, isolation, proud hopeless pain. A soft
 ethereal soul looking-out so stern, implacable, grim-
 trenchant, as from imprisonment of thick-ribbed ice! 15
 Withal it is a silent pain too, a silent scornful
 one: the lip is curled in a kind of godlike disdain
 of the thing that is eating-out his heart, — as if it
 were withal a mean insignificant thing, as if he
 whom it had power to torture and strangle were 20
 greater than it. The face of one wholly in protest,
 and lifelong unsundering battle, against the
 world. Affection all converted into indignation:
 an implacable indignation; slow, equable, silent,
 like that of a god! The eye too, it looks-out as 25
 in a kind of *surprise*, a kind of inquiry, Why the
 world was of such a sort? This is Dante: so he
 looks, this 'voice of ten silent centuries,' and sings
 as 'his mystic unfathomable song.'

The little that we know of Dante's Life corre- 30
 ponds well enough with this Portrait and this
 look. He was born at Florence, in the upper class

- of society, in the year 1265. His education was the best then going; much school-divinity, Aristotelean logic, some Latin classics, — no inconsiderable insight into certain provinces of things: and
- 5 Dante, with his earnest intelligent nature, we need not doubt, learned better than most all that was learnable. He has a clear cultivated understanding, and of great subtlety; this best fruit of education he had contrived to realise from these scholastics.
- 10 He knows accurately and well what lies close to him; but, in such a time, without printed books or free intercourse, he could not know well what was distant: the small clear light, most luminous for what is near, breaks itself into singular *chiaro-*
- 15 *scuro* striking on what is far off. This was Dante's learning from the schools. In life, he had gone through the usual destinies; been twice out campaigning as a soldier for the Florentine State, been on embassy; had in his thirty-fifth year, by natural
- 20 gradation of talent and service, become one of the Chief Magistrates of Florence. He had met in boyhood a certain Beatrice Portinari, a beautiful little girl of his own age and rank, and grown-up thenceforth in partial sight of her, in some distant
- 25 intercourse with her. All readers know his graceful affecting account of this; and then of their being parted; of her being wedded to another, and of her death soon after. She makes a great figure in Dante's Poem; seems to have made a great
- 30 figure in his life. Of all beings it might seem as if she, held apart from him, far apart at last in the dim Eternity, were the only one he had ever with

his whole strength of affection loved. She died: Dante himself was wedded; but it seems not happily, far from happily. I fancy, the rigorous earnest man, with his keen excitabilities, was not altogether easy to make happy.

5

We will not complain of Dante's miseries: had all gone right with him as he wished it, he might have been Prior, Podestà, or whatsoever they call it, of Florence, well accepted among neighbours, — and the world had wanted one of the most notable words ever spoken or sung. Florence would have had another prosperous Lord Mayor; and the ten dumb centuries continued voiceless, and the ten other listening centuries (for there will be ten of them and more) had no *Divina Commedia* to hear! We will complain of nothing. A nobler destiny was appointed for this Dante; and he, struggling like a man led towards death and crucifixion, could not help fulfilling it. Give *him* the choice of his happiness! He knew not, more than we do, what was really happy, what was really miserable.

15

20

In Dante's Priorship, the Guelf-Ghibelline, Bianchi-Neri, or some other confused disturbances rose to such a height, that Dante, whose party had seemed the stronger, was with his friends cast unexpectedly forth into banishment; doomed thenceforth to a life of woe and wandering. His property was all confiscated and more; he had the fiercest feeling that it was entirely unjust, nefarious in the sight of God and man. He tried what was in him to get reinstated; tried even by warlike surprisal, with arms in his hand: but it would not do; bad

25

30

only had become worse. There is a record, I believe, still extant in the Florence Archives, dooming this Dante, wheresoever caught, to be burnt alive. Burnt alive; so it stands, they say: a very
5 curious civic document. Another curious document, some considerable number of years later, is a Letter of Dante's to the Florentine Magistrates, written in answer to a milder proposal of theirs, that he should return on condition of apologising
10 and paying a fine. He answers, with fixed stern pride: "If I cannot return without calling myself guilty, I will never return, *nunquam revertar*."

For Dante there was now no home in this world. He wandered from patron to patron, from place to
15 place; proving, in his own bitter words, 'How hard is the path, *Come è duro calle*.' The wretched are not cheerful company. Dante, poor and banished, with his proud earnest nature, with his moody humours, was not a man to conciliate men. Petrarch
20 reports of him that being at Can della Scala's court, and blamed one day for his gloom and taciturnity, he answered in no courtier-like way. Della Scala stood among his courtiers, with mimes and buffoons (*nebulones ac histriones*) making him heartily merry;
25 when turning to Dante, he said: "Is it not strange, now, that this poor fool should make himself so entertaining; while you, a wise man, sit there day after day, and have nothing to amuse us with at all?" Dante answered bitterly: "No, not strange;
30 your Highness is to recollect the Proverb, *Like to Like*;"—given the amuser, the amusee must also be given! Such a man, with his proud silent ways,

and sorrows, was not made to
by degrees, it came to be evi-
he had no longer any resting-place,
it. in this earth. The earthly
him forth, to wander, wander; no 5
have him now; for his sore miseries
are here.

naturally would the Eternal World
if on him; that awful reality over
all this Time-world, with its Florences 10
vents, only flutters as an unreal shadow.
thou shalt never see: but Hell and Pur-
d Heaven thou shalt surely see! What
see, Can della Scala, and the World and
together? ETERNITY: thither, of a truth, 15
sewhither, art thou and all things bound!
great soul of Dante, homeless on earth, made
come more and more in that awful other world.
tually his thoughts brooded on that, as on the
fact important for him. Bodied or bodiless, it 20
one fact important for all men:—but to
ate, in that age, it was bodied in fixed certainty
scientific shape; he no more doubted of that
dolye Pool, that it all lay there with its gloomy
les, with its *alti guai*, and that he himself should 25
it, than we doubt that we should see Constan-
ple if we went thither. Dante's heart, long filled
with this, brooding over it in speechless thought
and awe, bursts forth at length into 'mystic unfath-
omable song'; and this his *Divine Comedy*, the most 30
remarkable of all modern Books, is the result.

It must have been a great solacement to Dante,

and was, as we can see, a proud thought for him at times, That he, here in exile, could do this work; that no Florence, nor no man or men, could hinder him from doing it, or even much help him in doing
5 it. He knew too, partly, that it was great; the greatest a man could do. 'If thou follow thy star, *Se tu segui tua stella,*'—so could the Hero, in his forsakenness, in his extreme need, still say to himself: "Follow thou thy star, thou shalt not fail of
10 a glorious haven!" The labour of writing, we find, and indeed could know otherwise, was great and painful for him; he says, This Book, 'which has made me lean for many years.' Ah yes, it was won, all of it, with pain and sore toil,—not in
15 sport, but in grim earnest. His Book, as indeed most good Books are, has been written, in many senses, with his heart's blood. It is his whole history, this Book. He died after finishing it; not yet very old, at the age of fifty-six;—broken-
20 hearted rather, as is said. He lies buried in his death-city Ravenna: *Hic claudor Dantes patriis extorris ab oris*. The Florentines begged back his body, in a century after; the Ravenna people would not give it. "Here am I Dante laid, shut
25 out from my native shores."

I said, Dante's Poem was a Song: it is Tieck who calls it 'a mystic unfathomable Song'; and such is literally the character of it. Coleridge remarks very pertinently somewhere, that wherever
30 you find a sentence musically worded, of true rhythm and melody in the words, there is something deep and good in the meaning too. For body

and soul, word and idea, go strangely together here as everywhere. Song: we said before, it was the Heroic of Speech! All *old* Poems, Homer's and the rest, are authentically Songs. I would say, in strictness, that all right Poems are; that whatsoever is not *sung* is properly no Poem, but a piece of Prose cramped into jingling lines,—to the great injury of the grammar, to the great grief of the reader, for most part! What we want to get at is the *thought* the man had, if he had any: why should he twist it into jingle, if he *could* speak it out plainly? It is only when the heart of him is apt into true passion of melody, and the very tones of him, according to Coleridge's remark, become musical by the greatness, depth and music of his thoughts, that we can give him right to rhyme and sing; that we call him a Poet, and listen to him as the Heroic of Speakers,—whose speech *is* Song. Pretenders to this are many; and to an earnest reader, I doubt, it is for most part a very melancholy, not to say an insupportable business, that of reading rhyme! Rhyme that had no inward necessity to be rhymed;—it ought to have told us plainly, without any jingle, what it was aiming at. I would advise all men who *can* speak their thought, not to sing it; to understand that, in a serious time, among serious men, there is no vocation in them for singing it. Precisely as we love the true song, and are charmed by it as by something divine, so shall we hate the false song, and account it a mere wooden noise, a thing hollow, superfluous, altogether an insincere and offensive thing.

I give Dante my highest praise when I say of his *Divine Comedy* that it is, in all senses, genuinely a Song. In the very sound of it there is a *canto fermo*; it proceeds as by a chant. The language, 5 his simple *terza rima*, doubtless helped him in this. One reads along naturally with a sort of *lilt*. But I add, that it could not be otherwise; for the essence and material of the work are themselves rhythmic. Its depth, and rapt passion and sincerity, makes it 10 musical;—go *deep* enough, there is music everywhere. A true inward symmetry, what one calls an architectural harmony, reigns in it, proportionates it all: architectural; which also partakes of the character of music. The three kingdoms, *In-* 15 *ferno*, *Purgatorio*, *Paradiso*, look-out on one another like compartments of a great edifice; a great supernatural world-cathedral, piled-up there, stern, solemn, awful; Dante's World of Souls! It is, at bottom, the *sincerest* of all Poems; sincerity, here 20 too, we find to be the measure of worth. It came deep out of the author's heart of hearts; and it goes deep, and through long generations, into ours. The people of Verona, when they saw him on the streets, used to say, "*Eccovi l' uom ch' è stato all' Inferno*, 25 See, there is the man that was in Hell!" Ah yes, he had been in Hell;—in Hell enough, in long severe sorrow and struggle; as the like of him is pretty sure to have been. *Commedias* that come-out *divine* are not accomplished otherwise. Thought, 30 true labour of any kind, highest virtue itself, is it not the daughter of Pain? Born as out of the black whirlwind;—true e t, as of a

aptive struggling to free himself: that is Thought. In all ways we are 'to become perfect through *suffering*.' — But, as I say, no work known to me is so elaborated as this of Dante's. It has all been as if molten, in the hottest furnace of his soul. It had made him 'lean' for many years. Not the general whole only; every compartment of it is worked-out, with intense earnestness, into truth, into clear visuality. Each answers to the other; each fits in its place, like a marble stone accurately hewn and polished. It is the soul of Dante, and in this the soul of the middle ages, rendered forever rhythmically visible there. No light task; a right intense one: but a task which is *done*.

Perhaps one would say, *intensity*, with the much that depends on it, is the prevailing character of Dante's genius. Dante does not come before us as a large catholic mind; rather as a narrow, and even sectarian mind: it is partly the fruit of his age and position, but partly too of his own nature. His greatness has, in all senses, concentrated itself into fiery emphasis and depth. He is world-great not because he is world-wide, but because he is world-deep. Through all objects he pierces as it were down into the heart of Being. I know nothing so intense as Dante. Consider, for example, to begin with the outermost development of his intensity, consider how he paints. He has a great power of vision; seizes the very type of a thing; presents that and nothing more. You remember that first view he gets of the Hall of Dite: *red* pinnacle, red-hot cone of iron glowing through the dim immensity

- of gloom; — so vivid, so distinct, visible at once and forever! It is as an emblem of the whole genius of Dante. There is a brevity, an abrupt precision in him: Tacitus is not briefer, more condensed; and
5 then in Dante it seems a natural condensation, spontaneous to the man. One smiting word; and then there is silence, nothing more said. His silence is more eloquent than words. It is strange with what a sharp decisive grace he snatches the
10 true likeness of a matter: cuts into the matter as with a pen of fire. Plutus, the blustering giant, collapses at Virgil's rebuke; it is 'as the sails sink, the mast being suddenly broken.' Or that poor Brunetto Latini, with the *cotto aspetto*, 'face baked,'
15 parched brown and lean; and the 'fiery snow' that falls on them there, a 'fiery snow without wind,' slow, deliberate, never-ending! Or the lids of those Tombs; square sarcophaguses, in that silent dim-burning Hall, each with its Soul in torment; the
20 lids laid open there; they are to be shut at the Day of Judgment, through Eternity. And how Farinata rises; and how Cavalcante falls — at hearing of his Son, and the past tense '*fue*'! The very movements in Dante have something brief; swift, decisive, almost military. It is of the inmost essence
25 of his genius this sort of painting. The fiery, swift Italian nature of the man, so silent, passionate, with its quick abrupt movements, its silent 'pale rages,' speaks itself in these things.
- 30 For though this of painting is one of the outermost developments of a man, it comes like all else from the essential faculty of him; it is physiog-

mical of the whole man. Find a man whose
 words paint you a likeness, you have found a man
 worth something; mark his manner of doing it, as
 every characteristic of him. In the first place, he
 could not have discerned the object at all, or seen 5
 the vital type of it, unless he had, what we may
 call, *sympathised* with it, — had sympathy in him
 to bestow on objects. He must have been *sincere*
 about it too; sincere and sympathetic: a man with-
 out worth cannot give you the likeness of any ob- 10
 ject; he dwells in vague outwardness, fallacy and
 trivial hearsay, about all objects. And indeed may
 we not say that intellect altogether expresses itself
 in this power of discerning what an object is?
 Whatsoever of faculty a man's mind may have will 15
 come out here. Is it even of business, a matter to
 be done? The gifted man is he who *sees* the essen-
 tial point, and leaves all the rest aside as surplusage:
 it is his faculty too, the man of business's faculty,
 that he discern the true *likeness*, not the false super- 20
 ficial one, of the thing he has got to work in. And
 how much of *morality* is in the kind of insight we
 get of anything; 'the eye seeing in all things what
 it brought with it the faculty of seeing'! To the
 mean eye all things are trivial, as certainly as to the 25
 jaundiced they are yellow. Raphael, the Painters
 tell us, is the best of all Portrait-painters withal.
 No most gifted eye can exhaust the significance of
 any object. In the commonest human face there
 lies more than Raphael will take-away with him. 30
 Dante's painting is not graphic only, brief, true,
 'widness as of fire in dark night; taken

on the wider scale, it is everyway noble, and the outcome of a great soul. Francesca and her Lover, what qualities in that! A thing woven as out of rainbows, on a ground of eternal black. A small
5 flute-voice of infinite wail speaks there, into our very heart of hearts. A touch of womanhood in it too: *della bella persona, che mi fu tolta*; and how, even in the Pit of woe, it is a solace that *he* will never part from her! Saddest tragedy in these
10 *alti quai*. And the racking winds, in that *aer bruno*, whirl them away again, to wail forever! — Strange to think: Dante was the friend of this poor Francesca's father; Francesca herself may have sat upon the Poet's knee, as a bright innocent little child.
15 Infinite pity, yet also infinite rigour of law: it is so Nature is made; it is so Dante discerned that she was made. What a paltry notion is that of his *Divine Comedy's* being a poor splenetic impotent terrestrial libel; putting those into Hell whom he
20 could not be avenged-upon on earth! I suppose if ever pity, tender as a mother's, was in the heart of any man, it was in Dante's. But a man who does not know rigour cannot pity either. His very pity will be cowardly, egoistic, — sentimentality, or little
25 better. I know not in the world an affection equal to that of Dante. It is a tenderness, a trembling, longing, pitying love: like the wail of Æolian harps, soft, soft; like a child's young heart; — and then that stern, sore-saddened heart! These longings of his
30 towards his Beatrice; their meeting together in the *Paradiso*; his gazing in her pure transfigured eyes, her that had been purified by death so long, sepa-

rated from him so far: — one likens it to the song of angels; it is among the purest utterances of affection, perhaps the very purest, that ever came out of a human soul.

For the *intense* Dante is intense in all things; he 5
has got into the essence of all. His intellectual insight as painter, on occasion too as reasoner, is but the result of all other sorts of intensity. Morally great, above all, we must call him; it is the beginning of all. His scorn, his grief are as transcendent as his 10
love; — as indeed, what are they but the *inverse* or *converse* of his love? ‘*A Dio spiacenti ed a’ nemici sui*, Hateful to God and to the enemies of God:’ lofty scorn, unappeasable silent reprobation and aversion; ‘*Non ragionam di lor*, We will not speak 15
of *them*, look only and pass.’ Or think of this; ‘They have not the *hope* to die, *Non han speranza di morte*.’ One day, it had risen sternly benign on the scathed heart of Dante, that he, wretched, never-resting, worn as he was, would full surely *die*; ‘that 20
Destiny itself could not doom him not to die.’ Such words are in this man. For rigour, earnestness and depth, he is not to be paralleled in the modern world; to seek his parallel we must go into the Hebrew Bible, and live with the antique Prophets 25
there.

I do not agree with much modern criticism, in greatly preferring the *Inferno* to the two other parts of the Divine *Commedia*. Such preference belongs, I imagine, to our general Byronism of 30
taste, and is like to be a transient feeling. The *Purgatorio* and *Paradiso*, especially the former, one

*

- (would almost say, is even more excellent than it. It is a noble thing that *Purgatorio*, 'Mountain of Purification'; an emblem of the noblest conception of that age. If Sin is so fatal, and Hell is and must
5 be so rigorous, awful, yet in Repentance too is man purified; Repentance is the grand Christian act. It is beautiful how Dante works it out. The *tremolar dell' onde*, that 'trembling' of the ocean-waves, under the first pure gleam of morning, dawning
10 afar on the wandering Two, is as the type of an altered mood. Hope has now dawned; never-dying Hope, if in company still with heavy sorrow. The obscure sojourn of dæmons and reprobate is underfoot; a soft breathing of penitence mounts higher
15 and higher, to the Throne of Mercy itself. "Pray for me," the denizens of that Mount of Pain all say to him. "Tell my Giovanna to pray for me," my daughter Giovanna; "I think her mother loves me no more!" They toil painfully up by that winding
20 steep, 'bent-down like corbels of a building,' some of them, — crushed-together so 'for the sin of pride'; yet nevertheless in years, in ages and æons, they shall have reached the top, which is Heaven's gate, and by Mercy shall have been admitted in. The
25 joy too of all, when one has prevailed; the whole Mountain shakes with joy, and a psalm of praise rises, when one soul has perfected repentance and got its sin and misery left behind! I call all this a noble embodiment of a true noble thought.
- 30 But indeed the Three compartments mutually support one another, are indispensable to one another. The *Paradiso*, a kind of inarticulate music to me,

is the redeeming side of the *Inferno*; the *Inferno* without it were untrue. All three make-up the true Unseen World, as figured in the Christianity of the Middle Ages; a thing forever memorable, forever true in the essence of it, to all men. It was perhaps delineated in no human soul with such depth of veracity as in this of Dante's; a man *sent* to sing it, to keep it long memorable. Very notable with what brief simplicity he passes out of the every-day reality, into the Invisible one; and in the second or third stanza, we find ourselves in the World of Spirits; and dwell there, as among things palpable, indubitable! To Dante they *were* so; the real world, as it is called, and its facts, was but the threshold to an infinitely higher Fact of a World. At bottom, the one was as *preternatural* as the other. Has not each man a soul? He will not only be a spirit, but is one. To the earnest Dante it is all one visible Fact; he believes it, sees it; is the Poet of it in virtue of that. Sincerity, I say again, is the saving merit, now as always.

Dante's Hell, Purgatory, Paradise, are a symbol withal, an emblematic representation of his Belief about this Universe: — some Critic in a future age, like those Scandinavian ones the other day, who has ceased altogether to think as Dante did, may find this too all an 'Allegory,' perhaps an idle Allegory! It is a sublime embodiment, or sublimest, of the soul of Christianity. It expresses, as in huge worldwide architectual emblems, how the Christian Dante felt Good and Evil to be the ~~lar~~ elements of this Creation, on which it all

turns; that these two differ not by *preferability* of one to the other, but by incompatibility absolute and infinite; that the one is excellent and high as light and Heaven, the other hideous, black as
5 Gehenna and the Pit of Hell! Everlasting Justice, yet with Penitence, with everlasting Pity,—all Christianity, as Dante and the Middle Ages had it, is emblemed here. Emblemed: and yet, as I urged the other day, with what entire truth of purpose;
10 how unconscious of any embleming! Hell, Purgatory, Paradise: these things were not fashioned as emblems; was there, in our Modern European Mind, any thought at all of their being emblems! Were they not indubitable awful facts; the whole heart
15 of man taking them for practically true, all Nature everywhere confirming them? So is it always in these things. Men do not believe an Allegory. The future Critic, whatever his new thought may be, who considers this of Dante to have been all
20 got-up as an Allegory, will commit one sore mistake!—Paganism we recognised as a veracious expression of the earnest awe-struck feeling of man towards the Universe; veracious, true once, and still not without worth for us. But mark here the
25 difference of Paganism and Christianity; one great difference. Paganism emblemed chiefly the Operations of Nature; the destinies, efforts, combinations, vicissitudes of things and men in this world; Christianity emblemed the Law of Human Duty,
30 the Moral Law of Man. One was for the sensuous nature: a rude helpless utterance of the *first* Thought of men,—the chief recognised virtue Cour-

age, Superiority to Fear. The other was not for the sensuous nature, but for the moral. What a progress is here, if in that one respect only!—

And so in this Dante, as we said, had ten silent centuries, in a very strange way, found a voice. 5
The *Divina Commedia* is of Dante's writing; yet in truth it belongs to ten Christian centuries, only the finishing of it is Dante's. So always. The craftsman there, the smith with that metal of his, with these tools, with these cunning methods,— 10
how little of all he does is properly *his* work! All past inventive men work there with him;—as indeed with all of us, in all things. Dante is the spokesman of the Middle Ages; the Thought they lived by stands here, in everlasting music. These 15
sublime ideas of his, terrible and beautiful, are the fruit of the Christian Meditation of all the good men who had gone before him. Precious they; but also is not he precious? Much, had not he spoken, would have been dumb; not dead, yet 20
living voiceless.

On the whole, is it not an utterance, this mystic Song, at once of one of the greatest human souls, and of the highest thing that Europe had hitherto realised for itself? Christianity, as Dante sings 25
it, is another than Paganism in the rude Norse mind; another than 'Bastard Christianity' half-articulatedly spoken in the Arab Desert seven-hundred years before!—The noblest *idea* made *real* hitherto among men, is sung, and emblemed-forth 30
abidingly, by one of the noblest men. In the one

sense and in the other, are we not right glad to possess it? As I calculate, it may last yet for long thousands of years. For the thing that is uttered from the inmost parts of a man's soul, differs altogether from what is uttered by the outer part. The outer is of the day, under the empire of mode; the outer passes away, in swift endless changes; the inmost is the same yesterday, today and forever. True souls, in all generations of the world, who look on this Dante, will find a brotherhood in him; the deep sincerity of his thoughts, his woes and hopes, will speak likewise to their sincerity; they will feel that this Dante too was a brother. Napoleon in Saint-Helena is charmed with the genial veracity of old Homer. The oldest Hebrew Prophet, under a vesture the most diverse from ours, does yet, because he speaks from the heart of man, speak to all men's hearts. It is the one sole secret of continuing long memorable. Dante, for depth of sincerity, is like an antique Prophet too: his words, like theirs, come from his very heart. One need not wonder if it were predicted that his Poem might be the most enduring thing our Europe has yet made: for nothing so endures as a truly spoken word. All cathedrals, pontificalities, brass and stone, and outer arrangement never so lasting, are brief in comparison to an unfathomable heart-song like this: one feels as if it might survive, still of importance to men, when these had all sunk into new irreconisable combinations, and had ceased individually to be. Europe has made much: great cities, great empires, encyclopedias, creeds, bodies

nion and practice : but it has made little of
ss of Dante's Thought. Homer yet *is*, veri-
present face to face with every open soul of
id Greece, where is *it*? Desolate for thou-
of years ; away, vanished ; a bewildered heap 5
ies and rubbish, the life and existence of it
ne. Like a dream ; like the dust of King
emnon ! Greece was ; Greece, except in the
it spoke, is not.

uses of this Dante ? We will not say much 10
his 'uses.' A human soul who has once got
hat primal element of *Song*, and sung-forth
omewhat therefrom, has worked in the *depths*
existence ; feeding through long times the life-
f all excellent human things whatsoever, — 15
vay that 'utilities' will not succeed well in
ating ! We will not estimate the Sun by the
ty of gas-light it saves us ; Dante shall be
able, or of no value. One remark I may
the contrast in this respect between the 20
Poet and the Hero-Prophet. In a hundred
Mahomet, as we saw, had his Arabians at
da and at Delhi ; Dante's Italians seem to
very much where they were. Shall we say,
Dante's effect on the world was small in com- 25
n ? Not so : his arena is far more restricted ;
so it is far nobler, clearer ; — perhaps not less
ore important. Mahomet speaks to great
s of men, in the coarse dialect adapted to
a dialect filled with inconsistencies, crudi- 30
ollies : on the great masses alone can he act,
ere with good and with evil strangely blended.

Dante speaks to the noble, the pure and great, in all times and places. Neither does he grow obse-
solete, as the other does. Dante burns as a pure
star, fixed there in the firmament, at which the
5 great and the high of all ages kindle themselves:
he is the possession of all the chosen of the world
for uncounted time. Dante, one calculates, may
long survive Mahomet. In this way the balance
may be made straight again.

10 But, at any rate, it is not by what is called their
effect on the world by what *we* can judge of their
effect there, that a man and his work are measured.
Effect? Influence? Utility? Let a man *do* his
work; the fruit of it is the care of Another than
15 he. It will grow its own fruit; and whether em-
bodied in Caliph Thrones and Arabian Conquests,
so that it 'fills all Morning and Evening New-
papers,' and all Histories, which are a kind of dis-
tilled Newspapers; or not embodied so at all;—
20 what matters that? That is not the real fruit of
it! The Arabian Caliph, in so far only as he did
something, was something. If the great Cause of
Man, and Man's work in God's Earth, got no
furtherance from the Arabian Caliph, then no
25 matter how many scimetars he drew, how many
gold piasters pocketed, and what uproar and blar-
ning he made in this world, — *he* was but a loud-
sounding inanity and futility; at bottom, he *was*
not at all. Let us honour the great empire of Si-
30 lence, once more! The boundless treasury which
we do *not* jingle in our pockets, or count up and
present before men! It is perhaps, of all things,

usefulest for each of us to do, in these loud
38. —

As Dante, the Italian man, was sent into our
old to embody musically the Religion of the
Idle Ages, the Religion of our Modern Europe, 5
Inner Life; so Shakspeare, we may say, em-
bodies for us the Outer Life of our Europe as
eloped then, its chivalries, courtesies, humours,
otions, what practical way of thinking, acting,
king at the world, men then had. As in Homer 10
may still construe Old Greece; so in Shak-
are and Dante, after thousands of years, what
modern Europe was, in Faith and in Practice,
l still be legible. Dante has given us the Faith
soul; Shakspeare, in a not less noble way, has 15
en us the Practice or body. This latter also we
re to have; a man was sent for it, the man
akspeare. Just when that chivalry way of life
l reached its last finish, and was on the point
breaking down into slow or swift dissolution, 20
we now see it everywhere, this other sovereign
et, with his seeing eye, with his perennial sing-
; voice, was sent to take note of it, to give long-
luring record of it. Two fit men: Dante, deep,
ce as the central fire of the world; Shakspeare, 25
de, placid, far-seeing, as the Sun, the upper light
the world. Italy produced the one world-voice;
; English had the honour of producing the other.
Curious enough how, as it were by mere acci-
nt, this man came to us. I think always, so great, 30
uety, complete and self-sufficing is this Shakspeare,

had the Warwickshire Squire not prosecuted him for deer-stealing, we had perhaps never heard of him as a Poet! The woods and skies, the rustic Life of Man in Stratford there, had been enough for this man! But indeed that strange outbudding of our whole English Existence, which we call the Elizabethan Era, did not it too come as of its own accord? The 'Tree Igdrasil' buds and withers by its own laws, — too deep for our scanning. Yet it does bud and wither, and every bough and leaf of it is there, by fixed eternal laws; not a Sir Thomas Lucy but comes at the hour fit for him. Curious, I say, and not sufficiently considered: how everything does coöperate with all; not a leaf rotting on the highway but is indissoluble portion of solar and stellar systems; no thought, word or act of man but has sprung withal out of all men, and works sooner or later, recognisably or irrecongnisably, on all men! It is all a Tree: circulation of sap and influences, mutual communication of every minutest leaf with the lowest talon of a root, with every other greatest and minutest portion of the whole. The Tree Igdrasil, that has its roots down in the Kingdoms of Hela and Death, and whose boughs overspread the highest Heaven! —

In some sense it may be said that this glorious Elizabethan Era with its Shakspeare, as the outcome and flowerage of all which had preceded it, is itself attributable to the Catholicism of the Middle Ages. The Christian Faith, which was the theme of Dante's Song, had produced this Practical Life which Shakspeare was to sing. For Religion

men, as it now and always is, was the soul of Practice; the primary vital fact in men's life. And remark here, as rather curious, that Middle-Age Catholicism was abolished, so far as Acts of Parliament could abolish it, before Shakspeare, the 5 noblest product of it, made his appearance. He did make his appearance nevertheless. Nature at her own time, with Catholicism or what else might be necessary, sent him forth; taking small thought of Acts of Parliament. King-Henrys, Queen-Eliza- 10 beths go their way; and Nature too goes hers. Acts of Parliament, on the whole, are small, notwithstanding the noise they make. What Act of Parliament, debate at St. Stephen's, on the hustings or elsewhere, was it that brought this Shakspeare into being? No dining at Freemason's 15 Tavern, opening subscription-lists, selling of shares, and infinite other jangling and true or false endeavouring! This Elizabethan Era, and all its nobleness and blessedness, came without proclamation, preparation of ours. Priceless Shakspeare 20 was the free gift of Nature; given altogether silently; — received altogether silently, as if it had been a thing of little account. And yet, very literally, it is a priceless thing. One should look at 25 that side of matters too.

Of this Shakspeare of ours, perhaps the opinion one sometimes hears a little idolatrously expressed is, in fact, the right one; I think the best judgment not of this country only, but of Europe at 30 large, is slowly pointing to the conclusion, That Shakspeare is the chief of all Poets hitherto; the

measure you could get of what intellect is in the man. Which circumstance is vital and shall stand prominent; which unessential, fit to be suppressed; here is the true *beginning*, the true sequence and ending? To find out this, you task the whole force of insight that is in the man. He must *understand* the thing; according to the depth of his understanding, will the fitness of his answer be. You will try him so. Does like join itself to like; does the spirit of method stir in that confusion, so that the embroilment becomes order? Can the man say, *Eat lux*, Let there be light; and out of chaos make world? Precisely as there is *light* in himself, will he accomplish this.

Or indeed we may say again, it is in what I called Portrait-painting, delineating of men and things, especially of men, that Shakspeare is great. All the greatness of the man comes out decisively here. It is unexampled, I think, that calm creative perspicacity of Shakspeare. The thing he looks at reveals not this or that face of it, but its inmost part, and generic secret: it dissolves itself as in light before him, so that he discerns the perfect structure of it. Creative, we said: poetic creation, what is this too but *seeing* the thing sufficiently? the *word* that will describe the thing, follows of self from such clear intense sight of the thing. And is not Shakspeare's *morality*, his valour, candour, tolerance, truthfulness; his whole victorious strength and greatness, which can triumph over such obstructions, visible there too? Great as the world! No *twisted*, poor convex-concave mirror,

- reflecting all objects with its own convexities and concavities; a perfectly *level* mirror; — that is to say withal, if we will understand it, a man justly related to all things and men, a good man. It is
- 5 truly a lordly spectacle how this great soul takes in all kinds of men and objects, a Falstaff, an Othello, a Juliet, a Coriolanus; sets them all forth to us in their round completeness; loving, just, the equal brother of all. *Novum Organum*, and all the intel-
- 10 lect you will find in Bacon, is of a quite secondary order; earthly, material, poor in comparison with this. Among modern men, one finds, in strictness, almost nothing of the same rank. Goethe alone, since the days of Shakspeare, reminds me of it
- 15 Of him too you say that he *saw* the object; you may say what he himself says of Shakspeare: 'His characters are like watches with dial-plates 'of transparent crystal; they show you the hour 'like others, and the inward mechanism also is
- 20 'all visible.'

The seeing eye! It is this that discloses the inner harmony of things; what Nature meant, what musical idea Nature has wrapped-up in these often rough embodiments. Something she did

25 mean. To the seeing eye that something were discernible. Are they base, miserable things? You can laugh over them, you can weep over them; you can in some way or other genially relate yourself to them; — you can, at lowest, hold your peace

30 about them, turn away your own and others' face from them, till the hour come for practically exterminating and extinguishing them! At bottom,

is the Poet's first gift, as it is all men's, that he
have intellect enough. He will be a Poet if he
be: a Poet in word; or failing that, perhaps
ill better, a Poet in act. Whether he write at
all; and if so, whether in prose or in verse, will
depend on accidents: who knows on what ex-
tremely trivial accidents, — perhaps on his having
had a singing-master, on his being taught to sing
in his boyhood! But the faculty which enables
him to discern the inner heart of things, and the
harmony that dwells there (for whatsoever exists
is a harmony in the heart of it, or it would not
hold together and exist), is not the result of habits
or accidents, but the gift of Nature herself; the
primary outfit for a Heroic Man in what sort so-
ever. To the Poet, as to every other, we say first
of all, *See*. If you cannot do that, it is of no use
to keep stringing rhymes together, jingling sensi-
bilities against each other, and *name* yourself a
poet; there is no hope for you. If you can, there
is, in prose or verse, in action or speculation, all
manner of hope. The crabbed old Schoolmaster
used to ask, when they brought him a new pupil,
But are ye sure he's *not a dunce*?" Why, really
one might ask the same thing, in regard to every
man proposed for whatsoever function; and con-
sider it as the one inquiry needful: Are ye sure
he's not a dunce? There is, in this world, no
other entirely fatal person.

For, in fact, I say the degree of vision that
dwells in a man is a correct measure of the man.
If called to define Shakspeare's faculty, I should

say superiority of Intellect, and think I had included all under that. What indeed are faculties? We talk of faculties as if they were distinct, things separable; as if a man had intellect, imagination, 5 fancy, &c., as he has hands, feet and arms. That is a capital error. Then again, we hear of a man's 'intellectual nature,' and of his 'moral nature,' as if these again were divisible, and existed apart. Necessities of language do perhaps prescribe such 10 forms of utterance; we must speak, I am aware, in that way, if we are to speak at all. But words ought not to harden into things for us. It seems to me, our apprehension of this matter is, for most part, radically falsified thereby. We ought to 15 know withal, and to keep forever in mind, that these divisions are at bottom but *names*; that man's spiritual nature, the vital Force which dwells in him, is essentially one and indivisible; that what we call imagination, fancy, understanding, and so 20 forth, are but different figures of the same Power of Insight, all indissolubly connected with each other, physiognomically related; that if we knew one of them, we might know all of them. Morality itself, what we call the moral quality of a man, 25 what is this but another *side* of the one vital Force whereby he is and works? All that a man does is physiognomical of him. You may see how a man would fight, by the way in which he sings; his courage, or want of courage, is visible in the word he 30 utters, in the opinion he has formed, no less than in the stroke he strikes. He is *one*; and preaches the *same* Self abroad in all these ways.

Without hands a man might have feet, and could ill walk: but, consider it, — without morality, intellect were impossible for him; a thoroughly immoral *man* could not know anything at all! To know a thing, what we can call knowing, a man must first *love* the thing, sympathise with it: that is, *virtuously* related to it. If he have not the justice to put down his own selfishness at every turn, the courage to stand by the dangerous-true at every turn, how shall he know? His virtues, all of them, will lie recorded in his knowledge. Nature, with her truth, remains to the bad, to the selfish and the dissilanimous forever a sealed book: what such men know of Nature is mean, superficial, small; for the uses of the day merely. — But does not the every Fox know something of Nature? Exactly so: he knows where the geese lodge! The human Reynard, very frequent everywhere in the world, what more does he know but this and the like of this? Nay, it should be considered too, that if the Fox had not a certain vulpine *morality*, he could not even know where the geese were, or get at the geese! If he spent his time in splenetic atrabiliar reflections on his own misery, his ill usage by Nature, Fortune and other Foxes and so forth; and had not courage, promptitude, practicality, and other suitable vulpine gifts and graces, he would catch no geese. We may say of the Fox too, that his morality and insight are of the same dimensions; different faces of the same internal unity of vulpine life! — These things are worth stating; for the contrary of them acts with manifold very

baleful perversion, in this time : what limitations and modifications they require, your own candour will supply.

- If I say, therefore, that Shakspeare is the
 5 greatest of Intellectuals, I have said all concerning him. But there is more in Shakspeare's intellect than we have yet seen. It is what I call an unconscious intellect ; there is more virtue in it than he himself is aware of. Novalis beautifully remarks
 10 of him, that those Dramas of his are Products of Nature too, deep as Nature herself. I find a great truth in this saying. Shakspeare's Art is not Artifice ; the noblest worth of it is not there by plan or precontrivance. It grows-up from the depths of
 15 Nature, through this noble sincere soul, who is a voice of Nature. The latest generations of men will find new meanings in Shakspeare, new elucidations of their own human being ; ' new harmonies ' with the infinite structure of the Universe ; con-
 20 ' currences with later ideas, affinities with the ' higher powers and senses of man.' This well deserves meditating. It is Nature's highest reward to a true simple great soul, that he get thus to be a part of herself. Such a man's works, whatsoever he
 25 with utmost conscious exertion and forethought shall accomplish, grow up withal unconsciously, from the unknown depths in him ; — as the oak-tree grows from the Earth's bosom, as the mountains and waters shape themselves ; with a symmetry
 30 grounded on Nature's own laws, conformable to all Truth whatsoever. How much in Shakspeare lies hid ; his sorrows, his silent struggles known to

; much that was not known at all, not
 ole at all: like *roots*, like sap and forces
 g underground! Speech is great; but
 is greater.

al the joyful tranquillity of this man is 5
 I will not blame Dante for his misery:
 battle without victory; but true battle,—
 st, indispensable thing. Yet I call Shak-
 greater than Dante, in that he fought truly,
 d conquer. Doubt it not, he had his own 10
 s: those *Sonnets* of his will even testify ex-
 in what deep waters he had waded, and
 struggling for his life;—as what man like
 er failed to have to do? It seems to me a
 ss notion, our common one, that he sat like a 15
 n the bough; and sang forth, free and off-
 never knowing the troubles of other men.
 ; with no man is it so. How could a man
 forward from rustic deer-poaching to such
 y-writing, and not fall-in with sorrows by the 20

Or, still better, how could a man delineate
 let, a Coriolanus, a Macbeth, so many suffer-
 roic hearts, if his own heroic heart had never
 d?—And now, in contrast with all this,
 e his mirthfulness, his genuine overflowing 25
 ! laughter! You would say, in no point does
 ggerate but only in laughter. Fiery objurga-
 words that pierce and burn, are to be found
 kspeare; yet he is always in measure here;
 what Johnson would remark as a specially 30
 ater.' But his laughter seems to pour from
 floods; he heaps all manner of ridiculous

nicknames on the butt he is bantering, tumbles
 tosses him in all sorts of horse-play ; you w
 say, with his whole heart laughs. And the
 not always the finest, it is always a genial la
 5 ter. Not at mere weakness, at misery or pove
 never. No man who *can* laugh, what we
 laughing, will laugh at these things. It is
 poor character only *desiring* to laugh, and have
 credit of wit, that does so. Laughter means
 10 pathy ; good laughter is not 'the cracklin
 thorns under the pot.' Even at stupidity and
 tension this Shakspeare does not laugh other
 than genially. Dogberry and Verges tickle our
 hearts ; and we dismiss them covered with e
 15 sions of laughter : but we like the poor fellows
 the better for our laughing ; and hope they wil
 on well there, and continue Presidents of the
 watch. Such laughter, like sunshine on the
 sea, is very beautiful to me.

20 We have no room to speak of Shakspeare's
 vidual works ; though perhaps there is much
 waiting to be said on that head. Had we, fo
 stance, all his plays reviewed as *Hamlet*, in *Wü*
Meister, is ! A thing which might, one day
 25 done. August Wilhelm Schlegel has a remar
 his Historical Plays, *Henry Fifth* and the ot
 which is worth remembering. He calls them a
 of National Epic. Marlborough, you recol
 said, he knew no English History but what he
 30 learned from Shakspeare. There are really, i
 look to it, few as memorable Histories. The

salient points are admirably seized; all rounds itself off, into a kind of rhythmic coherence; it is, as Schlegel says, *epic*; — as indeed all delineation by a great thinker will be. There are right beautiful things in those Pieces, which indeed together form one beautiful thing. That battle of Agincourt strikes me as one of the most perfect things, in its sort, we anywhere have of Shakspeare's. The description of the two hosts: the wornout, jaded English; the dread hour, big with destiny, when the battle shall begin; and then that deathless valour: "Ye good yeomen, whose limbs were made in England!" There is a noble Patriotism in it, — far other than the 'indifference' you sometimes hear ascribed to Shakspeare. A true English heart breathes, calm and strong, through the whole business; not boisterous, protrusive; all the better for that. There is a sound in it like the ring of steel. This man too had a right stroke in him, had it come to that!

But I will say, of Shakspeare's works generally, that we have no full impress of him there; even as full as we have of many men. His works are so many windows, through which we see a glimpse of the world that was in him. All his works seem, comparatively speaking, cursory, imperfect, written under cramping circumstances; giving only here and there a note of the full utterance of the man. Passages there are that come upon you like splendour out of Heaven; bursts of radiance, illuminating the very heart of the thing: you say, "That is true, spoken once and forever; wheresoever and whenso-

ever there is an open human soul, that will be recognised as true!" Such bursts, however, make us feel that the surrounding matter is not radiant; that it is, in part, temporary, conventional. Alas, Shakespeare had to write for the Globe Playhouse: his great soul had to crush itself, as it could, into that and no other mould. It was with him, then, as it is with us all. No man works save under conditions. The sculptor cannot set his own free Thought before us; but his Thought as he could translate it into the stone that was given, with the tools that were given. *Dissecta membra* are all that we find of any Poet, or of any man.

Whoever looks intelligently at this Shakspeare may recognise that he too was a *Prophet*, in his way; of an insight analogous to the Prophetic, though he took it up in another strain. Nature seemed to this man also divine; *unspeakable*, deep as Tophet, high as Heaven: 'We are such stuff as Dreams are made of!' That scroll in Westminster Abbey, which few read with understanding, is of the depth of any seer. But the man sang; did not preach, except musically. We called Dante the melodious Priest of Middle-Age Catholicism. May we not call Shakspeare the still more melodious Priest of a *true* Catholicism, the 'Universal Church' of the Future and of all times? No narrow superstition, harsh asceticism, intolerance, fanatical fierceness or perversion: a Revelation, so far as it goes, that such a thousandfold hidden beauty and divineness dwells in all Nature; which let all men worship as

They can! We may say without offence, that there rises a kind of universal Psalm out of this Shakspeare too; not unfit to make itself heard among the still more sacred Psalms. Not in disharmony with these, if we understood them, but in harmony! — 5
I cannot call this Shakspeare a 'Sceptic,' as some do; his indifference to the creeds and theological quarrels of his time misleading them. No: neither unpatriotic, though he says little about his Patriotism; nor sceptic, though he says little about his Faith. Such 'indifference' was the fruit of his greatness withal: his whole heart was in his own grand sphere of worship (we may call it such); these other controversies, vitally important to other men, were not vital to him. 15

But call it worship, call it what you will, is it not a right glorious thing, and set of things, this that Shakspeare has brought us? For myself, I feel that there is actually a kind of sacredness in the fact of such a man being sent into this Earth. 20
Is he not an eye to us all; a blessed heaven-sent Bringer of Light? — And, at bottom, was it not perhaps far better that this Shakspeare, everyway an unconscious man, was *conscious* of no Heavenly message? He did not feel, like Mahomet, because 25
he saw into those internal Splendours, that he specially was the 'Prophet of God': and was he not greater than Mahomet in that? Greater; and also, if we compute strictly, as we did in Dante's case, more successful. It was intrinsically an error that 30
notion of Mahomet's, of his supreme Prophethood; and has come down to us inextricably involved in

error to this day dragging along with it such a coil of fables, impurities, intolerances, as makes it a questionable step for me here and now to say, as I have done, that Mahomet was a true Speaker at all, 5 and not rather an ambitious charlatan, perversity and simulacrum; no Speaker, but a Babblers! Even in Arabia, as I compute, Mahomet will have exhausted himself and become obsolete, while this Shakspeare, this Dante may still be young; — while 10 this Shakspeare may still pretend to be a Priest of Mankind, of Arabia as of other places, for unlimited periods to come!

Compared with any speaker or singer one knows even with Æschylus or Homer, why should he not 15 for veracity and universality, last like them? He is *sincere* as they; reaches deep down like them, to the universal and perennial. But as for Mahomet I think it had been better for him *not* to be so conscious! Alas, poor Mahomet; all that he was *con-* 20 *scious* of was a mere error; a futility and triviality — as indeed such ever is. The truly great in him too was the unconscious: that he was a wild Arabian of the desert, and did speak-out with that great thunder-voice of his, not by words which he *thought* 25 to be great, but by actions, by feelings, by a history which *were* great! His Koran has become a stupid piece of prolix absurdity; we do not believe, like him, that God wrote that! The Great Man here too as always, is a Force of Nature: whatsoever is truly 30 great in him springs-up from the *inarticulate* deep

Well: this is our poor Warwickshire Peasant, with

Rose to be Manager of a Playhouse, so that he could
live without begging; whom the Earl of Southamp-
ton cast some kind glances on; whom Sir Thomas
Lucy, many thanks to him, was for sending to the
Treadmill! We did not account him a god, like 5
Odin, while he dwelt with us;—on which point
there were much to be said. But I will say rather,
or repeat: In spite of the sad state Hero-worship
now lies in, consider what this Shakspeare has
actually become among us. Which Englishman we 10
ever made, in this land of ours, which million of
Englishmen, would we not give-up rather than the
Stratford Peasant? There is no regiment of highest
Dignitaries that we would sell him for. He is the
grandest thing we have yet done. For our honour 15
among foreign nations, as an ornament to our Eng-
lish Household, what item is there that we would
not surrender rather than him? Consider now, if
they asked us, Will you give-up your Indian Empire
or your Shakspeare, you English; never have had 20
any Indian Empire, or never have had any Shak-
speare? Really it were a grave question. Official
persons would answer doubtless in official language;
but we, for our part too, should not we be forced to
answer: Indian Empire, or no Indian Empire; we 25
cannot do without Shakspeare! Indian Empire
will go, at any rate, some day; but this Shakspeare
does not go, he lasts forever with us; we cannot
give-up our Shakspeare!

Nay, apart from spiritualities; and considering 30
him merely as a real, marketable, tangibly-useful
possession. England, before long, this Island of

ours, will hold but a small fraction of the English: in America, in New Holland, east and west to the very Antipodes, there will be a Saxondom covering great spaces of the Globe. And now, what is it
5 that can keep all these together into virtually one Nation, so that they do not fall-out and fight, but live at peace, in brotherlike intercourse, helping one another? This is justly regarded as the greatest practical problem, the thing all manner of sover-
10 eignities and governments are here to accomplish: what is it that will accomplish this? Acts of Parliament, administrative prime-ministers cannot. America is parted from us, so far as Parliament could part it. Call it not fantastic, for there is
15 much reality in it: Here, I say, is an English King, whom no time or chance, Parliament or combination of Parliaments, can dethrone! This King Shakspeare, does not he shine, in crowned sovereignty, over us all, as the noblest, gentlest, yet strong-
20 est of rallying-signs; *indestructible*; really more valuable in that point of view than any other means or appliance whatsoever? We can fancy him as radiant aloft over all the Nations of Englishmen, a thousand years hence. From Paramatta, from
25 New York, wheresoever, under what sort of Parish Constable soever, English men and women are, they will say to one another: "Yes, this Shakspeare is ours; we produced him, we speak and think by him; we are of one blood and kind with him." The
30 most common-sense politician, too, if he pleases may think of that.

Yes, truly, it is a great thing for a Nation tha

get an articulate voice; that it produce a man
who will speak-forth melodiously what the heart
it means! Italy, for example, poor Italy lies
smembered, scattered asunder, not appearing in
any protocol or treaty as a unity at all; yet the 5
ble Italy is actually *one*: Italy produced its
ante; Italy can speak! The Czar of all the
ussias, he is strong, with so many bayonets, Cos-
cks and cannons; and does a great feat in keep-
g such a tract of Earth politically together; but 10
cannot yet speak. Something great in him, but
is a dumb greatness. He has had no voice of
nius, to be heard of all men and times. He must
arn to speak. He is a great dumb monster
therto. His cannons and Cossacks will all have 15
sted into nonentity, while that Dante's voice is
ll audible. The Nation that has a Dante is
und together as no dumb Russia can be. — We
st here end what we had to say of the *Hero-*
et.

LECTURE IV

THE HERO AS PRIEST. LUTHER; REFORMATION:
KNOX: PURITANISM

[Friday, 15th May 1860]

OUR present discourse is to be of the Great Man as Priest. We have repeatedly endeavoured to explain that all sorts of Heroes are intrinsically of the same material: that given a great soul, open to
5 the Divine Significance of Life, then there is given a man fit to speak of this, to sing of this, to fight and work for this, in a great, victorious, enduring manner; there is given a Hero,—the outward shape of whom will depend on the time and the environ-
10 ment he finds himself in. The Priest too, as I understand it, is a kind of Prophet; in him too there is required to be a light of inspiration, as we must name it. He presides over the worship of the
15 people; is the Uniter of them with the Unseen Holy. He is the spiritual Captain of the people; as the Prophet is their spiritual King with many captains: he guides them heavenward, by wise guidance through this Earth and its work. The
ideal of him is, that he too be ~~what we can call~~
20 a voice from the unseen Heaven; interpreting, even

s the Prophet did, and in a more familiar manner unfolding the same to men. The unseen Heaven, — the 'open secret of the Universe,' — which so few have an eye for! ~~He is the Prophet shorn of his more awful splendour; burning with mild~~ 5 ~~equable radiance, as the enlightener of daily life.~~ This, I say, is the ideal of a Priest. So in old times; so in these, and in all times. One knows very well that, in reducing ideals to practice, great latitude of tolerance is needful; very great. But 10 a Priest who is not this at all, who does not any longer aim or try to be this, is a character — of whom we had rather not speak in this place.

Luther and Knox were by express vocation Priests, and did faithfully perform that function 15 in its common sense. Yet it will suit us better here to consider them chiefly in their historical character, rather as Reformers than Priests. There have been other Priests perhaps equally notable, in calmer times, for doing faithfully the office of a 20 Leader of Worship; bringing down, by faithful heroism in that kind, a light from Heaven into the daily life of their people; leading them forward, as under God's guidance, in the way wherein they were to go. But when this same way was a rough 25 one, of battle, confusion and danger, the spiritual Captain, who led through that, becomes, especially to us who live under the fruit of his leading, more notable than any other. He is the warfaring and 30 battling Priest; who led his people, not to quiet faithful labour as in smooth times, but to faithful ~~valorous~~ conflict, in times all violent, dismembered:

a more perilous service, and a more memorable one, be it higher or not. These two men we will account our best Priests, inasmuch as they were our best Reformers. Nay I may ask, ~~Is not every true~~
5 ~~Reformer, by the nature of him, a Priest first of~~
~~all? He appeals to Heaven's invisible justice~~
~~against Earth's visible forces; knows that it, the~~
~~invisible, is strong and alone strong.~~ He is a believer in the divine truth of things; a *seer*, seeing
10 through the shows of things; a worshipper, in one way or the other, of the divine truth of things; a Priest, that is. If he be not first a Priest, he will never be good for much as a Reformer.

Thus then, as we have seen Great Men, in various
15 situations, building-up Religions, heroic Forms of human Existence in this world, Theories of Life worthy to be sung by a Dante, Practices of Life by a Shakspeare,—we are now to see the reverse process; which also is necessary, which also may
20 be carried-on in the Heroic manner. Curious how this should be necessary: yet necessary it is. The mild shining of the Poet's light has to give place to the fierce lightning of the Reformer: unfortunately the Reformer too is a personage that cannot
25 fail in History! The Poet indeed, with his mildness, what is he but the product and ultimate adjustment of Reform, or Prophecy, with its fierceness? No wild Saint Dominics and Thebald Eremites, there had been no melodious Dante;
30 rough Practical Endeavour, Scandinavian and other, from Odin to Walter Raleigh, from Ulfila to Cranmer, enabled Shakspeare to speak. Nay the finished

Poet, I remark sometimes, is a symptom that his epoch itself has reached perfection and is finished; that before long there will be a new epoch, new Reformers needed. 2

Doubtless it were finer, could we go along always in the way of *music*; be tamed and taught by our Poets, as the rude creatures were by their Orpheus of old. Or failing this rhythmic *musical* way, how good were it could we get so much as into the *equable* way; I mean, if *peaceable* Priests, reforming from day to day, would always suffice us! But it is not so; even this latter has not yet been realised. Alas, the battling Reformer too is, from time to time, a needful and inevitable phenomenon. Obstructions are never wanting: the very things that were once indispensable furtherances become obstructions; and need to be shaken-off, and left behind us, — a business often of enormous difficulty. It is notable enough, surely, how a Theorem or spiritual Representation, so we may call it, which once took-in the whole Universe, and was completely satisfactory in all parts of it to the highly-discursive acute intellect of Dante, one of the greatest in the world, — had in the course of another century become dubitable to common intellects; become deniable; and is now, to every one of us, flatly incredible, obsolete as Odin's Theorem! To Dante, human Existence, and God's ways with men, were all well represented by those *Malebolges*, *Purgatorios*; to Luther not well. How was this? Why could not Dante's Catholicism continue; but Luther's Protestantism must needs follow? Alas, nothing will *continue*.

7 I do not make much of 'Progress of the Species,
 as handled in these times of ours; nor do I think
 you would care to hear much about it. The talk
 on that subject is too often of the most extrava-
 5 gant, confused sort. Yet I may say, the fact itself
 seems certain enough; nay we can trace-out the
 inevitable necessity of it in the nature of things.
 Every man, as I have stated somewhere, is not
 only a learner but a doer: he learns with the mind
 10 given him what has been; but with the same mind
 he discovers farther, he invents and devises some-
 what of his own. Absolutely without originality
 there is no man. No man whatever believes, or
 can believe, exactly what his grandfather believed:
 15 he enlarges somewhat, by fresh discovery, his view
 of the Universe, and consequently his Theorem of
 the Universe,—which is an *infinite* Universe, and
 can never be embraced wholly or finally by any
 view or Theorem, in any conceivable enlargement:
 20 he enlarges somewhat, I say; finds somewhat that
 was credible to his grandfather incredible to him,
 false to him, inconsistent with some new thing he
 has discovered or observed. ~~It is the history of~~
 every man; and in the history of Mankind we
 25 see it summed-up into great historical amounts,—
 revolutions, new epochs: Dante's Mountain of
 Purgatory does *not* stand 'in the ocean of the
 other Hemisphere,' when Columbus has once
 sailed thither! Men find no such thing extant
 30 in the other Hemisphere. It is not there. It
 must cease to be believed to be there. So with
 all beliefs whatsoever in this world,—all Sys-

s of Belief, and Systems of Practice that spring
1 these.

2 we add now the melancholy fact, that when
3 ef waxes uncertain, Practice too becomes un-
4 id, and errors, injustices and miseries every- 5
5 re more and more prevail, we shall see material
6 gh for revolution. At all turns, a man who
7 do faithfully, needs to believe firmly. If he
8 e to ask at every turn the world's suffrage; if
9 cannot dispense with the world's suffrage, and 10
10 e his own suffrage serve, he is a poor eye-
11 ant; the work committed to him will be *mis-*
12 e. Every such man is a daily contributor to
13 inevitable downfall. Whatsoever work he
14 , dishonestly, with an eye to the outward 15
15 of it, is a new offence, parent of new misery
16 somebody or other. Offences accumulate till
17 become insupportable; and are then violently
18 it through, cleared off as by explosion. Dante's
19 ime Catholicism, incredible now in theory, and 20
20 ced still worse by faithless, doubting and dis-
21 est practice, has to be torn asunder by a Luther;
22 kspeare's noble Feudalism, as beautiful as it 23
23 e looked and was, has to end in a French Rev-
24 ion. The accumulation of offences is, as we 25
25 too literally *exploded*, blasted asunder volcani-
26 y; and there are long troublous periods before
27 ters come to a settlement again.

28 urely it were mournful enough to look only at
29 face of the matter, and find in all human 30
30 ions and arrangements merely the fact that
31 were uncertain, temporary, subject to the law

of death! At bottom, it is not so: all death, here too we find, is but of the body, not of the essence or soul; all destruction, by violent revolution or howsoever it be, is but new creation on a wider
5 scale. Odinism was *Valour*; Christianity was *Humility*, a nobler kind of Valour. No thought that ever dwelt honestly as true in the heart of man but *was* an honest insight into God's truth on man's part, and *has* an essential truth in it which
10 endures through all changes, an everlasting possession for us all. And, on the other hand, what a melancholy notion is that, which has to represent all men, in all countries and times except our own, as having spent their life in blind condemnable
15 error, mere lost Pagans, Scandinavians, Mahometans, only that we might have the true ultimate knowledge! All generations of men were lost and wrong, only that this present little section of a generation might be saved and right. They all
20 marched forward there, all generations since the beginning of the world, like the Russian soldiers into the ditch of Schweidnitz Fort, only to fill-up the ditch with their dead bodies, that we might march-over and take the place! It is an incredible
25 hypothesis.

Such incredible hypothesis we have seen maintained with fierce emphasis; and this or the other poor individual man, with his sect of individual men, marching as over the dead bodies of all men,
30 towards sure victory: but when he too, with his hypothesis and ultimate infallible credo, sank into the ditch, and became a dead body, what was to

be said? — Withal, it is an important fact in the nature of man, that he tends to reckon his own insight as final, and goes upon it as such. He will always do it, I suppose, in one or the other way; but it must be in some wider, wiser way than this. 5
Are not all true men that live, or that ever lived, soldiers of the same army, enlisted, under Heaven's captaincy, to do battle against the same enemy, the empire of Darkness and Wrong? Why should we misknow one another, fight not against the enemy 10 but against ourselves, from mere difference of uniform? All uniforms shall be good, so they hold in them true valiant men. All fashions of arms, the Arab turban and swift scimeter, Thor's strong hammer smiting down *Jötuns*, shall be welcome. 15
Luther's battle-voice, Dante's march-melody, all genuine things are with us, not against us. We are all under one Captain, soldiers of the same host. — Let us now look a little at this Luther's fighting; what kind of battle it was, and how he 20 comported himself in it. Luther too was of our spiritual Heroes; a Prophet to his country and time.

As introductory to the whole, a remark about Idolatry will perhaps be in place here. One of 25 Mahomet's characteristics, which indeed belongs to all Prophets, is unlimited implacable zeal against Idolatry. It is the grand theme of Prophets: Idolatry, the worshipping of dead Idols as the Divinity, is a thing they cannot away-with, but 30 have to denounce continually, and brand with in-

exclusive representation. It is the chief of all the sins
 they are prone unto the sin. This is worth noting.
 We will not enter here into the theological question
 about Idolatry. It is *Idolatrie*, a thing seen, a
 symbol. It is not the true & Symbol of God; and
 perhaps the only medium whereby the most
 august and most holy God is to be more than a
 symbol. It is not the true God, but the poor
 image of the true God, the image of God: but that
 is not the substance of it. The God was in it some
 way or other. And now in this sense, one may
 say, it is all worship whatsoever a worship by
 means of *idola* or things seen. Whether seen,
 whether visible as an image or picture to the bodily
 eye; or visible only to the inward eye, to the imagi-
 nation, to the intellect: this makes a superficial,
 but no substantial difference. It is still a Thing
 seen, significant of Godhead: an Idol. The most
 rigorous Puritan has his Confession of Faith, and
 intellectual Representation of Divine things, and
 worships thereby; thereby is worship first made
 possible for him. All creeds, liturgies, religious
 forms, conceptions that fitly invest religious feel-
 ings, are in this sense *idola*, things seen. All
 worship whatsoever must proceed by Symbols, by
 Idols: we may say, all Idolatry is comparative,
 and the worst Idolatry is only more idolatrous.

Where, then, lies the evil of it? Some fatal evil
 must lie in it, or earnest prophetic men would not
 on all hands so reprobate it. Why is Idolatry so
 hateful to Prophets? It seems to me as if, in the
 worship of those poor wooden symbols, the thing

hat had chiefly provoked the Prophet, and filled
 his inmost soul with indignation and aversion,
 was not exactly what suggested itself to his own
 thought, and came out of him in words to others,
 as the thing. The rudest heathen that worshipped 5
 Canopus, or the Caabah Black-Stone, he, as we saw,
 was superior to the horse that worshipped nothing
 at all! Nay there was a kind of lasting merit in
 that poor act of his; analogous to what is still
 meritorious in Poets: recognition of a certain end- 10
 less *divine* beauty and significance in stars and all
 natural objects whatsoever. Why should the Prophet
 so mercilessly condemn him? The poorest mortal
 worshipping his Fetish, while his heart is full of
 it, may be an object of pity, of contempt and avoid- 15
 ance, if you will; but cannot surely be an object
 of hatred. Let his heart *be* honestly full of it, the
 whole space of his dark narrow mind illuminated
 thereby; in one word, let him entirely *believe* in his
 Fetish,—it will then be, I should say, if not well 20
 with him, yet as well as it can readily be made to
 be, and you will leave him alone, unmolested there.

But here enters the fatal circumstance of Idolatry, that, in the era of the Prophets, no man's mind
 is any longer honestly filled with his Idol or Symbol. 25
 Before the Prophet can arise who, seeing through
 it, knows it to be mere wood, many men must have
 begun dimly to doubt that it was little more. Con-
 demnable Idolatry is *insincere* Idolatry. Doubt has
 eaten-out the heart of it: a human soul is seen 30
 clinging spasmodically to an Ark of the Covenant,
 which it half-feels now to have become a Phantasm.

This is one of the balefullest sights. Souls are longer *filled* with their Fetish; but only pretend to be filled, and would fain make themselves feel that they are filled. "You do not believe," said (5 ridge; "you only believe that you believe." the final scene in all kinds of Worship and Synonymism; the sure symptom that death is now nigh is equivalent to what we call Formulism, and ship of Formulas, in these days of ours. No (10 immoral act can be done by a human creature it is the beginning of all immorality, or rather the impossibility henceforth of any morality whatever: the innermost moral soul is paralysed the cast into fatal magnetic sleep! Men are no (15 *sincere* men. I do not wonder that the earnest denounces this, brands it, prosecutes it with tinguishable aversion. He and it, all good are at death-feud. Blamable Idolatry is *Cant* even what one may call Sincere-Cant. Sir (20 Cant: that is worth thinking of! Every such Worship ends with this phasis.

I find Luther to have been a Breaker of no less than any other Prophet. The wooden of the Koreish, made of timber and bees-wax, (25 not more hateful to Mahomet than Tetzels'帕 of Sin, made of sheepskin and ink, were to Luther. ~~It is the property of every Hero, in every time~~ every place and situation, that he come be a reality; that he stand upon things, and not a (30 of things. According as he loves, and venerates articulately or with deep speechless thought awful realities of things, so will the hollow

ils as
repre
feel
d
of things, however regular, decorous, accredited by
Koreishes or Conclaves, be intolerable and detest-
able to him. Protestantism too is the work of a
Prophet: the prophet-work of that sixteenth cen-
tury. The first stroke of honest demolition to an
ancient thing grown false and idolatrous; prepara-
tory afar off to a new thing, which shall be true,
and authentically divine!—

At first view it might seem as if Protestantism
were entirely destructive to this that we call Hero- 10
worship, and represent as the basis of all possible
good, religious or social, for mankind. One often
hears it said that Protestantism introduced a new
era, radically different from any the world had ever
seen before: the era of 'private judgment,' as they 15
call it. By this revolt against the Pope, every man
became his own Pope; and learnt, among other
things, that he must never trust any Pope, or spir-
itual Hero-captain, any more! Whereby, is not
spiritual union, all hierarchy and subordination 20
among men, henceforth an impossibility? So we
hear it said.—Now I need not deny that Protes-
tantism was a revolt against spiritual sovereignties,
Popes and much else. Nay I will grant that Eng-
lish Puritanism, revolt against earthly sovereignties, 25
was the second act of it; that the enormous French
Revolution itself was the third act, whereby all
sovereignties earthly and spiritual were, as might
seem, abolished or made sure of abolition. Protes-
tantism is the grand root from which our whole 30
subsequent European History branches out. For
the spiritual will always body itself forth in the

- temporal history of men; the spiritual is the beginning of the temporal. And now, sure enough, the cry is everywhere for Liberty and Equality, Independence and so forth; instead of *Kings*, Bal-
- 5 lot-boxes and Electoral suffrages: it seems made out that any Hero-sovereign, or loyal obedience of men to a man, in things temporal or things spiritual, has passed away forever from the world. I should despair of the world altogether, if so. One
- 10 of my deepest convictions is, that it is not so. Without sovereigns, true sovereigns, temporal and spiritual, I see nothing possible but an anarchy; the hatefulest of things. But I find Protestantism, whatever anarchic democracy it have produced, to
- 15 be the beginning of new genuine sovereignty and order. I find it to be a revolt against *false* sovereigns; the painful but indispensable first preparative for *true* sovereigns getting place among us! This is worth explaining a little.
- 20 Let us remark, therefore, in the first place, that this of 'private judgment' is, at bottom, not a new thing in the world, but only new at that epoch of the world. There is nothing generically new or peculiar in the Reformation; it was a return to
- 25 Truth and Reality in opposition to Falsehood and Semblance, as all kinds of Improvement and genuine Teaching are and have been. Liberty of private judgment, if we will consider it, must at all times have existed in the world. Dante had not
- 30 put-out his eyes, or tied shackles on himself; he was at home in that Catholicism of his, a free-seeing soul in it, — if many a poor Hogstraten, Tetzels

1 Dr. Eck had now become slaves in it. Liberty
 judgment? No iron chain, or outward force of
 7 kind, could ever compel the soul of a man to
 iieve or to disbelieve: it is his own indefeasible
 ht, that judgment of his; he will reign, and be 5
 ve there, by the grace of God alone! The sorri-
 sophistical Bellarmine, preaching sightless faith
 d passive obedience, must first, by some kind of
 iviction, have abdicated his right to be convinced.
 s 'private judgment' indicated that, as the ad- 10
 sablest step *he* could take. The right of private
 dgment will subsist, in full force, wherever true
 an subsist. A true man *believes* with his whole
 dgment, with all the illumination and discern-
 ent that is in him, and has always so believed. 15
 false man, only struggling to 'believe that he
 lieves,' will naturally manage it in some other
 ay. Protestantism said to this latter, Woe! and
 the former, Well done! At bottom, it was no
 w saying; it was a return to all old sayings that 20
 er had been said. Be genuine, be sincere: that
 as, once more, the meaning of it. Mahomet be-
 eved with his whole mind; Odin with his whole
 ind,—he, and all *true* Followers of Odinism.
 hey, by their private judgment, had 'judged' 25
 -so.

And now I venture to assert, that the exercise of
 ivate judgment, faithfully gone about, does by
 means necessarily end in selfish independence,
 olation; but rather ends necessarily in the oppo- 30
 te of that. It is not honest inquiry that makes
 archy; but it is error, insincerity, half-belief and

untruth that make it. A man protesting against error is on the way towards uniting himself with all men that believe in truth. There is no communion possible among men who believe only in hearsays. The heart of each is lying dead; has no power of sympathy even with *things*,—or he would believe *them* and not hearsays. No sympathy even with things; how much less with his fellow-men! He cannot unite with men; he is an anarchic man. Only in a world of sincere men is unity possible;—and there, in the longrun, it is as good as *certain*.

For observe one thing, a thing too often left out of view, or rather altogether lost sight of, in this controversy: That it is not necessary a man should himself have *discovered* the truth he is to believe in, and never so *sincerely* to believe in. ~~A Great Man, we said, was always sincere, as the first condition of him.~~ But a man need not be great in order to be sincere; that is not the necessity of Nature and all Time, but only of certain corrupt unfortunate epochs of Time. A man can believe, and make his own, in the most genuine way, what he has received from another;—and with boundless gratitude to that other! The merit of *originality* is not novelty; it is sincerity. The believing man is the original man; whatsoever he believes, he believes it for himself, not for another. Every son of Adam can become a sincere man, an original man, in this sense; no mortal is doomed to be an insincere man. Whole ages, what we call ages of Faith, are original; all men in them; or the most

of men in them, sincere. These are the great and fruitful ages: every worker, in all spheres, is a worker not on semblance but on substance; every work issues in a result: the general sum of such work is great; for all of it, as genuine, tends 5 towards one goal; all of it is *additive*, none of it subtractive. There is true union, true kingship, loyalty, all true and blessed things, so far as the poor Earth can produce blessedness for men.

Hero-worship? Ah me, that a man be self-sub- 10 sistent, original, true, or what we call it, is surely the farthest in the world from indisposing him to reverence and believe other men's truth! It only disposes, necessitates and invincibly compels him to *dis*believe other men's dead formulas, hearsays 15 and untruths. A man embraces truth with his eyes open, and because his eyes are open: does he need to shut them before he can love his Teacher of truth? He alone can love, with a right gratitude and genuine loyalty of soul, the Hero-Teacher who 20 has delivered him out of darkness into light. Is not such a one a true Hero and Serpent-queller; worthy of all reverence! The black monster, Falsehood, our one enemy in this world, lies prostrate by his valour; it was he that conquered the world 25 for us!—See, accordingly, was not Luther himself revered as a true Pope, or Spiritual Father, *being* verily such? Napoleon, from amid boundless revolt of Sansculottism, became a King. Hero-worship never dies, nor can die. Loyalty and Sovereignty are everlasting in the world:—and there 30 them, that they are grounded not on

garnitures and semblances, but on realities and sincerities. Not by shutting your eyes, your 'private judgment'; no, but by opening them, and by having something to see! Luther's message was
5 deposition and abolition to all false Popes and Potentates, but life and strength, though afar off, to new genuine ones.

All this of Liberty and Equality, Electoral suffrages, Independence and so forth, we will take,
10 therefore, to be a temporary phenomenon, by no means a final one. Though likely to last a long time, with sad enough embroilments for us all, we must welcome it, as the penalty of sins that are past, the pledge of inestimable benefits that are
15 coming. In all ways, it behoved men to quit simulacra and return to fact; cost what it might, that did behove to be done. With spurious Popes, and Believers having no private judgment, — quacks pretending to command over dupes, — what can you
20 do? Misery and mischief only. You cannot make an association out of insincere men; you cannot build an edifice except by plummet and level, — at *right-angles* to one another! In all this wild revolutionary work, from Protestantism downwards, I
25 see the blesseddest result preparing itself: not abolition of Hero-worship, but rather what I would call a whole World of Heroes. If Hero mean *sincere man*, why may not every one of us be a Hero? A world all sincere, a believing world: the like has
30 been; the like will again be, — cannot help being. That were the right sort of Worshippers for Heroes: never could the truly Better be so revered as

where all were True and Good!—But we must hasten to Luther and his Life.

Luther's birthplace was Eisleben in Saxony; he came into the world there on the 10th of November 1483. It was an accident that gave this honour to Eisleben. His parents, poor mine-labourers in a village of that region, named Mohra, had gone to the Eisleben Winter-Fair: in the tumult of this scene the Frau Luther was taken with travail, found refuge in some poor house there, and the boy she bore was named MARTIN LUTHER. Strange enough to reflect upon it. This poor Frau Luther, she had gone with her husband to make her small merchandisings; perhaps to sell the lock of yarn she had been spinning, to buy the small winter-necessaries for her narrow hut or household; in the whole world, that day, there was not a more entirely unimportant-looking pair of people than this Miner and his Wife. And yet what were all Emperors, Popes and Potentates, in comparison? There was born here, once more, a Mighty Man; whose light was to flame as the beacon over long centuries and epochs of the world; the whole world and its history was waiting for this man. It is strange, it is great. It leads us back to another Birth-hour, in a still meaner environment, Eighteen Hundred years ago,—of which it is fit that we say nothing, that we think only in silence; for what words are there! The Age of Miracles past? The Age of Miracles is forever here!—

I find it altogether suitable to Luther's function

in this Earth, and doubtless wisely ordered to that end by the Providence presiding over him and us and all things, that he was born poor, and brought up poor, one of the poorest of men. He had to
5 beg, as the school-children in those times did; singing for alms and bread, from door to door. Hardship, rigorous Necessity was the poor boy's companion; no man nor no thing would put on a false face to flatter Martin Luther. Among
10 things, not among the shows of things, had he to grow. A boy of rude figure, yet with weak health, with his large greedy soul, full of all faculty and sensibility, he suffered greatly. But it was his task to get acquainted with *realities*,
15 and keep acquainted with them, at whatever cost: his task was to bring the whole world back to reality, for it had dwelt too long with semblance! A youth nursed-up in wintry whirlwinds, in desolate darkness and difficulty, that he may step-forth
20 at last from his stormy Scandinavia, strong as a true man, as a god: a Christian Odin, — a right Thor once more, with his thunder-hammer, to smite asunder ugly enough *Jötuns* and Giant-monsters!

Perhaps the turning incident of his life, we may
25 fancy, was that death of his friend Alexis, by lightning, at the gate of Erfurt. Luther had struggled-up through boyhood, better and worse; displaying, in spite of all hindrances, the largest intellect, eager to learn: his father judging doubt-
30 less that he might promote himself in the world, set him upon the study of Law. This was the path to rise; Luther, with little will in it either way,

had consented: he was now nineteen years of age. Alexis and he had been to see the old Luther people at Mansfeldt; were got back again near Erfurt, when a thunderstorm came on; the bolt struck Alexis, he fell dead at Luther's feet. What is this Life of ours? — gone in a moment, burnt-up like a scroll, into the blank Eternity! What are all earthly preferments, Chancellorships, Kingships? They lie shrunk together — there! The Earth has opened on them; in a moment they are not, and Eternity is. Luther, struck to the heart, determined to devote himself to God and God's service alone. In spite of all dissuasions from his father and others, he became a Monk in the Augustine Convent at Erfurt.

This was probably the first light-point in the history of Luther, his purer will now first decisively uttering itself; but, for the present, it was still as one light-point in an element all of darkness. He says he was a pious monk, *ich bin ein frommer Mönch gewesen*; faithfully, painfully struggling to work-out the truth of this high act of his; but it was to little purpose. His misery had not lessened; had rather, as it were, increased into infinitude. The drudgeries he had to do, as novice in his Convent, all sorts of slave-work, were not his grievance: the deep earnest soul of the man had fallen into all manner of black scruples, dubitations; he believed himself likely to die soon, and far worse than die. One hears with a new interest for poor Luther that, at this time, he lived in terror of the unspeakable misery; fancied that he was

and the other side of the mountain. The first of these is the fact that the mountain is not a natural result. He

missions by his Augustine Order, as a man of talent and fidelity fit to do their business well: the elector of Saxony, Friedrich, named the Wise, a very wise and just prince, had cast his eye on him as a valuable person; made him Professor in his new university of Wittenberg, Preacher too at Wittenberg; in both which capacities, as in all duties he, this Luther, in the peaceable sphere of common life, was gaining more and more esteem with all good men. 5

It was in his twenty-seventh year that he first saw me; being sent thither, as I said, on mission from his Convent. Pope Julius the Second, and what was going-on at Rome, must have filled the mind of Luther with amazement. He had come as the Sacred City, throne of God's Highpriest on earth; and he found it—what we know! Many thoughts it must have given the man; many which have no record of, which perhaps he did not himself know how to utter. This Rome, this scene of false priests, clothed not in the beauty of holiness, but in far other vesture, is *false*: but what is to Luther? A mean man he, how shall he remain a world? That was far from his thoughts. A humble, solitary man, why should he at all meddle with the world? It was the task of quite other men than he. His business was to guide his own footsteps wisely through the world. Let him do his own obscure duty in it well; the rest, terrible and dismal as it looks, is in God's hand, not in his. 10 15 20 25 30

It is curious to reflect what might have been the

issue, had Roman Popery happened to pass this Luther by; to go on in its great wasteful orbit, and not come athwart his little path, and force him to assault it! Conceivable enough that, in this case, he might have held his peace about the abuses of Rome; left Providence, and God on high, to deal with them! A modest quiet man; not prompt to attack irreverently persons in authority. His clear task, as I say, was to do his own duty; to walk wisely in this world of confused wickedness, and save his own soul alive. But the Roman Highpriesthood did come athwart him: afar off at Wittenberg he, Luther, could not get lived in honesty for it; he remonstrated, resisted, came to extremity; was struck-at, struck again, and so it came to wager of battle between them! This is worth attending to in Luther's history. Perhaps no man of so humble, peaceable a disposition ever filled the world with contention. We cannot but see that he would have loved privacy, quiet diligence in the shade; that it was against his will he ever became a notoriety. Notoriety: what would that do for him? The goal of his march through this world was the Infinite Heaven; an indubitable goal for him: in a few years, he should either have attained that, or lost it forever! We will say nothing at all, I think, of that sorrowfulest of theories, of its being some mean shopkeeper grudge, of the Augustine Monk against the Dominican, that first kindled the wrath of Luther, and produced the Protestant Reformation. We will say to the people who maintain it, if indeed any such exist

Get first into the sphere of thought by which it is so much as possible to judge of Luther, of any man like Luther, otherwise than distastefully; we may then begin arguing with you. The Monk Tetzel, sent out carelessly in the way of trade, by Leo Tenth, — who merely wanted to get a little money, and for the rest seems to have been a Pagan rather than a Christian, so far as he was anything, — arrived at Wittenberg, and drove on a scandalous trade there. Luther's flock bought indulgences; in the confessional of his Church, he pleaded to him that they had already got their sins pardoned. Luther, if he would not be idle wanting at his own post, a false sluggard and coward at the very centre of the little space of land that was his own and no other man's, had stepped-forth against Indulgences, and declare aloud that they were a futility and sorrowful mockery, that no man's sins could be pardoned by *them*. It was the beginning of the whole Reformation. We know how it went; forward from this first public challenge of Tetzel, on the last day of October 1517, through remonstrance and argument; — spreading wider, rising ever higher; till it became unquenchable, and enveloped all the world. Luther's first-desire was to have this grief and other griefs ended; his thought was still far other than that of introducing separation in the Church, or revolt against the Pope, Father of Christendom. — The elegant Pagan Pope cared little about this monk and his doctrines; wished, however, to have peace with the noise of him: in a space of some

three years, having tried various softer method
 he thought good to end it by fire. His dooms to
 Monk's writings to be burnt by the hangman, and
 his body to be sent bound to Rome. — probably for
 a similar purpose. It was the way they had ended
 with Huss, with Jerome, the century before. A
 short argument, fire. Poor Huss: he came to the
 Constance Council, with all imaginable promises
 and safe-conducts: an earnest, not rebellious kind
 of man: they laid him instantly in a stone dungeon
 three-feet wide, six-feet high, seven-feet long,
 burnt the true voice of him out of this world
 choked it in smoke and fire. That was not well
 done!

I, for one, pardon Luther for now altogether re-
 volting against the Pope. The elegant Pagan, by
 this fire-decree of his, had kindled into noble jus-
 tice the bravest heart then living in this world.
 The bravest, if also one of the humblest, peace-
 blest; it was now kindled. These words of mine
 words of truth and soberness, aiming faithfully, a
 human inability would allow, to promote God's
 truth on Earth, and save men's souls, you, God's
 vicegerent on earth, answer them by the hangman
 and fire? You will burn me and them, for an-
 swer to the God's-message they strove to bring
 you? You are not God's vicegerent; you are an-
 other's than his, I think! I take your Bull, as a
 emparchmented Lie, and burn it. You will do
 what you see good next: this is what I do.—I
 was on the 10th of December 1520, three years
 after the beginning of the ' that Luther

'with a great concourse of people,' took this indignant step of burning the Pope's fire-decree 'at the Elster-Gate of Wittenberg.' Wittenberg looked on 'with shoutings'; the whole world was looking on. The Pope should not have provoked that 'shout'! It was the shout of the awakening of nations. The quiet German heart, modest, patient of much, had at length got more than it could bear. Formulism, Pagan Popeism, and other Falsehood and corrupt Semblance had ruled long enough: and here once more was a man found who durst tell all men that God's-world stood not on semblances but on realities; that Life was a truth, and not a lie!

At bottom, as was said above, we are to consider Luther as a Prophet Idol-breaker; a bringer-back of men to reality. ~~It is the function of great men and teachers.~~ Mahomet said, These idols of yours are wood; you put wax and oil on them, the flies stick on them: they are not God, I tell you, they are black wood! Luther said to the Pope, This thing of yours that you call a Pardon of Sins, it is a bit of rag-paper with ink. It is nothing else; it, and so much like it, is nothing else. God alone can pardon sins. Popeship, spiritual Fatherhood of God's Church, is that a vain semblance, of cloth and parchment? It is an awful fact. God's Church is not a semblance, Heaven and Hell are not semblances. I stand on this, since you drive me to it. Standing on this, I, a poor German Monk am stronger than you all. I stand solitary, ~~endless~~, but on God's Truth; you with your

many night-mare with their treasures and armouries, ministers spiritual and temporal, stand on the Devil's Lie, and are not so strong!—

The Diet of Worms. Luther's appearance there on the 17th of April 1521, may be considered as the greatest scene in Modern European History; the point indeed, from which the whole subsequent history of civilization takes its rise. After multiplied negotiations, disputations, it had come to this. The young Emperor Charles Fifth, with all the Princes of Germany, Papal nuncios, dignitaries spiritual and temporal, are assembled there: Luther is to appear and answer for himself, whether he will recant or not. The world's pomp and power sits there on this hand: on that, stands-up for God's Truth, one man, the poor miner Hans Luther's Son. Friends had reminded him of Huss, advised him not to go; he would not be advised. A large company of friends rode-out to meet him, with still more earnest warnings; he answered, "Were there as many Devils in Worms as there are roof-tiles, I would on." The people, on the morrow, as he went to the Hall of the Diet, crowded the windows and housetops, some of them calling out to him, in solemn words, not to recant: "Whosoever denieth me before men!" they cried to him,—as in a kind of solemn petition and adjuration. Was it not in reality our petition too, the petition of the whole world, lying in dark bondage of soul, paralysed under a black spectral Nightmare and triple-hatted Chimera, calling itself Father in God, and what not: "Free us; it rests with thee; desert us not!"

Luther did not desert us. His speech, of two
 1rs, distinguished itself by its respectful, wise
 l honest tone; submissive to whatsoever could
 2fully claim submission, not submissive to any
 3re than that. His writings, he said, were partly 5
 4 own, partly derived from the Word of God.

5 to what was his own, human infirmity entered
 6 it; unguarded anger, blindness, many things
 7 ubtleless which it were a blessing for him could he
 8 olish altogether. But as to what stood on sound 10
 9rth and the Word of God, he could not recant it.
 10ow could he? "Confute me," he concluded, "by
 11oofs of Scripture, or else by plain just arguments:
 12 cannot recant otherwise. For it is neither safe
 13r prudent to do aught against conscience. Here 15
 14nd I; I can do no other: God assist me!"—It
 15as we say, the greatest moment in the Modern
 16istory of Men. English Puritanism, England
 17d its Parliaments, Americas, and vast work these
 18o centuries; French Revolution, Europe and its 20
 19rk everywhere at present: the germ of it all lay
 20ere: had Luther in that moment done other, it
 21d all been otherwise! The European World
 22as asking him: Am I to sink ever lower into
 23lsehood, stagnant putrescence, loathsome accursed
 24ath; or, with whatever paroxysm, to cast the
 25lsehoods out of me, and be cured and live? —

Great wars, contentions and disunion followed
 t of this Reformation; which last down to our
 y, and are yet far from ended. Great talk and 30
 imination has been made about these. They are

lamentable, undeniable; but after all, what has Luther or his cause to do with them? It seems strange reasoning to charge the Reformation with all this. When Hercules turned the purifying
5 river into King Augeas's stables, I have no doubt the confusion that resulted was considerable all around: but I think it was not Hercules's blame; it was some other's blame! The Reformation might bring what results it liked when it came, but the
10 Reformation simply could not help coming. To all Popes and Popes' advocates, expostulating, lamenting and accusing, the answer of the world is: Once for all, your Popehood has become untrue. No matter how good it was, how good you say it is, we
15 cannot believe it; the light of our whole mind, given us to walk-by from Heaven above, finds it henceforth a thing unbelievable. We will not believe it, we will not try to believe it,—we dare not! The thing is *untrue*; we were traitors against
20 the Giver of all Truth, if we durst pretend to think it true. Away with it; let whatsoever likes come in the place of it: with *it* we can have no farther trade!—Luther and his Protestantism is not responsible for wars; the false Simulacra that forced
25 him to protest, they are responsible. Luther did what every man that God has made has not only the right, but lies under the sacred duty, to do: answered a Falsehood when it questioned him, Dost thou believe me?—No!—At what cost so
30 ever, without counting of costs, this thing behoved to be done. Union, organisation spiritual and material, a far nobler than any Popedom or Feudalism

heir truest days, I never doubt, is coming for
 world; sure to come. But on Fact alone, not
 Semblance and Simulacrum, will it be able
 er to come, or to stand when come. With union
 ounded on falsehood, and ordering us to speak 5
 l act lies, we will not have anything to do.
 ace? A brutal lethargy is peaceable, the noisome
 ve is peaceable. We hope for a living peace,
 t a dead one!

And yet, in prizing justly the indispensable bless- 10
 gs of the New, let us not be unjust to the Old.
 ie Old *was* true, if it no longer is. In Dante's days
 needed no sophistry, self-blinding or other dis-
 nesty, to get itself reckoned true. It was good
 en; nay there is in the soul of it a deathless 15
 od. The cry of 'No Popery' is foolish enough
 these days. The speculation that Popery is on
 e increase, building new chapels and so forth,
 ay pass for one of the idlest ever started. Very
 rious: to count-up a few Popish chapels, listen to 20
 few Protestant logic-choppings, — to much dull-
 oning drowsy inanity that still calls itself Protes-
 nt, and say: See, Protestantism is *dead*; Popeism
 more alive than it, will be alive after it! —
 rowsy inanities, not a few, that call themselves 25
 rotestant are dead; but *Protestantism* has not died
 t, that I hear of! Protestantism, if we will
 ok, has in these days produced its Goethe, its
 apoleon; German Literature and the French Rev-
 ution; rather considerable signs of life! Nay, 30
 bottom, what else is alive *but* Protestantism?
 ie life of most else that one meets is a galvanic

one merely, — not a pleasant, not a lasting sort of life !

Popery can build new chapels ; welcome to do so, to all lengths. Popery cannot come back, any more
 5 than Paganism can, — *which* also still lingers in some countries. But, indeed, it is with these things, as with the ebbing of the sea : you look at the waves oscillating thither, thither on the beach ; for
minutes you cannot tell how it is going ; look in
 10 half an hour where it is, — look in half a century where your Popehood is ! Alas, would there were no greater danger to our Europe than the poor old Pope's revival ! Thor may as soon try to revive. — And withal this oscillation has a meaning. The
 15 poor old Popehood will not die away entirely, as Thor has done, for some time yet ; nor ought it. We may say, the Old never dies till this happen, till all the soul of good that was in it have got itself transfused into the practical New. While a
 20 good work remains capable of being done by the Romish form ; or, what is inclusive of all, while a *pious life* remains capable of being led by it, just so long, if we consider, will this or the other human soul adopt it, go about as a living witness of it. So
 25 long it will obtrude itself on the eye of us who reject it, till we in our practice too have appropriated whatsoever of truth was in it. Then, but also not till then, it will have no charm more for any man. It lasts here for a purpose. Let it last as long as
 30 it can. —

Of Luther I will add a reference to al

these wars and bloodshed, the noticeable fact that one of them began so long as he continued living. The controversy did not get to fighting so long as he was there. To me it is proof of his greatness in all senses, this fact. How seldom do we find a man 5 that has stirred-up some vast commotion, who does not himself perish, swept-away in it! Such is the usual course of revolutionists. Luther continued, to a good degree, sovereign of this greatest revolution; all Protestants, of what rank or function 10 never, looking much to him for guidance: and he held it peaceable, continued firm at the centre of it. A man to do this must have a kingly faculty: he must have the gift to discern at all turns where the true heart of the matter lies, and to plant himself 15 courageously on that, as a strong true man, that other true men may rally round him there. He will not continue leader of men otherwise. Luther's clear deep force of judgment, his force of all sorts, of *silence*, of tolerance and moderation, among 20 others, are very notable in these circumstances.

Tolerance, I say; a very genuine kind of tolerance: he distinguishes what is essential, and what is not; the unessential may go very much as it will. A complaint comes to him that such and 25 such a Reformed Preacher 'will not preach without a cassock.' Well, answers Luther, what harm will a cassock do the man? 'Let him have a cassock to preach in; let him have three cassocks if he find benefit in them!' His conduct in the 30 matter of Karlstadt's wild image-breaking; of the Anabaptists; of the Peasants' War, shows a noble

like might be if now spoken. It was a faith of Luther's that there were Devils, spiritual denizens of the Pit, continually besetting men. Many times, in his writings, this turns-up; and a most small sneer has been grounded on it by some. In the room of the Wartburg where he sat translating the Bible, they still show you a black spot on the wall; the strange memorial of one of these conflicts. Luther sat translating one of the Psalms; he was worn-down with long labour, with sickness, abstinence from food: there rose before him some hideous indefinable Image, which he took for the Evil One, to forbid his work: Luther started-up, with fiend-defiance; flung his inkstand at the spectre, and it disappeared! The spot still remains there; a curious monument of several things. Any apothecary's apprentice can now tell us what we are to think of this apparition, in a scientific sense: but the man's heart that dare rise defiant, face to face, against Hell itself, can give no higher proof of fearlessness. The thing he will quail before exists not on this Earth or under it. — Fearless enough! 'The Devil is aware,' writes he on one occasion, 'that this does not proceed out of fear in me. I have seen and defied innumerable Devils. Duke George,' of Leipzig, a great enemy of his, 'Duke George is not equal to one Devil,' — far short of a Devil! 'If I had business at Leipzig, I would ride into Leipzig, though it rained Duke-Georges for nine days running.' What a reservoir of Dukes ride into! —

same time, they err greatly who imagine

that this man's courage was ferocity, mere coarse disobedient obstinacy and savagery, as many do. Far from that. There may be an absence of fear which arises from the absence of thought or affection, from the presence of hatred and stupid fury. We do not value the courage of the tiger highly! With Luther it was far otherwise; no accusation could be more unjust than this of mere ferocious violence brought against him. A most gentle heart withal, full of pity and love, as indeed the truly valiant heart ever is. The tiger before a *stronger* foe — flies: the tiger is not what we call valiant, only fierce and cruel. I know few things more touching than those soft breathings of affection, soft as a child's or mother's, in this great wild heart of Luther. So honest, unadulterated with any cant; homely, rude in their utterance; pure as water welling from the rock. What, in fact, was all that downpressed mood of despair and reprobation, which we saw in his youth, but the outcome of preëminent thoughtful gentleness, affections too keen and fine? It is the course such men as the poor Poet Cowper fall into. Luther to a slight observer might have seemed a timid, weak man of modesty, affectionate shrinking tenderness the chief distinction of him. It is a noble valour which is roused in a heart like this, once stirred-up into defiance, all kindled into a heavenly blaze.

In Luther's *Table-Talk*, a posthumous Book of anecdotes and sayings collected by his friends, the most interesting now of all the Books proceeding from him, we have many beautiful unconscious dis-

plays of the man, and what sort of nature he had. His behaviour at the deathbed of his little Daughter, so still, so great and loving, is among the most affecting things. He is resigned that his little Magdalene should die, yet longs inexpressibly that she might live; — follows, in awestruck thought, the flight of her little soul through those unknown realms. Awestruck; most heartfelt, we can see; and sincere, — for after all dogmatic creeds and articles, he feels what nothing it is that we know, 10 or can know: His little Magdalene shall be with God, as God wills; for Luther too that is all; *Islam* is all.

Once, he looks-out from his solitary Patmos, the Castle of Coburg, in the middle of the night: The great vault of Immensity, long flights of clouds sailing through it, — dumb, gaunt, huge: — who supports all that? “None ever saw the pillars of it; yet it is supported.” God supports it. We must know that God is great, that God is good; 20 and trust, where we cannot see. — Returning home from Leipzig once, he is struck by the beauty of the harvest-fields: How it stands, that golden yellow corn, on its fair taper stem, its golden head bent, all rich and waving there, — the meek Earth, 25 at God’s kind bidding, has produced it once again; the bread of man! — In the garden at Wittenberg one evening at sunset, a little bird has perched for the night: That little bird, says Luther, above it are the stars and deep Heaven of worlds; yet it 30 has folded its little wings; gone trustfully to rest there as in its home: the Maker of it has given it

too a home! — — Neither are mirthful turns wanting: there is a great free human heart in this man. The common speech of him has a rugged nobleness, idiomatic, expressive, genuine; gleams here and
5 there with beautiful poetic tints. One feels him to be a great brother man. His love of Music, indeed, is not this, as it were, the summary of all these affections in him? Many a wild unutterability he spoke-forth from him in the tones of his
10 flute. The Devils fled from his flute, he says. Death-defiance on the one hand, and such love of music on the other; I could call these the two opposite poles of a great soul; between these two all great things had room.

15 Luther's face is to me expressive of him; in Kranach's best portraits I find the true Luther. A rude plebeian face; with its huge crag-like brow and bones, the emblem of rugged energy; at first almost a repulsive face. Yet in the eyes especially
20 there is a wild silent sorrow; an unnamable melancholy, the element of all gentle and fine affections; giving to the rest the true stamp of nobleness. Laughter was in this Luther, as we said; but tears also were there. Tears also were appointed
25 him; tears and hard toil. The basis of his life was Sadness, Earnestness. In his latter days, after all triumphs and victories, he expresses himself heartily weary of living; he considers that God alone can and will regulate the course things are
30 taking, and that perhaps the Day of Judgment is not far. As for him, he longs for one thing: that God would release him from his labour, and let

depart and be at rest. They understand little
 the man who cite this in *obsequy of him*—I
 call this Luther a true **Great Man**: great in
 intellect, in courage, affection and integrity: one
 our most lovable and precious men. Great, not
 a hewn obelisk; but as an Alpine mountain, — so
 simple, honest, spontaneous, not setting-up to be
 great at all; there for quite another purpose than
 being great! Ah yes, unsubduable granite, pierc-
 ing far and wide into the Heavens; yet in the
 depths of it fountains, green beautiful valleys with
 flowers! A right Spiritual Hero and Prophet;
 once more, a true Son of Nature and Fact, for
 whom these centuries, and many that are to come
 to, will be thankful to Heaven.

The most interesting phasis which the Reforma-
 tion anywhere assumes, especially for us English,
 is that of Puritanism. In Luther's own country
 Protestantism soon dwindled into a rather barren
 affair: not a religion or faith, but rather now a
 logical jangling of argument, the proper seat
 of it not the heart; the essence of it sceptical con-
 vention: which indeed has jangled more and more,
 down to Voltaireism itself, — through Gustavus-
 Adolphus contentions onward to French-Revolution
 times! But in our Island there arose a Puritan-
 ism, which even got itself established as a Pres-
 byterianism and National Church among the Scotch.
 which came forth as a real business of the heart
 and has produced in the world very notable fruits.
 In some senses, one may say it is the only

Protestantism that ever got to the rank of being a Faith, a true heart-communication with Heaven, and of exhibiting itself in History as such. We must spare a few words for Knox; himself a brave and remarkable man; but still more important as Chief Priest and Founder, which one may consider him to be, of the Faith that became Scotland's, New England's, Oliver Cromwell's. History will have something to say about this, for some time to come!

10 We may censure Puritanism as we please; and no one of us, I suppose, but would find it a very rough defective thing. But we, and all men, may understand that it was a genuine thing; for Nature has adopted it, and it has grown; and grows. I say

15 sometimes, that all goes by wager-of-battle in this world; that *strength*, well understood, is the measure of all worth. Give a thing time; if it can succeed, it is a right thing. Look now at American Saxondom; and at that little Fact of the sailing of

20 the Mayflower, two-hundred years ago, from Delft Haven in Holland! Were we of open sense as the Greeks were, we had found a Poem here; one of Nature's own Poems, such as she writes in broad facts over great continents. For it was properly

25 the beginning of America: there were straggling settlers in America before, some material as of a body was there; but the soul of it was first this. These poor men, driven-out of their own country, not able well to live in Holland, determine on settling in the New World. Black untamed forests are there, and wild savage creatures; but not so cruel as Starchamber hangmen. They thought the

h would yield them food, if they tilled hon-
 ; the everlasting heaven would stretch, there
 overhead; they should be left in peace, to pre-
 for Eternity by living well in this world of
 e; worshipping in what they thought the true, 5
 the idolatrous way. They clubbed their small
 ns together; hired a ship, the little ship May-
 er, and made ready to set sail.

1 Neal's *History of the Puritans*¹ is an account
 ne ceremony of their departure: solemnity, we 10
 it call it rather, for it was a real act of wor-
 . Their minister went down with them to the
 h, and their brethren whom they were to leave
 nd; all joined in solemn prayer, That God
 ld have pity on His poor children, and go with 15
 1 into that waste wilderness, for He also had
 e that, He was there also as well as here. —
 ! These men, I think, had a work! The weak
 g, weaker than a child, becomes strong one day,
 be a true thing. Puritanism was only despic- 20
 , laughable then; but nobody can manage to
 h at it now. Puritanism has got weapons and
 ws; it has fire-arms, war-navies; it has cunning
 s ten fingers, strength in its right arm; it can
 : ships, fell forests, remove mountains;—it is 25
 of the strongest things under this sun at
 ent!

1 the history of Scotland, too, I can find prop-
 but one epoch: we may say, it contains noth-
 of world-interest at all but this Reformation 30
 Knox. A poor barren country, full of continual

¹ Neal (London, 1755), i. 490.

wars, dissensions, massacres; a people in the
 state of rudeness and destitution, little better
 than Ireland at this day. Hungry fierce
 not so much as able to form any arrangements
 with each other *how to divide* what they flee
 from these poor drudges; but obliged, as the
 Scandinavian Republics are at this day, to make
 every alteration a revolution; no way of changing
 the ministry but by hanging the old ministers on
 gibbets: this is a historical spectacle of no very
 singular significance! 'Bravery' enough, I doubt
 not, fierce fighting in abundance: but not braver
 or fiercer than that of their old Scandinavian
 ancestors: *whose* exploits we have not found
 worth dwelling on! It is a country as yet without
 a soul: nothing developed in it but what is rude,
 external, semi-animal. And now at the Reforma-
 tion, the internal life is kindled, as it were, under
 the robes of this outward material death. A cause,
 the noblest of causes kindles itself, like a beacon
 fire, on high; high as Heaven, yet attainable from
 earth, whereby the meanest man becomes not
 a citizen only, but a Member of Christ's visible
 church, a veritable Hero, if he prove a true man!
 Well, this is what I mean by a whole 'nation
 becoming a believing nation. There needs not a
 god to make a hero; there needs a god-cre-
 ation which will be true to its origin; that will
 save your soul! The like has been seen, we find.
 It will be again seen, under wider forms than
 the present: there can be no lasting good
 without it. Impossible! say some. Possible?

■ it not *been*, in this world, as a practised fact?
 ■ Hero-worship fail in Knox's case? Or are we
 ■ made of other clay now? Did the Westminster
 ■ Confession of Faith add some new property to the
 ■ soul of man? God made the soul of man. He 5
 ■ did not doom any soul of man to live as a Hypothe-
 ■ sis and Hearsay, in a world filled with such, and
 ■ with the fatal work and fruit of such! —

But to return: This that Knox did for his Na-
 tion, I say, we may really call a resurrection as 10
 from death. It was not a smooth business; but it
 was welcome surely, and cheap at that price, had
 been far rougher. On the whole, cheap at any
 price; — as life is. The people began to *live*: they
 decided first of all to do that, at what cost and costs 15
 never. Scotch Literature and Thought, Scotch
 Industry; James Watt, David Hume, Walter Scott,
 Robert Burns: I find Knox and the Reformation
 living in the heart's core of every one of these per-
 sons and phenomena; I find that without the Re- 20
 formation they would not have been. Or what of
 Scotland? The Puritanism of Scotland became
 that of England, of New England. A tumult in
 the High Church of Edinburgh spread into a uni-
 versal battle and struggle over all these realms; — 25
 there came out, after fifty-years struggling, what
 we all call the '*Glorious Revolution*,' a *Habeas-*
 Corpus Act, Free Parliaments, and much else! —
 as, is it not too true what we said, That many
 men in the van do always, like Russian soldiers 30
 march into the ditch of Schweidnitz, and fill it up
 with their dead bodies, that the rear may pass-over

them dry-shod, and gain the honour? How earnest rugged Cromwells, Knoxes, poor I Covenanters, wrestling, battling for very rough miry places, have to struggle, and suffer fall, greatly censured, *benighted*, — before a Revolution of Eighty-eight can step-over the official pumps and silk-stockings, with unthree-times-three!

It seems to me hard measure that this Scotchman, now after three-hundred years, should plead like a culprit before the world; inally for having been, in such way as it was possible to be, the bravest of all Scotchmen! he been a poor Half-and-half, he could have cre into the corner, like so many others; Scotland not been delivered; and Knox had been without blame. He is the one Scotchman to whom, others, his country and the world owe a debt has to plead that Scotland would forgive him having been worth to it any million 'unblanching Scotchmen that need no forgiveness! He gave his breast to the battle; had to row in French galleys, wander forlorn in exile, in clouds and storms was censured, shot-at through his windows; right sore fighting life: if this world were his of recompense, he had made but a bad vent of it. I cannot apologise for Knox. To him very indifferent, these two-hundred-and-fifty or more, what men say of him. But we, having got above all those details of his battle, and looking now in clearness on the fruits of his victory, we for our own sake, ought to look through the run

and controversies enveloping the man, into the man himself.

For one thing, I will remark that this post of prophet to his Nation was not of his seeking; Knox had lived forty years quietly obscure, before he became conspicuous. He was the son of poor parents; had got a college education; become a priest; adopted the Reformation, and seemed well content to guide his own steps by the light of it, nowise unduly intruding it on others. He had lived as Tutor in gentlemen's families; preaching when any body of persons wished to hear his doctrine: resolute he to walk by the truth, and speak the truth when called to do it; not ambitious of more; not fancying himself capable of more. In his entirely obscure way he had reached the age of forty; was with the small body of Reformers who were standing siege in St. Andrew's Castle, — when one day in their chapel, the Preacher after finishing his exhortation to these fighters in the worn hope, said suddenly, That there ought to be other speakers, that all men who had a priest's heart and gift in them ought now to speak; — which gifts and heart one of their own number, John Knox the name of him, had: Had he not? said the Preacher, appealing to all the audience: what then is *his* duty? The people answered affirmatively; it was a criminal forsaking of his post, if such a man held the word that was in him silent. Poor Knox was obliged to stand-up; he attempted to reply; he could say no word; — burst into a flood of tears, and ran out. It is worth remember-

ing, that scene. He was in grievous trouble for some days. He felt what a small faculty was his for this great work. He felt what a baptism he was called to be baptised withal. He 'burst into
5 tears.'

Our primary characteristic of a Hero, that he is sincere, applies emphatically to Knox. It is not denied anywhere that this, whatever might be his other qualities or faults, is among the truest of
10 men. With a singular instinct he holds to the truth and fact; the truth alone is there for him, the rest a mere shadow and deceptive nonentity. However feeble, forlorn the reality may seem, on that and that only *can* he take his stand. In the
15 Gallies of the River Loire, whither Knox and the others, after their Castle of St. Andrew's was taken, had been sent as Galley-slaves,—some officer or priest, one day, presented them an Image of the Virgin Mother, requiring that they, the blasphemous heretics, should do it reverence. Mother?
20 Mother of God? said Knox, when the turn came to him: This is no Mother of God: this is '*a pented bredd*,'—a piece of wood, I tell you, with paint on it! She is fitter for swimming, I think, than for
25 being worshipped, added Knox; and flung the thing into the river. It was not very cheap jesting there: but come of it what might, this thing to Knox was and must continue nothing other than the real truth; it was a *pented bredd*: worship it he
30 would not.

He told his fellow-prisoners, in this darkest time, to be of courage; the Cause they had was the true

re, and must and would prosper; the whole world
 would not put it down. Reality is of God's mak-
 ing; it is alone strong. How many *pented bredds*,
 pretending to be real, are fitter to swim than to be
 worshipped!—This Knox cannot live but by fact: 5
 he clings to reality as the shipwrecked sailor to the
 cliff. He is an instance to us how a man, by sin-
 cerity itself, becomes heroic: it is the grand gift he
 has. We find in Knox a good honest intellectual
 talent, no transcendent one;—a narrow, inconsider- 10
 able man, as compared with Luther: but in heart-
 felt instinctive adherence to truth, in *sincerity*, as
 we say, he has no superior; nay, one might ask,
 What equal he has? The heart of him is of the
 true Prophet cast. "He lies there," said the Earl 15
 of Morton at his grave, "who never feared the face
 of man." He resembles, more than any of the
 moderns, an Old-Hebrew Prophet. The same in-
 flexibility, intolerance, rigid narrow-looking adhe-
 rence to God's truth, stern rebuke in the name of 20
 God to all that forsake truth: an Old-Hebrew
 Prophet in the guise of an Edinburgh Minister of
 the Sixteenth Century. We are to take him for
 that; not require him to be other.

Knox's conduct to Queen Mary, the harsh visits 25
 he used to make in her own palace, to reprove her
 there, have been much commented upon. Such
 cruelty, such coarseness fills us with indignation.
 On reading the actual narrative of the business,
 what Knox said, and what Knox meant, I must 30
 say one's tragic feeling is rather disappointed.
 They are not so coarse, these speeches; they seem

to me about as fine as the circumstances would permit! Knox was not there to do the courtier; he came on another errand. Whoever, reading these colloquies of his with the Queen, thinks they are vulgar
5 insolences of a plebeian priest to a delicate high lady, mistakes the purport and essence of them altogether. It was unfortunately not possible to be polite with the Queen of Scotland, unless one proved untrue to the Nation and Cause of Scotland. A man who
10 did not wish to see the land of his birth made a hunting-field for intriguing ambitious Guises, and the Cause of God trampled underfoot of Falsehoods, Formulas and the Devil's Cause, had no method of making himself agreeable! "Better that women
15 weep," said Morton, "than that bearded men be forced to weep." Knox was the constitutional opposition-party in Scotland: the Nobles of the country, called by their station to take that post, were not found in it; Knox had to go, or no one. The
20 hapless Queen;— but the still more hapless Country, if *she* were made happy! Mary herself was not without sharpness enough, among her other qualities: "Who are you," said she once, "that presume to school the nobles and sovereign of this realm?"
25 — "Madam, a subject born within the same," answered he. Reasonably answered! If the 'subject' have truth to speak, it is not the 'subject's' footing that will fail him here. —

We blame Knox for his intolerance. Well, surely
30 it is good that each of us be as tolerant as possible. Yet, at bottom, after all the talk there is and has been about it, what is tolerance? Tolerance has

o tolerate the *unessential*; and to see well what
that is. Tolerance has to be noble, measured, just
in its very wrath, when it can tolerate no longer.
But, on the whole, we are not altogether here to
tolerate! We are here to resist, to control and 5
vanquish withal. We do not 'tolerate' Falsehoods,
Thieveries, Iniquities, when they fasten on us; we
say to them, Thou art false, thou art not tolerable!
We are here to extinguish Falsehoods, and put an
end to them, in some wise way! I will not quarrel 10
so much with the way; the doing of the thing is
our great concern. In this sense Knox was, full
surely, intolerant.

A man sent to row in French Galleys, and such-
like, for teaching the Truth in his own land, cannot 15
always be in the mildest humour! I am not pre-
pared to say that Knox had a soft temper; nor do
I know that he had what we call an ill temper. An
ill nature he decidedly had not. Kind honest af-
fections dwelt in the much-enduring, hard-worn, 20
ever-battling man. That he *could* rebuke Queens,
and had such weight among those proud turbulent
Nobles, proud enough whatever else they were; and
could maintain to the end a kind of virtual Presi-
dency and Sovereignty in that wild realm, he who 25
was only 'a subject born within the same': this of
itself will prove to us that he was found, close at
hand, to be no mean acrid man; but at heart a
healthful, strong, sagacious man. Such alone can
bear rule in that kind. They blame him for pull- 30
ing-down cathedrals, and so forth, as if he were a
~~sedition~~ rioting demagogue: precisely the reverse

is seen to be the fact, in regard to cathedrals and the rest of it, if we examine! Knox wanted no pulling-down of stone edifices; he wanted leprosy and darkness to be thrown out of the lives of men.

- 5 Tumult was not his element; it was the tragic feature of his life that he was forced to dwell so much in that. Every such man is the born enemy of Disorder; hates to be in it: but what then? Smooth Falsehood is not Order; it is the general
10 sumtotal of *Disorder*. Order is *Truth*,—each thing standing on the basis that belongs to it: Order and Falsehood cannot subsist together.

Withal, unexpectedly enough, this Knox has a vein of drollery in him; which I like much, in
15 combination with his other qualities. He has a true eye for the ridiculous. His *History*, with its rough earnestness, is curiously enlivened with this. When the two Prelates, entering Glasgow Cathedral, quarrel about precedence; march rapidly up, take
20 to hustling one another, twitching one another's rochets, and at last flourishing their crosiers like quarter-staves, it is a great sight for him everyway! Not mockery, scorn, bitterness alone; though there is enough of that too. But a true, loving, illumi-
25 nating laugh mounts-up over the earnest visage; not a loud laugh; you would say, a laugh in the eyes most of all. An honest-hearted, brotherly man; brother to the high, brother also to the low; sincere in his sympathy with both. He had his
30 pipe of Bourdeaux too, we find, in that old Edinburgh house of his; a cheery, social man, with faces that loved him! They go far wrong who think this

Knox was a gloomy, spasmodic, shrieking fanatic. Not at all: he is one of the solidest of men. Practical, cautious-hopeful, patient; a most shrewd, observing, quietly discerning man. In fact, he has very much the type of character we assign to the Scotch at present: a certain sardonic taciturnity is in him; insight enough; and a stouter heart than he himself knows of. He has the power of holding his peace over man's things which do not vitally concern him, — "They? what are they?" But the thing which does vitally concern him, that thing he will speak of; and in a tone the whole world shall be made to hear: all the more emphatic for his long silence.

This Prophet of the Scotch is to me no hateful man! — He had a sore fight of an existence; wrestling with Popes and Principalities; in defeat, contention, life-long struggle; rowing as a galley-slave, wandering as an exile. A sore fight: but he won it. "Have you hope?" they asked him in his last moment, when he could no longer speak. He lifted his finger, 'pointed upwards with his finger,' and so died. Honour to him! His works have not died. The letter of his work dies, as of all men's; but the spirit of it never.

One word more as to the letter of Knox's work. The unforgivable offence in him is, that he wished to set-up Priests over the head of Kings. In other words, he strove to make the Government of Scotland a *Theocracy*. This indeed is properly the sum of his offences, the essential sin; for which what

don can there be? It is most true, he did, at
sciously or unconsciously, mean a Theoc-

racy, or Government of God. He did mean that Kings and Prime Ministers, and all manner of persons, in public or private, diplomatising or whatever else they might be doing, should walk according to
5 the Gospel of Christ, and understand that this was their Law, supreme over all laws. He hoped once to see such a thing realised; and the Petition, *Thy Kingdom come*, no longer an empty word. He was sore grieved when he saw greedy worldly Barons
10 clutch hold of the Church's property; when he expostulated that it was not secular property, that it was spiritual property, and should be turned to true churchly uses, education, schools, worship;—and the Regent Murray had to answer, with a shrug of
15 the shoulders, "It is a devout imagination!" This was Knox's scheme of right and truth; this he zealously endeavoured after, to realise it. If we think the scheme of truth was too narrow, was not true, we may rejoice that he could not realise it; that it
20 remained after two centuries of effort, unrealisable, and is a 'devout imagination' still. But how shall we blame *him* for struggling to realise it? Theocracy, Government of God, is precisely the thing to be struggled for! All Prophets, zealous Priests,
25 are there for that purpose. Hildebrand wished a Theocracy; Cromwell wished it, fought for it; Mahomet attained it. Nay, is it not what all zealous men, whether called Priests, Prophets, or whatsoever else called, do essentially wish, and must
30 wish? That right and truth, or God's Law, reign supreme among men, this is the Heavenly Ideal (well named in Knox's time, and namable in all

, a revealed 'Will of God') towards which the
 mer will insist that all be more and more
 ximated. All true Reformers, as I said, are
 e nature of them Priests, and strive for a
 bracy. } 5

w far such Ideals can ever be introduced into
 ice, and at what point our impatience with
 non-introduction ought to begin, is always a
 ion. I think we may say safely, Let them in- 10
 ce themselves as far as they can contrive to
 ! If they are the true faith of men, all men
 ; to be more or less impatient always where
 are not found introduced. There will never
 anting Regent-Murrays enough to shrug their
 ders, and say, "A devout imagination!" We 15
 raise the Hero-priest rather, who does what
him to bring them in; and wears-out, in toil,
 ny, contradiction, a noble life, to make a God's
 lom of this Earth. The Earth will not be-
 too godlike!

LECTURE V

THE HERO AS MAN OF LETTERS. JOHNSON,
ROUSSEAU, BURNS

[Tuesday, 19th May 1840]

HERO-GODS, Prophets, Poets, Priests are forms of Heroism that belong to the old ages, make their appearance in the remotest times; some of them have ceased to be possible long since, and cannot
5 any more show themselves in this world. The Hero as *Man of Letters*, again, of which class we are to speak to-day, is altogether a product of these new ages; and so long as the wondrous art of *Writing*, or of Ready-writing which we call *Printing*,
10 subsists, he may be expected to continue, as one of the main forms of Heroism for all future ages. He is, in various respects, a very singular phenomenon.

He is new, I say; he has hardly lasted above a century in the world yet. Never, till about
15 hundred years ago, was there seen any figure of a Great Soul living apart in that anomalous manner; endeavouring to speak-forth the inspiration that was in him by Printed Books, and find place and subsistence by what the world would please to give
20 him for doing that. Much had been sold and

ought, and left to make its own bargain in the marketplace; but the inspired wisdom of a Heroic soul never till then, in that naked manner. He, with his copy-rights and copy-wrongs, in his squalid rret, in his rusty coat; ruling (for this is what he does), from his grave, after death, whole nations and generations who would, or would not, give him credit while living, — is a rather curious spectacle! Few shapes of Heroism can be more unexpected.

Alas, the Hero from of old has had to cramp himself into strange shapes: the world knows not well at any time what to do with him, so foreign is his aspect in the world! It seemed absurd to us, that men, in their rude admiration, should take some wise great Odin for a god, and worship him as such; some wise great Mahomet for one god-inspired, and religiously follow his Law for twelve centuries: but that a wise great Johnson, a Burns, Rousseau, should be taken for some idle non-descript, extant in the world to amuse idleness, and have a few coins and applauses thrown him, that he might live thereby; *this* perhaps, as before inted, will one day seem a still absurder phasis of things! — Meanwhile, since it is the spiritual always that determines the material, this same Man-of-letters Hero must be regarded as our most important modern person. He, such as he may be, is the soul of all. What he teaches, the whole world will do and make. The world's manner of dealing with him is the most significant feature of the world's general position. Looking well at his life, we may get a glance, as deep as is readily possible

for us, into the life of those singular centuries which have produced him in which we ourselves live and work.

There are genuine Men of Letters, and not genuine; as in every kind there is a genuine and a spurious. If *Hero* be taken to mean genuine, then I say the Hero as Man of Letters will be found discharging a function for us which is ever honourable, ever the highest; and was once well known to be the highest. He is uttering-forth, in such way as he has, the inspired soul of him; all that a man, in any case, can do. I say *inspired*; for what we call 'originality,' 'sincerity,' 'genius,' the heroic quality we have no good name for, signifies that. He it is he who lives in the inward sphere of things, in the True, Divine and Eternal, which exists unseen to most, under the Temporary, and his being is in that; he declares that reality by a speech as it may be, in declaring his own life. His life, as we said before, is a direct revelation of the heart of Nature herself: but the weak many know not how to receive it, in most times; the strong, the heroic, perennial, because it is so, receive them. The Man of Letters, when he is so, does to proclaim this in such a way as to be useful; it is the same function which is performed by a man Prophet, and which is the same in all manner of things, and is the same in all manner of things.

which delivered some

erty years ago at Erlangen, a highly remarkable
 course of Lectures on this subject: '*Ueber das
 Wesen des Gelehrten*, On the Nature of the Literary
 Man.' Fichte, in conformity with the Transcen- 5
 dental Philosophy, of which he was a distinguished
 teacher, declares first: That all things which we
 see or work with in this Earth, especially we our-
 selves and all persons, are as a kind of vesture or
 sensuous Appearance: that under all there lies,
 as the essence of them, what he calls the 'Divine 10
 Idea of the World'; this is the Reality which
 lies at the bottom of all Appearance.' To the
 mass of men no such Divine Idea is recognisable
 in the world; they live merely, says Fichte, among
 the superficialities, practicalities and shows of 15
 the world, not dreaming that there is anything
 livine under them. But the Man of Letters is
 sent hither specially that he may discern for him-
 self, and make manifest to us, this same Divine
 Idea: in every new generation it will manifest 20
 itself in a new dialect; and he is there for the
 purpose of doing that. Such is Fichte's phraseol-
 ogy; with which we need not quarrel. It is his
 way of naming what I here, by other words, am
 striving imperfectly to name; what there is at 25
 present no name for: The unspeakable Divine
 Significance, full of splendour, of wonder and ter-
 ror, that lies in the being of every man, of every
 thing, — the Presence of the God who made every
 man and thing. Mahomet taught this in his dia- 30
 lect; Odin in his: it is the thing which all thinking
 hearts, in one dialect or another, are here to teach.

Fichte calls the Man of Letters, therefore, a Prophet, or as he prefers to phrase it, a Priest, continually unfolding the Godlike to men: Men of Letters are a Perpetual Priesthood, from age to age, teaching all men that a God is still present in their life; that all 'Appearance,' whatsoever we see in the world, is but as a vesture for the 'Divine Idea of the World,' for 'that which lies at the bottom of Appearance.' In the true Literary Man there is thus ever, acknowledged or not by the world, a sacredness: he is the light of the world; the world's Priest: — guiding it, like a sacred Pillar of Fire, in its dark pilgrimage through the waste of Time. Fichte discriminates with sharp zeal the true Literary Man, what we here call the *Hero* as Man of Letters, from multitudes of false unheroic. Whoever lives not wholly in this Divine Idea, or living partially in it, struggles not, as for the one good, to live wholly in it, — he is, let him live where else he like, in what pomps and prosperities he like, no Literary Man; he is, says Fichte, a 'Bungler, *Stümper*.' Or at best, if he belong to the prosaic provinces, he may be a 'Hodman'; Fichte even calls him elsewhere a 'Nonentity,' and has in short no mercy for him, no wish that he should continue happy among us! This is Fichte's notion of the Man of Letters. It means, in its own form, precisely what we here mean.

In this point of view, I consider that, for the last hundred years, by far the notablest of all Literary Men is Fichte's countryman, Goethe. To that man too, in a strange way, there was given what we

may call a life in the Divine Idea of the World ;
 vision of the inward divine mystery : and strangely,
 out of his Books, the world rises imaged once more
 as godlike, the workmanship and temple of a God.
 Illuminated all, not in fierce impure fire-splendour 5
 as of Mahomet, but in mild celestial radiance ;—
 really a Prophecy in these most unprophetic times ;
 to my mind, by far the greatest, though one of the
 quietest, among all the great things that have come
 to pass in them. Our chosen specimen of the Hero 10
 as Literary Man would be this Goethe. And it
 were a very pleasant plan for me here to discourse
 of his heroism : for I consider him to be a true
 Hero ; heroic in what he said and did, and perhaps
 still more in what he did not say and did not do ; 15
 to me a noble spectacle : a great heroic ancient
 man, speaking and keeping silence as an ancient
 Hero, in the guise of a most modern, high-bred,
 high-cultivated Man of Letters ! We have had no
 such spectacle ; no man capable of affording such, 20
 for the last hundred-and-fifty years.

But at present, such is the general state of
 knowledge about Goethe, it were worse than useless
 to attempt speaking of him in this case. Speak as
 I might, Goethe, to the great majority of you, 25
 would remain problematic, vague ; no impression
 but a false one could be realised. Him we must
 leave to future times. Johnson, Burns, Rousseau,
 three great figures from a prior time, from a far
 inferior state of circumstances, will suit us better 30
 here. Three men of the Eighteenth Century ; the
 conditions of their life far more resemble what

those of ours still are in England, than what Goethe's in Germany were. Alas, these men did not conquer like him; they fought bravely, and fell. They were not heroic bringers of the light, but heroic
5 seekers of it. They lived under galling conditions; struggling as under mountains of impediment, and could not unfold themselves into clearness, or victorious interpretation of that 'Divine Idea.' It is rather the *Tombs* of three Literary Heroes that
10 I have to show you. There are the monumental heaps, under which three spiritual giants lie buried. Very mournful, but also great and full of interest for us. We will linger by them for a while.

15 Complaint is often made, in these times, of what we call the disorganised condition of society: how ill many arranged forces of society fulfil their work; how many powerful forces are seen working in a wasteful, chaotic, altogether unarranged manner. It is too just a complaint, as we all know.
20 But perhaps if we look at this of Books and the Writers of Books, we shall find here, as it were, the summary of all other disorganisation; — a sort of *heart*, from which, and to which, all other confusion circulates in the world! Considering what
25 Book-writers do in the world, and what the world does with Book-writers, I should say, It is the most anomalous thing the world at present has to show. — We should get into a sea far beyond sounding, did we attempt to give account of this: but we must glance at it for the sake of our subject.

worst element in the life of these three Literary Heroes was, that they found their business and position such a chaos. On the beaten road there is tolerable travelling; but it is sore work, and many have to perish, fashioning a path through the im- 5 passable!

Our pious Fathers, feeling well what importance lay in the speaking of man to men, founded churches, made endowments, regulations; everywhere in the civilised world there is a Pulpit, 10 environed with all manner of complex dignified appurtenances and furtherances, that therefrom a man with the tongue may, to best advantage, address his fellow-men. They felt that this was the most important thing; that without this there 15 was no good thing. It is a right pious work, that of theirs; beautiful to behold! But now with the art of Writing, with the art of Printing, a total change has come over that business. The Writer of a Book, is not he a Preacher preaching not to 20 this parish or that, on this day or that, but to all men in all times and places? Surely it is of the last importance that *he* do his work right, whoever do it wrong; — that the *eye* report not falsely, for then all the other members are astray! Well; 25 how he may do his work, whether he do it right or wrong, or do it at all, is a point which no man in the world has taken the pains to think of. To a certain shopkeeper, trying to get some money for his books, if lucky, he is of some importance; to 30 no other man of any. Whence he came, whither he is bound, by what ways he arrived, by what he

might be furthered on his course, no one asks. He is an accident in society. He wanders like a wild Ishmaelite, in a world of which he is as the spiritual light, either the guidance or the misguidance!

- 5 Certainly the Art of Writing is the most miraculous of all things man has devised. Odin's *Runes* were the first form of the work of a Hero; *Books*, written words, are still miraculous *Runes*, the latest form! In Books lies the *soul* of the whole
- 10 Past Time; the articulate audible voice of the Past, when the body and material substance of it has altogether vanished like a dream. Mighty fleets and armies, harbours and arsenals, vast cities, high-domed, many-engined, — they are precious, great:
- 15 but what do they become? Agamemnon, the many Agamemnons, Pericleses, and their Greece; all is gone now to some ruined fragments, dumb mournful wrecks and blocks: but the Books of Greece! There Greece, to every thinker, still very literally
- 20 lives; can be called-up again into life. No magic *Rune* is stranger than a Book. All that Mankind has done, thought, gained or been: it is lying as in magic preservation in the pages of Books. They are the chosen possession of men.
- 25 Do not Books still accomplish *miracles*, as *Runes* were fabled to do? They persuade men. Not the wretchedest circulating-library novel, which foolish girls thumb and con in remote villages, but will help to regulate the actual practical weddings
- 30 and households of those foolish girls. So 'Celia' felt, so 'Clifford' acted: the foolish Theorem of Life, stamped into those young brains, comes out

as a solid Practice one day. Consider whether any *Rune* in the wildest imagination of Mythologist ever did such wonders as, on the actual firm Earth, some Books have done! What built St. Paul's Cathedral? Look at the heart of the matter, it was that divine Hebrew Book,—the word partly of the man Moses, an outlaw tending his Midianitish herds, four-thousand years ago, in the wildernesses of Sinai! It is the strangest of things, yet nothing is truer. With the art of Writing, of which Printing is a simple, an inevitable and comparatively insignificant corollary, the true reign of miracles for mankind commenced. It related, with a wondrous new contiguity and perpetual closeness, the Past and Distant with the Present in time and place; all times and all places with this our actual Here and Now. All things were altered for men; all modes of important work of men: teaching, preaching, governing, and all else.

To look at Teaching, for instance. Universities are a notable, respectable product of the modern ages. Their existence too is modified, to the very basis of it, by the existence of Books. Universities arose while there were yet no Books procurable; while a man, for a single Book, had to give an estate of land. That, in those circumstances, when a man had some knowledge to communicate, he should do it by gathering the learners round him, face to face, was a necessity for him. If you wanted to know what Abelard knew, you must go and listen to Abelard. Thousands, as many as thirty-thousand, went to hear Abelard and that

metaphysical theology of his. And now for any other teacher who had also something of his own to teach, there was a great convenience opened: so many thousands eager to learn were already assembled yonder; of all places the best place for him was that. For any third teacher it was better still; and grew ever the better, the more teachers there came. It only needed now that the King took notice of this new phenomenon; combined or
10 agglomerated the various schools into one school; gave it edifices, privileges, encouragements, and named it *Universitas*, or School of all Sciences: the University of Paris, in its essential characters, was there. The model of all subsequent Universities;
15 which down even to these days, for six centuries now, have gone on to found themselves. Such, I conceive, was the origin of Universities.

It is clear, however, that with this simple circumstance, facility of getting Books, the whole
20 conditions of the business from top to bottom were changed. Once invent Printing, you metamorphosed all Universities, or superseded them! The Teacher needed not now to gather men personally round him, that he might *speak* to them what he
25 knew: print it in a Book, and all learners far and wide, for a trifle, had it each at his own fireside, much more effectually to learn it! — Doubtless there is still peculiar virtue in Speech; even writers of Books may still, in some circumstances, find it
30 convenient to speak also, — witness our present meeting here! There is, one would say, and must ever remain while man has a tongue, a distinct province

r Speech as well as for Writing and Printing. regard to all things this must remain; to Universities among others. But the limits of the two have nowhere yet been pointed out, ascertained; much less put in practice; the University which could completely take-in that great new fact, of the existence of Printed Books, and stand on a level footing for the Nineteenth Century as the Paris one did for the Thirteenth, has not yet come into existence. If we think of it, all that a University, or final highest School can do for us, is still but what the first School began doing, — teach us to *read*. We learn to *read*, in various languages, in various sciences; we learn the alphabet and letters of all manner of Books. But the place where we are to get knowledge, even theoretic knowledge, is the Books themselves! It depends on what we read, after all manner of Professors have done their best for us. The true University of these days is Collection of Books. 20

But to the Church itself, as I hinted already, all is changed, in its preaching, in its working, by the introduction of Books. The Church is the working recognised Union of our Priests or Prophets, of those who by wise teaching guide the souls of men. While there was no Writing, even while there was no Easy-writing or *Printing*, the preaching of the voice was the natural sole method of performing this. But now with Books! — He that can write a true Book, to persuade England, is not he the Bishop and Archbishop, the Primate of England and of All England? I many a time say, the 25 30

writers of Newspapers, Pamphlets, Poems, Books, these *are* the real working effective Church of a modern country. Nay not only our preaching, but even our worship, is not it too accomplished by
5 means of Printed Books? The noble sentiment which a gifted soul has clothed for us in melodious words, which brings melody into our hearts,—is not this essentially, if we will understand it, of the nature of worship? There are many, in all coun-
10 tries, who, in this confused time, have no other method of worship. He who, in any way, shows us better than we knew before that a lily of the fields is beautiful, does he not show it us as an effluence of the Fountain of all Beauty; as the
15 *handwriting*, made visible there, of the great Maker of the Universe? He has sung for us, made us sing with him, a little verse of a sacred Psalm. Essentially so. How much more he who sings, who says, or in any way brings home to our heart
20 the noble doings, feelings, darings and endurances of a brother man! He has verily touched our hearts as with a live coal *from the altar*. Perhaps there is no worship more authentic.

Literature, so far as it is Literature, is an 'apoca-
25 lypse of Nature,' a revealing of the 'open secret.' It may well enough be named, in Fichte's style, a 'continuous revelation' of the Godlike in the Terrestrial and Common. The Godlike does ever, in very truth, endure there; is brought out, now in this
30 dialect, now in that, with various degrees of clearness: all true gifted Singers and Speakers *are*, consciously or unconsciously, doing so. The *dark*

mful indignation of a Byron, so wayward and
 erse, may have touches of it; nay the withered
 kery of a French sceptic, — his mockery of the
 e, a love and worship of the True. How much
 e the sphere-harmony of a Shakspeare, of a 5
 the; the cathedral-music of a Milton! They
 something too, those humble genuine lark-notes
 Burns, — skylark, starting from the humble
 ow, far overhead into the blue depths, and
 ing to us so genuinely there! For all true 10
 ing is of the nature of worship; as indeed all
working may be said to be, — whereof such
ing is but the record, and fit melodious repre-
 ation, to us. Fragments of a real 'Church
 ury' and 'Body of Homilies,' strangely disguised 15
 the common eye, are to be found weltering in
 huge froth-ocean of Printed Speech we loosely
 Literature! Books are our Church too.

r turning now to the Government of men.
 enagemote, old Parliament, was a great thing. 20
 affairs of the nation were there deliberated
 decided; what we were to *do* as a nation. But
 not, though the name Parliament subsists, the
 iamentary debate go on now, everywhere and
 ll times, in a far more comprehensive way, *out* 25
 Parliament altogether? Burke said there were
 ee Estates in Parliament; but, in the Reporters'
 lery yonder, there sat a *Fourth Estate* more im-
 ant far than they all. It is not a figure of
 ch, or a witty saying; it is a literal fact, — very 30
 mentous to us in these times. Literature is our
 iament too. Printing, which comes necessarily

out of Writing, I say often, is equivalent to Democracy: invent Writing, Democracy is inevitable. Writing brings Printing; brings universal everyday extempore Printing as we see at present. Whoever
5 can speak, speaking now to the whole nation, becomes a power, a branch of government, with inalienable weight in law-making, in all acts of authority. It matters not what rank he has, what revenues or garnitures: the requisite thing is, that he have a
10 tongue which others will listen to; this and nothing more is requisite. The nation is governed by all that has tongue in the nation: Democracy is virtually *there*. Add only, that whatsoever power exists will have itself, by and by, organised; working secretly
15 under bandages, obscurations, obstructions, it will never rest till it get to work free, unencumbered, visible to all. Democracy virtually extant will insist on becoming palpably extant. —

On all sides, are we not driven to the conclusion
20 that, of the things which man can do or make here below, by far the most momentous, wonderful and worthy are the things we call Books! Those poor bits of rag-paper with black ink on them; — from the Daily Newspaper to the sacred Hebrew Book,
25 what have they not done, what are they not doing! — For indeed, whatever be the outward form of the thing (bits of paper, as we say, and black ink), is it not verily, at bottom, the highest act of man's faculty that produces a Book? It is the *Thought* of man;
30 the true thaumaturgic virtue; by which man works all things whatsoever. All that he does, and brings to pass, is the vesture of a Thought. This London

lity, with all its houses, palaces, steam-engines, cathedrals, and huge immeasurable traffic and tumult, what is it but a Thought, but millions of Thoughts made into One; — a huge immeasurable Spirit of THOUGHT, embodied in brick, in iron, 5 smoke, dust, Palaces, Parliaments, Hackney Coaches, Katherine Docks, and the rest of it! Not a brick was made but some man had to *think* of the making of that brick. — The thing we called ‘bits of paper with traces of black ink,’ is the *purest* embodiment 10 a Thought of man can have. No wonder it is, in all ways, the activist and noblest.

All this, of the importance and supreme importance of the Man of Letters in modern Society, and how the Press is to such a degree superseding 15 the Pulpit, the Senate, the *Senatus Academicus* and much else, has been admitted for a good while; and recognised often enough, in late times, with a sort of sentimental triumph and wonderment. It seems to me, the Sentimental by and by will have to give 20 place to the Practical. If Men of Letters *are* so incalculably influential, actually performing such work for us from age to age, and even from day to day, then I think we may conclude that Men of Letters will not always wander like unrecognised 25 unregulated Ishmaelites among us! Whatsoever thing, as I said above, has virtual unnoticed power will cast-off its wrappages, bandages, and step-forth one day with palpably articulated, universally visible power. That one man wear the clothes, and 30 take the wages, of a function which is done by quite another: there can be no profit in this; this

is not right, it is wrong. And yet, alas, the *making* of it right,—what a business, for long times to come! Sure enough, this that we call Organisation of the Literary Guild is still a great way off, encumbered with all manner of complexities. If you asked me what were the best possible organisation for the Men of Letters in modern society; the arrangement of furtherance and regulation, grounded the most accurately on the actual facts of their position and of the world's position,—I should beg to say that the problem far exceeded my faculty! It is not one man's faculty; it is that of many successive men turned earnestly upon it, that will bring-out even an approximate solution. What the best arrangement were, none of us could say. But if you ask, Which is the worst? I answer: This which we now have, that Chaos should sit umpire in it; this is the worst. To the best, or any good one, there is yet a long way.

One remark I must not omit, That royal or parliamentary grants of money are by no means the chief thing wanted! To give our Men of Letters stipends, endowments and all furtherance of cash, will do little towards the business. On the whole, one is weary of hearing about the omnipotence of money. I will say rather that, for a genuine man, it is no evil to be poor; that there ought to be Literary Men poor,—to show whether they are genuine or not! Mendicant Orders, bodies of good men doomed to *beg*, were instituted in the Christian Church; a most natural and even necessary development of the spirit of Christianity. It was

tself founded on Poverty, on Sorrow, Contradiction,
 Crucifixion, every species of worldly Distress and
 Degradation. We may say, that he who has not
 known those things, and learned from them the
 priceless lessons they have to teach, has missed a 5
 good opportunity of schooling. To beg, and go
 barefoot, in coarse woollen cloak with a rope round
 your loins, and be despised of all the world, was
 no beautiful business;—nor an honourable one in
 any eye, till the nobleness of those who did so 10
 had made it honoured of some!

Begging is not in our course at the present time:
 but for the rest of it, who will say that a Johnson
 is not perhaps the better for being poor? It is
 needful for him, at all rates, to know that outward 15
 profit, that success of any kind is *not* the goal he
 has to aim at. Pride, vanity, ill-conditioned egoism
 of all sorts, are bred in his heart, as in every heart;
 need, above all, to be cast-out of his heart,—to be,
 with whatever pangs, torn-out of it, cast-forth from 20
 it, as a thing worthless. Byron, born rich and noble,
 made-out even less than Burns, poor and plebeian.
 Who knows but, in that same 'best possible organi-
 sation' as yet far off, Poverty may still enter as an
 important element? What if our Men of Letters, 25
 men setting-up to be Spiritual Heroes, were still
then, as they now are, a kind of 'involuntary mo-
 nastic order'; bound still to this same ugly Poverty,
 —till they had tried what was in it too, till they
 had learned to make it too do for them! Money, 30
 in truth, can do much, but it cannot do all. We
 must know the province of it, and confine it there;

and even spurn it back, when it wishes to go farther.

Besides, were the money-furtherances, the proper season for them, the fit assigner of them, all settled, — how is the Burns to be recognised that men these? He must pass through the ordeal, and prove himself. *This* ordeal; this wild welter of a chaos which is called Literary Life: this too is a kind of ordeal! There is clear truth in the idea that a struggle from the lower classes of society, towards the upper regions and rewards of society, must ever continue. Strong men are born there, who ought to stand elsewhere than there. The manifold, inextricably complex, universal struggle of these constitutes, and must constitute, what is called the progress of society. For Men of Letters, as for all other sorts of men. How to regulate that struggle? There is the whole question. To leave it as it is, at the mercy of blind Chance; a whirl of distracted atoms, one cancelling the other; one of the thousand arriving saved, nine-hundred-and-ninety-nine lost by the way; your royal Johnson languishing inactive in garrets, or harnessed to the yoke of Printer Cave; your Burns dying broken-hearted as a Gauger; your Rousseau driven into mad exasperation, kindling French Revolutions by his paradoxes: this, as we said, is clearly enough the *worst* regulation. The *best*, alas, is far from us!

And yet there can be no doubt but it is coming; advancing on us, as yet hidden in the bosom of centuries: this is a prophecy one can risk. For so soon as men get to discern the importance of a

thing, they do infallibly set about arranging it, facilitating, forwarding it; and rest not till, in some approximate degree, they have accomplished that. I say, of all Priesthoods, Aristocracies, Governing Classes at present extant in the world, there is no class comparable for importance to that Priesthood of the Writers of Books. This is a fact which he who runs may read, — and draw inferences from. "Literature will take care of itself," answered Mr. Pitt, when applied to for some help for Burns. "Yes," adds Mr. Southey, "it will take care of itself; *and of you too*, if you do not look to it!"

The result to individual Men of Letters is not the momentous one; they are but individuals, an infinitesimal fraction of the great body; they can struggle on, and live or else die, as they have been wont. But it deeply concerns the whole society, whether it will set its *light* on high places, to walk thereby; or trample it under foot, and scatter it in all ways of wild waste (not without conflagration), as heretofore! Light is the one thing wanted for the world. Put wisdom in the head of the world, the world will fight its battle victoriously, and be the best world man can make it. I call this anomaly of a disorganic Literary Class the heart of all other anomalies, at once product and parent; some good arrangement for that would be as the *punctum saliens* of a new vitality and just arrangement for all. Already, in some European countries, in France, in Prussia, one traces some beginnings of an arrangement for the Literary mass; indicating the gradual possibility of such.

I believe that it is possible; that it will have been possible.

By far the most interesting fact I hear of the Chinese is one on which we cannot arrive at clearness, but which excites endless curiosity in the dim state: this namely, that they do attempt to make their Men of Letters their Governors would be rash to say, one understood how this was done, or with what degree of success it was. All such things must be very *unsuccessful*; a small degree of success is precious; the very attempt how precious! There does seem to be over China, a more or less active search everywhere to discover the men of talent that grow up in the young generation. Schools there are for every foolish sort of training, yet still a sort of youths who distinguish themselves in the school are promoted into favourable stations higher, that they may still more distinguish themselves, — forward and forward: it appears out of these that the Official Persons, and intelligent Governors, are taken. These are they who they *try* first, whether they can govern or not. And surely with the best hope: for they are men that have already shown intellect. Try those they have not governed or administered as perhaps they cannot; but there is no doubt *have* some Understanding. — without which none can! Neither is Understanding a *tool*, as we are too apt to figure; 'it is a *hand* which can handle any tool.' Try these men: they are of all kinds the best worth trying. — Surely there is no

of government, constitution, revolution, social apparatus or arrangement, that I know of in this world, so promising to one's scientific curiosity as this. The man of intellect at the top of affairs: this is the aim of all constitutions and revolutions, 5 if they have any aim. For the man of true intellect, as I assert and believe always, is the noble-hearted man withal, the true, just, humane and valiant man. Get *him* for governor, all is got; fail to get him, though you had Constitutions plentiful as blackberries, and a Parliament in every village, there is nothing yet got!— 10

These things look strange, truly; and are not such as we commonly speculate upon. But we are fallen into strange times; these things will require 15 to be speculated upon; to be rendered practicable, to be in some way put in practice. These, and many others. On all hands of us, there is the announcement, audible enough, that the old Empire of Routine has ended; that to say a thing has long 20 been, is no reason for its continuing to be. The things which have been are fallen into decay, are fallen into incompetence; large masses of mankind, in every society of our Europe, are no longer capable of living at all by the things which have been. 25 When millions of men can no longer by their utmost exertion gain food for themselves, and 'the third man for thirty-six weeks each year is short of third-rate potatoes,' the things which have been must decidedly prepare to alter themselves!— 30 I will now quit this of the organisation of Men of Letters.

Alas, the evil that pressed heaviest on those Literary Heroes of ours was not the want of organisation for Men of Letters, but a far deeper one; out of which, indeed, this and so many other evils for the Literary Man, and for all men, had, as from their fountain, taken rise. That our Hero as Man of Letters had to travel without highway, companionless, through an inorganic chaos, — and to leave his own life and faculty lying there, as a partial contribution towards *pushing* some highway through it: this, had not his faculty itself been so perverted and paralysed, he might have put-up with, might have considered to be but the common lot of Heroes. His fatal misery was the *spiritual paralysis*, so we may name it, of the Age in which his life lay; whereby his life too, do what he might, was half-paralysed! The Eighteenth was a *Sceptical* Century; in which little word there is a whole Pandora's Box of miseries. Scepticism means not intellectual Doubt alone, but moral Doubt; all sorts of infidelity, insincerity, spiritual paralysis. Perhaps, in few centuries that one could specify since the world began, was a life of Heroism more difficult for a man. That was not an age of Faith, — an age of Heroes! The very possibility of Heroism had been, as it were, formally abnegated in the minds of all. Heroism was gone forever; Triviality, Formulism and Commonplace were come forever. The 'age of miracles' had been, or perhaps had not been; but it was not any longer. An effete world; wherein Wonder, Greatness, Godhood could not now dwell; — in one word, a godless world!

How mean, dwarfish are their ways of thinking, in this time,—compared not with the Christian Shakspeares and Miltons, but with the old Pagan Skalds, with any species of believing men! The living TREE Igdrasil, with the melodious prophetic waving of its world-wide boughs, deep-rooted as Hela, has died-out into the clanking of a World-MACHINE. 'Tree' and 'Machine': contrast these two things. I, for my share, declare the world to be no machine! I say that it does not go by wheel-and-pinion 'motives,' self-interests, checks, balances; that there is something far other in it than the clank of spinning-jennies, and parliamentary majorities; and, on the whole, that it is not a machine at all!—The old Norse Heathen had a truer notion of God's-world than these poor Machine-Sceptics: the old Heathen Norse were *sincere* men. But for these poor Sceptics there was no sincerity, no truth. Half-truth and hearsay was called truth. Truth, for most men, meant plausibility; to be measured by the number of votes you could get. They had lost any notion that sincerity was possible, or of what sincerity was. How many Plausibilities asking, with unaffected surprise and the air of offended virtue, What! am not I sincere? Spiritual Paralysis, I say, nothing left but a Mechanical life, was the characteristic of that century. For the common man, unless happily he stood *below* his century and belonged to another prior one, it was impossible to be a Believer, a Hero; he lay buried, unconscious, under these baleful influences. To the strongest man, only with infinite struggle and con-

fusion was it possible to work himself half-loose; and lead as it were, in an enchanted, most tragical way, a spiritual death-in-life, and be a Half-Hero!

- Scepticism is the name we give to all this; as the
- 5 chief symptom, as the chief origin of all this. Concerning which so much were to be said! It would take many Discourses, not a small fraction of one Discourse, to state what one feels about that Eighteenth Century and its ways. As indeed this, and
- 10 the like of this, which we now call Scepticism, is precisely the black malady and life-foe, against which all teaching and discoursing since man's life began has directed itself: the battle of Belief against Unbelief is the never-ending battle!
- 15 Neither is it in the way of crimination that one would wish to speak. Scepticism for that century, we must consider as the decay of old ways of believing, the preparation afar off for new better and wider ways, — an inevitable thing. We will not
- 20 blame men for it; we will lament their hard fate. We will understand that destruction of old *forms* is not destruction of everlasting *substances*; that Scepticism, as sorrowful and hateful as we see it, is not an end but a beginning.
- 25 The other day speaking, without prior purpose that way, of Bentham's theory of man and man's life, I chanced to call it a more beggarly one than Mahomet's. I am bound to say, now when it is once uttered, that such is my deliberate opinion.
- 30 Not that one would mean offence against the man Jeremy Bentham, or those who respect and believe him. Bentham himself, and even the creed of

Bentham, seems to me comparatively worthy of praise. It is a determinate *being* what all the world, in a cowardly half-and-half manner, was tending to be. Let us have the crisis; we shall either have death or the cure. I call this gross, steam-engine Utilitarianism an approach towards new Faith. It was a laying-down of cant; a saying to oneself: "Well then, this world is a dead iron machine, the god of it Gravitation and selfish Hunger; let us see what, by checking and balancing, and good adjustment of tooth and pinion, can be made of it!" Benthamism has something complete, manful, in such fearless committal of itself to what it finds true; you may call it Heroic, though a Heroism with its *eyes* put out! It is the culminating point, and fearless ultimatum, of what lay in the half-and-half state, pervading man's whole existence in that Eighteenth Century. It seems to me, all deniers of Godhood, and all lip-believers of it, are bound to be Benthamites, if they have courage and honesty. Benthamism is an *eyeless* Heroism: the Human Species, like a hapless blinded Samson grinding in the Philistine Mill, clasps convulsively the pillars of its Mill; brings huge ruin down, but ultimately deliverance withal. Of Bentham I meant to say no harm.

But this I do say, and would wish all men to know and lay to heart, that he who discerns nothing but Mechanism in the Universe has in the fatalest way missed the secret of the Universe altogether. That all Godhood should vanish out of men's conception of this Universe seems to me pre-

cisely the most brutal error, — I will not disparage
Heathenism by calling it a Heathen error, — that
men could fall into. It is not true; it is false at
the very heart of it. A man who thinks so will
5 think *wrong* about all things in the world; this
original sin will vitiate all other conclusions he
can form. One might call it the most lamentable
of Delusions, — not forgetting Witchcraft itself!
Witchcraft worshipped at least a living Devil; but
10 this worships a dead iron Devil; no God, not even
a Devil! — Whatsoever is noble, divine, inspired,
drops thereby out of life. There remains every-
where in life a despicable *caput-mortuum*; the me-
chanical hull, all soul fled out of it. How can a
15 man act heroically? The 'Doctrine of Motives'
will teach him that it is, under more or less di-
guise, nothing but a wretched love of Pleasure, fear
of Pain; that Hunger, of applause, of cash, of
whatsoever victual it may be, is the ultimate fact
20 of man's life. Atheism, in brief; — which does in-
deed frightfully punish itself. The man, I say, is
become spiritually a paralytic man; this godlike
Universe a dead mechanical steam-engine, all work-
ing by motives, checks, balances, and I know not
25 what; wherein, as in the detestable belly of some
Phalaris'-Bull of his own contriving, he the poor
Phalaris sits miserably dying!

Belief I define to be the healthy act of a man's
mind. It is a mysterious indescribable process,
30 that of getting to believe; — indescribable, as all
vital acts are. We have our mind given us, not
that it may cavil and argue, but that it may see

into something, give us clear belief and understanding about something, whereon we are then to proceed to act. Doubt, truly, is not itself a crime. Certainly we do not rush out, clutch-up the first thing we find, and straightway believe that! All 5
 manner of doubt, inquiry, *σκέψις* as it is named, about all manner of objects, dwells in every reasonable mind. It is the mystic working of the mind, on the object it is *getting* to know and believe. Belief comes out of all this, above ground, like the 10
 tree from its hidden roots. But now if, even on common things, we require that a man keep his doubts *silent*, and not babble of them till they in some measure become affirmations or denials; how much more in regard to the highest things, impos- 15
 sible to speak-of in words at all! That a man parade his doubt, and get to imagine that debating and logic (which means at best only the manner of *telling* us your thought, your belief or disbelief, about a thing) is the triumph and true work of 20
 what intellect he has: alas, this is as if you should *overturn* the tree, and instead of green boughs, leaves and fruits, show us ugly taloned roots turned up into the air, — and no growth, only death and misery going-on! 25

For the Scepticism, as I said, is not intellectual only; it is moral also; a chronic atrophy and disease of the whole soul. A man lives by believing something; not by debating and arguing about many things. A sad case for him when all that 30
 he can manage to believe is something he can button in his pocket, and with one or the other

organ eat and digest! Lower than that he will not get. We call those ages in which he gets so low the mouldiest, sickest and meanest of all ages. The world's heart is palsied, sick: how can any mind or it be whole? Genuine Acting ceases in all departments of the world's work; dextrous Similitude of Acting begins. The world's wages are pocketed, the world's work is not done. Heroes have gone-out: Quacks have come-in. Accordingly, what Century, since the end of the Roman world, which first was a time of scepticism, simulacra and universal decadence, so abounds with Quacks as that Eighteenth? Consider them, with their tumid sentimental vapouring about virtue, benevolence, — the wretched Quack-squadron, Cagliostro at the head of them! Few men were without quackery; they had got to consider it a necessary ingredient and amalgam for truth. Chatham, our brave Chatham himself, comes down to the House, all 20 wrapt and bandaged; he 'has crawled out in great bodily suffering,' and so on;—*forgets*, says Walpole, that he is acting the sick man; in the fire of debate, snatches his arm from the sling, and oratorically swings and brandishes it! Chatham himself lives 25 the strangest mimetic life, half-hero, half-quack, all along. For indeed the world is full of dupes; and you have to gain the *world's* suffrage! How the duties of the world will be done in that case, what quantities of error, which means failure, 30 which means sorrow and misery, to some and to many, will gradually accumulate in all provinces of the world's business, we need not compute.

It seems to me, you lay your finger here on the heart of the world's maladies, when you call it a Sceptical World. An insincere world; a godless untruth of a world! It is out of this, as I consider, that the whole tribe of social pestilences, French 5
Revolutions, Chartisms, and what not, have derived their being,—their chief necessity to be. This must alter. Till this alter, nothing can beneficially alter. My one hope of the world, my inexpugnable consolation in looking at the miseries of the world, 10
is that this is altering. Here and there one does now find a man who knows, as of old, that this world is a Truth, and no Plausibility and Falsity; that he himself is alive, not dead or paralytic; and that the world is alive, instinct with Godhood, 15
beautiful and awful, even as in the beginning of days! One man once knowing this, many men, all men, must by and by come to know it. It lies there clear, for whosoever will take the *spectacles* off his eyes and honestly look, to know! For such 20
a man the Unbelieving Century, with its unblessed Products, is already past; a new century is already come. The old unblessed Products and Performances, as solid as they look, are Phantasms, preparing speedily to vanish. To this and the other 25
noisy, very great-looking Simulacrum with the whole world huzzahing at its heels, he can say, composedly stepping aside: Thou art not *true*; thou art not extant, only semblant; go thy way!—Yes, hollow Formulism, gross Benthamism, and other 30
unheroic atheistic Insincerity is visibly and even rapidly declining. An unbelieving Eighteenth Cen-

5 tury is but an exception,—such as now. and then occurs. I prophesy that the world will once more become *sincere*; a believing world; with *many* Heroes in it, a heroic world! It will then be a victorious world; never till then.

Or indeed what of the world and its victories? Men speak too much about the world. Each one of us here, let the world go how it will, and be victorious or not victorious, has he not a Life of his own to lead? One Life; a little gleam of Time between two Eternities; no second chance to us forevermore! It were well for us to live not as fools and simulacra, but as wise and realities. The world's being saved will not save us; nor the world's being lost destroy us. We should look to ourselves: there is great merit here in the 'duty of staying at home'! And, on the whole, to say truth, I never heard of 'worlds' being 'saved' in any other way. That mania of saving worlds is itself a piece of the Eighteenth Century with its windy sentimentalism. Let us not follow it too far. For the saving of the *world* I will trust confidently to the Maker of the world; and look a little to my own saving, which I am more competent to!—In brief, for the world's sake, and for our own, we will rejoice greatly that Scepticism, Insincerity, Mechanical Atheism, with all their poison-dews, are going, and as good as gone. —

Now it was under such conditions, in those times of Johnson, that our Men of Letters had to live. Times in which there was properly no truth in life. Old truths had fallen nigh dumb; the new lay yet

THE

hidden

below

continue

the work

ever

be a

fire

with

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

more

I have already written of these three Literary Heroes, expressly or incidentally; what I suppose is known to most of you; what need not be spoken or written a second time. They concern us here
5 as the singular *Prophets* of that singular age; for such they virtually were; and the aspect they and their world exhibit, under this point of view, might lead us into reflections enough! I call them, all three, Genuine Men more or less; faithfully, for
10 most part unconsciously, struggling, to be genuine, and plant themselves on the everlasting truth of things. This to a degree that eminently distinguishes them from the poor artificial mass of their contemporaries; and renders them worthy to be
15 considered as Speakers, in some measure, of the everlasting truth, as Prophets in that age of theirs. By Nature herself a noble necessity was laid on them to be so. They were men of such magnitude that they could not live on unrealities, — clouds,
20 froth and all inanity gave-way under them: there was no footing for them but on firm earth; no rest or regular motion for them, if they got not footing there. To a certain extent, they were Sons of Nature once more in an age of Artifice; once more,
25 Original Men.

As for Johnson, I have always considered him to be, by nature, one of our great English souls. A strong and noble man; so much left undeveloped in him to the last: in a kindlier element what might
30 he not have been, — Poet, Priest, sovereign Ruler! On the whole, a man must not complain of his 'element,' of his 'time,' or the like; it is thriftless

ork doing so. His time is bad: well then, he is
 ere to make it better!—Johnson's youth was
 or, isolated, hopeless, very miserable. Indeed, it
 es not seem possible that, in any the favourable
 atward circumstances, Johnson's life could have 5
 en other than a painful one. The world might
 ave had more of profitable *work* out of him, or
 ss; but his *effort* against the world's work could
 ever have been a light one. Nature, in return for
 is nobleness, had said to him, Live in an element 10
 f diseased sorrow. Nay, perhaps the sorrow and
 he nobleness were intimately and even inseparably
 onnected with each other. At all events, poor
 ohnson had to go about girt with continual hypo-
 ondria, physical and spiritual pain. Like a 15
 Hercules with the burning Nessus'-shirt on him,
 which shoots-in on him dull incurable misery: the
 Nessus'-shirt not to be stript-off, which is his own
 natural skin! In this manner *he* had to live.
 Figure him there, with his scrofulous diseases, with 20
 his great greedy heart, and unspeakable chaos of
 thoughts; stalking mournful as a stranger in this
 Earth; eagerly devouring what spiritual thing he
 could come at: school-languages and other merely
 grammatical stuff, if there were nothing better! 25
 The largest soul that was in all England; and pro-
 vision made for it of 'fourpence-halfpenny a day.'
 Yet a giant invincible soul; a true man's. One
 remembers always that story of the shoes at Ox-
 ford: the rough, seamy-faced, rawboned College 30
 Servitor stalking about, in winter-season, with his
 shoes worn-out; how the charitable Gentleman

Commoner secretly places a new pair at his door; and the rawboned Servitor, lifting them, looking at them near, with his dim eyes, with what thoughts,— pitches them out of the window! Wet feet, mud, 5 frost, hunger or what you will; but not beggary: we cannot stand beggary! Rude stubborn self-help here; a whole world of squalor, rudeness, confused misery and want, yet of nobleness and manfulness withal. It is a type of the man's life, this 10 pitching-away of the shoes. An original man;— not a secondhand, borrowing or begging man. Let us stand on our own basis, at any rate! On such shoes as we ourselves can get. On frost and mud, if you will, but honestly on that;— on the reality 15 and substance which Nature gives *us*, not on the semblance, on the thing she has given another than us! —

And yet with all this rugged pride of manhood and self-help, was there ever soul more tenderly 20 affectionate, loyally submissive to what was really higher than he? Great souls are always loyally submissive, reverent to what is over them; only small mean souls are otherwise. I could not find a better proof of what I said the other day, That the 25 sincere man was by nature the obedient man; that only in a World of Heroes was there loyal Obedience to the Heroic. The essence of *originality* is not that it be *new*: Johnson believed altogether in the old; he found the old opinions credible for him, fit for him; and in a right heroic manner 30 lived under them. He is well worth study in regard to that. For we are to say that Johnson was

far other than a mere man of words and formulas; he was a man of truths and facts. He stood by the old formulas; the happier was it for him that he could so stand: but in all formulas that he could stand by, there needed to be a most genuine substance. Very curious how, in that poor Paper-age, so barren, artificial, thick-quilted with Pedantries, Hearsays, the great Fact of this Universe glared in, forever wonderful, indubitable, unspeakable, divine-infernal, upon this man too! How he harmonised his Formulas with it, how he managed at all under such circumstances: that is a thing worth seeing. A thing 'to be looked at with reverence, with pity, with awe.' That Church of St. Clement Danes, where Johnson still worshipped in the era of Voltaire, is to me a venerable place.

It was in virtue of his *sincerity*, of his speaking still in some sort from the heart of Nature, though in the current artificial dialect, that Johnson was a Prophet. Are not all dialects 'artificial'? Artificial things are not all false;—nay every true Product of Nature will infallibly *shape* itself; we may say all artificial things are, at the starting of them, *true*. What we call 'Formulas' are not in their origin bad; they are indispensably good. Formula is *method*, habitude; found wherever man is found. Formulas fashion themselves as Paths do, as beaten Highways, leading towards some sacred or high object, whither many men are bent. Consider it. One man, full of heartfelt earnest impulse, finds-out a way of doing

cerity.' He has no suspicion of his being particularly sincere,—of his being particularly anything! A hard-struggling, weary-hearted man, or 'scholar' as he calls himself, trying hard to get some honest livelihood in the world, not to starve, but to live— 5 without stealing! A noble unconsciousness is in him. He does not 'engrave *Truth* on his watch-seal'; no, but he stands by truth, speaks by it, works and lives by it. Thus it ever is. Think of it once more. The man whom Nature has appointed to do great things is, first of all, furnished with that openness to Nature which renders him incapable of being *insincere*! To his large, open, deep-feeling heart Nature is a Fact: all hearsay is hearsay; the unspeakable greatness of this Mystery 15 of Life, let him acknowledge it or not, nay even though he seem to forget it or deny it, is ever present to *him*,—fearful and wonderful, on this hand and on that. He has a basis of sincerity; unrecognised, because never questioned or capable 20 of question. Mirabeau, Mahomet, Cromwell, Napoleon: all the Great Men I ever heard-of have this as the primary material of them. Innumerable commonplace men are debating, are talking everywhere their commonplace doctrines, which they 25 have learned by logic, by rote, at secondhand: to that kind of man all this is still nothing. He must have truth; truth which *he* feels to be true. How shall he stand otherwise? His whole soul, at all moments, in all ways, tells him that there is no 30 standing. He is under the noble necessity of being true. Johnson's way of thinking about this world

is not mine, any more than Mahomet's was: but I recognise the everlasting element of heart-sincerity in both; and see with pleasure how neither of them remains ineffectual. Neither of them is as *chaf* sown; in both of them is something which the seed-field will *grow*.

Johnson was a Prophet to his people; preached a Gospel to them,—as all like him always do. The highest Gospel he preached we may describe as a kind of Moral Prudence: 'in a world where much is to be done, and little is to be known,' see how you will *do* it! A thing well worth preaching. 'A world where much is to be done, and little is to be known:' do not sink yourselves in boundless bottomless abysses of Doubt, of wretched god-forgetting Unbelief;—you were miserable then, powerless, mad: how could you *do* or work at all? Such Gospel Johnson preached and taught;—coupled, theoretically and practically, with this other great Gospel, 'Clear your mind of Cant!' Have no trade with Cant: stand on the cold mud in the frosty weather, but let it be in your own *real* torn shoes: 'that will be better for you,' as Mahomet says! I call this, I call these two things *joined together*, a great Gospel, the greatest perhaps that was possible at that time.

Johnson's Writings, which once had such currency and celebrity, are now, as it were, disowned by the young generation. It is not wonderful; Johnson's opinions are fast becoming obsolete: but his style of thinking and of living, we may hope, will never become obsolete. I find in Johnson's

Books the indisputablest traces of a great intellect and great heart;—ever welcome, under what obstructions and perversions soever. They are *sincere* words, those of his; he means things by them. A wondrous buckram style,—the best he could get to then; a measured grandiloquence, stepping or rather stalking along in a very solemn way, grown obsolete now; sometimes a tumid *size* of phraseology not in proportion to the contents of it: all this you will put-up with. For the phraseology, tumid or not, has always *something within it*. So many beautiful styles and books, with *nothing* in them;—a man is a *malefactor* to the world who writes such! *They* are the avoidable kind!—Had Johnson left nothing but his *Dictionary*, one might have traced there a great intellect, a genuine man. Looking to its clearness of definition, its general solidity, honesty, insight and successful method, it may be called the best of all Dictionaries. There is in it a kind of architectural nobleness; it stands there like a great solid square-built edifice, finished, symmetrically complete: you judge that a true Builder did it.

One word, in spite of our haste, must be granted to poor Bozzy. He passes for a mean, inflated, glut-tonous creature; and was so in many senses. Yet the fact of his reverence for Johnson will ever remain noteworthy. The foolish conceited Scotch Laird, the most conceited man of his time, approaching in such awestruck attitude the great dusty irascible Pedagogue in his mean garret there: it is a genuine reverence for Excellence; a *worship* {

for Heroes, at a time when neither Heroes nor worship were surmised to exist. Heroes, it would seem, exist always, and a certain worship of them! We will also take the liberty to deny altogether
 5 that of the witty Frenchman, that no man is a Hero to his valet-de-chambre. Or if so, it is not the Hero's blame, but the Valet's: that his soul, namely, is a mean *valet-soul*! He expects his Hero to advance in royal stage-trappings, with measured
 10 step, trains borne behind him, trumpets sounding before him. It should stand rather, No man can be a *Grand-Monarque* to his valet-de-chambre. Strip your Louis Quatorze of his king-gear, and there is left nothing but a poor forked radish with a
 15 head fantastically carved; — admirable to no valet. The Valet does not know a Hero when he sees him! Alas, no: it requires a kind of *Hero* to do that; — and one of the world's wants, in *this* as in other senses, is for most part want of such.

20 On the whole, shall we not say, that Boswell's admiration was well bestowed; that he could have found no soul in all England so worthy of bending down before? Shall we not say, of this great mournful Johnson too, that he guided his difficult
 25 confused existence wisely; led it *well*, like a right-valiant man? That waste chaos of Authorship by trade: that waste chaos of Scepticism in religion and politics, in life-theory and life-practice; in his poverty, in his dust and dimness, with the sick body
 30 and the rusty coat: he made it do for him, like a brave man. Not wholly without a loadstar in the labyrinth; he had still a loadstar, as the brave all

need to have: with his eye set on that, he would change his course for nothing in these confused vortices of the lower sea of Time. 'To the Spirit of Lies, bearing death and hunger, he would in no wise strike his flag.' Brave old Samuel: *ultimus Romanorum!* 5

Of Rousseau and his Heroism I cannot say so much. He is not what I call a strong man. A morbid, excitable, spasmodic man; at best, intense rather than strong. He had not 'the talent of Silence,' an invaluable talent; which few Frenchmen, or indeed 10 men of any sort in these times, excel in! The suffering man ought really 'to consume his own smoke'; there is no good in emitting *smoke* till you have made it into *fire*,—which, in the metaphorical sense too, all smoke is capable of becoming! Rousseau has not depth or width, not calm force for difficulty; the first characteristic of true greatness. A fundamental mistake to call vehemence and rigidity strength! A man is not strong 15 who takes convulsion-fits; though six men cannot hold him then. He that can walk under the heaviest weight without staggering, he is the strong man. We need forever, especially in these loud-shrieking days, to remind ourselves of that. A 25 man who cannot *hold his peace*, till the time come for speaking and acting, is no right man.

Poor Rousseau's face is to me expressive of him. A high but narrow contracted intensity in it: bony brows; deep, strait-set eyes, in which there is 30 something bewildered-looking,—bewildered, peer-

ing with lynx-eagerness. A face full of misery, even ignoble misery, and also of the antagonism against that; something mean, plebeian there, redeemed only by *intensity*: the face of what is called
5 a Fanatic,—a sadly *contracted* Hero! We name him here because, with all his drawbacks, and they are many, he has the first and chief characteristic of a Hero: he is heartily *in earnest*. In earnest, if ever man was; as none of these French Philosophers were. Nay, one would say, of an earnest-
10 ness too great for his otherwise sensitive, rather feeble nature; and which indeed in the end drove him into the strangest incoherences, almost delirations. There had come, at last, to be a kind of
15 madness in him: his Ideas *possessed* him like demons; hurried him so about, drove him over steep places!—

The fault and misery of Rousseau was what we easily name by a single word, *Egoism*; which is
20 indeed the source and summary of all faults and miseries whatsoever. He had not perfected himself into victory over mere Desire; a mean Hunger, in many sorts, was still the motive principle of him. I am afraid he was a very vain man; hungry
25 for the praises of men. You remember Genlis's experience of him. She took Jean Jacques to the Theatre; he bargaining for a strict incognito,—
“He would not be seen there for the world!”
The curtain did happen nevertheless to be drawn
30 aside: the Pit recognised Jean Jacques, but took no great notice of him! He expressed the bitterest indignation; gloomed all evening, spake no other

than surly words. The glib Countess remained entirely convinced that his anger was not at being seen, but at not being applauded when seen. How the whole nature of the man is poisoned; nothing but suspicion, self-isolation, fierce moody ways! 5 He could not live with anybody. A man of some rank from the country, who visited him often, and used to sit with him, expressing all reverence and affection for him, comes one day, finds Jean Jacques full of the sourest unintelligible humour. "Mon- 10 sieur," said Jean Jacques, with flaming eyes, "I know why you come here. You come to see what a poor life I lead; how little is in my poor pot that is boiling there. Well, look into the pot! There is half a pound of meat, one carrot and three onions; 15 that is all: go and tell the whole world that, if you like, Monsieur!" — A man of this sort was far gone. The whole world got itself supplied with anecdotes, for light laughter, for a certain theatrical interest, from these perversions and contortions of poor 20 Jean Jacques. Alas, to him they were not laughing or theatrical; too real to him! The contortions of a dying gladiator: the crowded amphitheatre looks-on with entertainment: but the gladiator is in agonies and dying. 25

And yet this Rousseau, as we say, with his passionate appeals to Mothers, with his *Contrat-social*, with his celebrations of Nature, even of savage life in Nature, did once more touch upon Reality, struggle towards Reality; was doing the 30 function of a Prophet to his Time. As he could, and as the Time could! Strangely through all that

... of madness, there
 ... Rousseau a spark of
 ... of the element
 ... phism, Scepticism
 ... in this man the
 ... edge that this Life
 ... Scepticism. The rem or
 ... awful Rem - Nature
 ... him: but he said him
 ... spoken - well
 ... fully. — as he has he
 ... errors in the sciences of
 ... of rife - less con-
 ... condiscip - will in-
 ... the - movement
 ... fro of - on an
 ... by - yet
 ... strange - should
 ... him
 ... him
 ... hope

... every tale - rated
 ... " - much
 ... self, are - truly:
 ... Books - shality
 ... - etual
 ... makes pictures - ous
 ... but they - etical
 ... of
 ... or
 ... his
 ... St.

re; and down onwards to the present astonishing; convulsionary 'Literature of Desperation,' it is everywhere abundant. That same *rosepink* is not the right hue. Look at a Shakspeare, at a Goethe, even at a Walter Scott! He who has once seen this, has seen the difference of the True from Sham-True, and will discriminate them ever afterwards.

We had to observe in Johnson how much good 'prophet, under all disadvantages and disorganisations, can accomplish for the world. In Rousseau are called to look rather at the fearful amount of evil which, under such disorganisation, may accompany the good. Historically it is a most pregnant spectacle, that of Rousseau. Banished into ris garrets, in the gloomy company of his own thoughts and Necessities there; driven from post pillar; fretted, exasperated till the heart of him went mad, he had grown to feel deeply that the world was not his friend nor the world's law. It is expedient, if anyway possible, that such a man should *not* have been set in flat hostility with the world. He could be cooped into garrets, laughed at as a maniac, left to starve like a wild-beast in a cage;—but he could not be hindered from tinging the world on fire. The French Revolution and its Evangelist in Rousseau. His semi-deous speculations on the miseries of civilised life, the preferability of the savage to the civilised, and the like, helped well to produce a whole delirium in France generally. True, you may well ask, what could the world, the governors of the world,

do with such a man? Difficult to say what the governors of the world could do with him! What he could do with them is unhappily clear enough, — *guillotine* a great many of them! Enough now
5 of Rousseau.

It was a curious phenomenon, in the withered, unbelieving, secondhand Eighteenth Century, that of a Hero starting up, among the artificial paste-board figures and productions, in the guise of a
10 Robert Burns. Like a little well in the rocky desert places, — like a sudden splendour of Heaven in the artificial Vauxhall! People knew not what to make of it. They took it for a piece of the Vauxhall fire-work; alas, it *let* itself be so taken,
15 though struggling half-blindly, as in bitterness of death, against that! Perhaps no man had such a false reception from his fellow-men. Once more a very wasteful life-drama was enacted under the sun.

20 The tragedy of Burns's life is known to all of you. Surely we may say, if discrepancy between place held and place merited constitute perverseness of lot for a man, no lot could be more perverse than Burns's. Among those secondhand acting-
25 figures, *mimes* for most part, of the Eighteenth Century, once more a giant Original Man; one of those men who reach down to the perennial Deepes, who take rank with the Heroic among men: and he was born in a poor Ayrshire hut. The largest
30 soul of all the British lands came among us in the shape of a hard-handed Scottish Peasant.

His Father, a poor toiling man, tried various things; did not succeed in any; was involved in continual difficulties. The Steward, Factor as the Scotch call him, used to send letters and threatenings, Burns says, 'which threw us all into tears.' 5
 The brave, hard-toiling, hard-suffering Father, his brave heroine of a wife; and those children, of whom Robert was one! In this Earth, so wide otherwise, no shelter for *them*. The letters 'threw us all into tears': figure it. The brave Father, I 10
 say always; — a *silent* Hero and Poet; without whom the son had never been a speaking one! Burns's Schoolmaster came afterwards to London, learnt what good society was; but declares that in no meeting of men did he ever enjoy better discourse 15
 than at the hearth of this peasant. And his poor 'seven acres of nursery-ground,' — not that, nor the miserable patch of clay-farm, nor anything he tried to get a living by, would prosper with him; he had a sore unequal battle all his days. But he 20
 stood to it valiantly; a wise, faithful, unconquerable man; — swallowing-down how many sore sufferings daily into silence; fighting like an unseen Hero, — nobody publishing newspaper paragraphs about his nobleness; voting pieces of plate to him! How- 25
 ever, he was not lost: nothing is lost. Robert is there; the outcome of him, — and indeed of many generations of such as him.

This Burns appeared under every disadvantage: uninstructed, poor, born only to hard manual toil; 30
 and writing, when it came to that, in a rustic special dialect, known only to a small province of the

- country he lived in. Had he written, even what he did write, in the general language of England, I doubt not he had already become universally recognised as being, or capable to be, one of our greatest
- 5 men. That he should have tempted so many to penetrate through the rough husk of that dialect of his, is proof that there lay something far from common within it. He has gained a certain recognition, and is continuing to do so over all quarters of our
- 10 wide Saxon world: wheresoever a Saxon dialect is spoken, it begins to be understood, by personal inspection of this and the other, that one of the most considerable Saxon men of the Eighteenth Century was an Ayrshire Peasant named Robert Burns.
- 15 Yes, I will say, here too was a piece of the right Saxon stuff: strong as the Harz-rock, rooted in the depths of the world; — rock, yet with wells of living softness in it! A wild impetuous whirlwind of passion and faculty slumbered quiet there; such
- 20 heavenly *melody* dwelling in the heart of it. A noble rough genuineness; homely, rustic, honest; true simplicity of strength; with its lightning-fire, with its soft dewy pity; — like the old Norse Thor, the Peasant-god! —
- 25 Burns's Brother Gilbert, a man of much sense and worth, has told me that Robert, in his young days, in spite of their hardship, was usually the gayest of speech; a fellow of infinite frolic, laughter, sense and heart; far pleasanter to hear there, stript cutting
- 30 peats in the bog, or suchlike, than he ever afterwards knew him. I can well believe it. This basis of mirth (*'fond gaillard,'* as old Marquis Mirabeau calls it), a

primal-element of sunshine and joyfulness, coupled with his other deep and earnest qualities, is one of the most attractive characteristics of Burns. A large fund of Hope dwells in him; spite of his tragical history, he is not a mourning man. He shakes his sorrows gallantly aside; bounds forth victorious over them. It is as the lion shaking 'dew-drops from his mane'; as the swift-bounding horse, that '*laughs* at the shaking of the spear.' — But indeed, Hope, Mirth, of the sort like Burns's, are they not the outcome properly of warm generous affection, — such as is the beginning of all to every man ?

You would think it strange if I called Burns the most gifted British soul we had in all that century of his: and yet I believe the day is coming when there will be little danger in saying so. His writings, all that he *did* under such obstructions, are only a poor fragment of him. Professor Stewart remarked very justly, what indeed is true of all Poets good for much, that his poetry was not any particular faculty; but the general result of a naturally vigorous original mind expressing itself in that way. Burns's gifts, expressed in conversation, are the theme of all that ever heard him. All kinds of gifts: from the gracefulest utterances of courtesy, to the highest fire of passionate speech; loud floods of mirth, soft wailings of affection, laconic emphasis, clear piercing insight; all was in him. Witty duchesses celebrate him as a man whose speech '*led them off their feet.*' This is beautiful: but still more beautiful that which Mr.

- Lockhart has recorded, which I have more than once alluded to, How the waiters and ostlers at inns would get out of bed, and come crowding to hear this man speak! Waiters and ostlers:— they too
- 5 were men, and here was a man! I have heard much about his speech; but one of the best things I ever heard of it was, last year, from a venerable gentleman long familiar with him. That it was speech distinguished by always *having something in*
- 10 *it*. “He spoke rather little than much,” this old man told me; “sat rather silent in those early days, as in the company of persons above him; and always when he did speak, it was to throw new light on the matter.” I know not why any one should ever
- 15 speak otherwise!— But if we look at his general force of soul, his healthy *robustness* everyway, the rugged downrightness, penetration, generous valour and manfulness that was in him,— where shall we readily find a better-gifted man?
- 20 Among the great men of the Eighteenth Century, I sometimes feel as if Burns might be found to resemble Mirabeau more than any other. They differ widely in vesture; yet look at them intrinsically. There is the same burly thick-necked strength
- 25 of body as of soul;— built, in both cases, on what the old Marquis calls a *fond gaillard*. By nature, by course of breeding, indeed by nation, Mirabeau has much more of bluster; a noisy, forward, unresting man. But the characteristic of Mirabeau too is
- 30 veracity and sense, power of true *insight*, superiority of vision. The thing that he says is worth remembering. It is a flash of insight into some object or

Other: so do both these men speak. The same raging passions; capable too in both of manifesting themselves as the tenderest noble affections. Wit, wild laughter, energy, directness, sincerity: these were in both. The types of the two men are not dissimilar. Burns too could have governed, debated in National Assemblies; politicised, as few could. Alas, the courage which had to exhibit itself in capture of smuggling schooners in the Solway Frith; in keeping *silence* over so much, where no good speech, but only inarticulate rage was possible: this might have bellowed forth Ushers de Brézé and the like; and made itself visible to all men, in managing of kingdoms, in ruling of great ever-memorable epochs! But they said to him reprovingly, his Official Superior said, and wrote: 'You are to work, not think.' Of your *thinking*-faculty, the greatest in this land, we have no need; you are to gauge beer there; for that only are *you* wanted. Very notable;—and worth mentioning, though we know what is to be said and answered! As if Thought, Power of Thinking, were not, at all times, in all places and situations of the world, precisely the thing that *was* wanted. The fatal man, is he not always the *unthinking* man, the man who cannot think and see; but only grope, and hallucinate, and *missee* the nature of the thing he works with? He missees it, *mistakes* it as we say; takes it for one thing, and it is another thing,—and leaves him standing like a Futility there! He is the fatal man; unutterably fatal, put in the high places of men.—“Why complain of this?” say some: “Strength is mournfully

denied its arena ; that was true from of old." Doubtless ; and the worse for the *arena*, answer I ! *Complaining* profits little ; stating of the truth may profit. That a Europe, with its French Revolution
5 just breaking out, finds no need of a Burns except for gauging beer, — is a thing I, for one, cannot rejoice at ! —

Once more we have to say here, that the chief quality of Burns is the *sincerity* of him. So in his
10 Poetry, so in his Life. The Song he sings is not of fantasticalities ; it is of a thing felt, really there ; the prime merit of this, as of all in him, and of his Life generally, is truth. The Life of Burns is what we may call a great tragic sincerity. A sort of
15 savage sincerity, — not cruel, far from that ; but wild, wrestling naked with the truth of things. In that sense, there is something of the savage in all great men.

Hero-worship, — Odin, Burns ? Well ; these Men
20 of Letters too were not without a kind of Hero-worship : but what a strange condition has that got into now ! The waiters and ostlers of Scotch inns, prying about the door, eager to catch any word that fell from Burns, were doing unconscious reverence to the Heroic. Johnson had his
25 Boswell for worshipper. Rousseau had worshippers enough ; princes calling on him in his mean garret ; the great, the beautiful doing reverence to the poor moonstruck man. For himself a most portentous
30 contradiction ; the two ends of his life not to be brought into harmony. He sits at the tables of grantees ; and has to copy music for his own living.

He cannot even get his music copied. "By dint of dining out," says he, "I run the risk of dying by starvation at home." For his worshippers too a most questionable thing! If doing Hero-worship well or badly be the test of vital wellbeing or ill-being to a generation, can we say that *these* generations are very first-rate? — And yet our heroic Men of Letters do teach, govern, are kings, priests, or what you like to call them; intrinsically there is no preventing it by any means whatever. The world *has* to obey him who thinks and sees in the world. The world can alter the manner of that; can either have it as blessed continuous summer sunshine, or as unblest black thunder and tornado, — with unspeakable difference of profit for the world! The manner of it is very alterable; the matter and fact of it is not alterable by any power under the sky. Light; or, failing that, lightning: the world can take its choice. Not whether we call an Odin god, prophet, priest, or what we call him; but whether we believe the word he tells us: there it all lies. If it be a true word, we shall have to believe it; believing it, we shall have to do it. What *name* or welcome we give him or it, is a point that concerns ourselves mainly. *It*, the new Truth, new deeper revealing of the Secret of this Universe, is verily of the nature of the message from on high; and must and will have itself obeyed. —

My last remark is on that notablest phasis of Burns's history, — his visit to Edinburgh. Often it seems to me as if his demeanour there were the highest proof he gave of what a fund of worth and

genuine manhood was in him. If we think of it, few heavier burdens could be laid on the strength of a man. So sudden; all common *Lionism*, which ruins innumerable men, was as nothing to this. It is as if Napoleon had been made a King of, not gradually, but at once from the Artillery Lieutenantcy in the Regiment La Fère. Burns, still only in his twenty-seventh year, is no longer even a ploughman; he is flying to the West Indies to escape disgrace and a jail. This month he is a ruined peasant, his wages seven pounds a year, and these gone from him: next month he is in the blaze of rank and beauty, handing down jewelled Duchesses to dinner; the cynosure of all eyes! Adversity is sometimes hard upon a man; but for one man who can stand prosperity, there are a hundred that will stand adversity. I admire much the way in which Burns met all this. Perhaps no man one could point out, was ever so sorely tried, and so little forgot himself. Tranquil, unastonished; not abashed, not inflated, neither awkwardness nor affectation: he feels that *he* there is the man Robert Burns; that the 'rank is but the guinea-stamp'; that the celebrity is but the candle-light, which will show *what* man, not in the least make him a better or other man! Alas, it may readily, unless he look to it, make him a *worse* man; a wretched inflated wind-bag,—inflated till he *burst*, and become a *dead* lion; for whom, as some one has said, 'there is no resurrection of the body'; worse than a living dog!—Burns is admirable here.

And yet, alas, as I have observed elsewhere,

ese Lion-hunters were the ruin and death of
 urns. It was they that rendered it impossible for
 him to live! They gathered round him in his
 arm; hindered his industry; no place was remote
 enough from them. He could not get his Lionism 5
 forgotten, honestly as he was disposed to do so.
 He falls into discontents, into miseries, faults; the
 world getting ever more desolate for him; health,
 character, peace of mind all gone;—solitary enough
 now. It is tragical to think of! These men came 10
 out to *see* him; it was out of no sympathy with
 him, nor no hatred to him. They came to get a
 little amusement: they got their amusement;—
 and the Hero's life went for it!

Richter says, in the Island of Sumatra there is a 15
 kind of 'Light-chafers,' large Fire-flies, which peo-
 ple stick upon spits, and illuminate the ways with
 them at night. Persons of condition can thus travel
 with a pleasant radiance, which they much admire.
 Great honour to the Fire-flies! But—!— 20

LECTURE VI

THE HERO AS KING. CROMWELL, NAPOLEON: MODERN REVOLUTIONISM

[Friday, 22d May 1840]

WE come now to the last form of Heroism; that which we call Kingship. The Commander over Men; he to whose will our wills are to be subordinated, and loyally surrender themselves, and find their welfare in doing so, may be reckoned the most important of Great Men. He is practically the summary for us of *all* the various figures of Heroism; Priest, Teacher, whatsoever of earthly or of spiritual dignity we can fancy to reside in a man. 10 embodies itself here, to *command* over us, to furnish us with constant practical teaching, to tell us for the day and hour what we are to *do*. He is called *Rex*, Regulator, *Roi*: our own name is still better; King, *Könning*, which means *Can-nin* 15 Able-man.

Numerous considerations, pointing towards deep, questionable, and indeed unfathomable regions present themselves here: on the most of which we must resolutely for the present forbear to speak 20 all. As Burke said that perhaps fair *Trial by Ju*

was the soul of Government, and that all legislation, administration, parliamentary debating, and the rest of it, went on, in 'order to bring twelve impartial men into a jury-box';—so, by much stronger reason, may I say here, that the finding of your *Ableman* and getting him invested with the symbols of ability, with dignity, worship (*worthship*), royalty, kingship, or whatever we call it, so that he may actually have room to guide according to his faculty of doing it,—is the business, 10 well or ill accomplished, of all social procedure whatsoever in this world! Hastings-speeches, Parliamentary motions, Reform Bills, French Revolutions, all mean at heart this; or else nothing. Find in any country the Ablest Man that exists there; 15 raise him to the supreme place, and loyally reverence him: you have a perfect government for that country; no ballot-box, parliamentary eloquence, voting, constitution-building, or other machinery whatsoever can improve it a whit. It is in the perfect state; an ideal country. The Ablest Man; he means also the truest-hearted, justest, the Noblest Man: what he *tells us to do* must be precisely the wisest, fittest, that we could anywhere or anyhow learn;—the thing which it will in all ways behave 25 us, with right loyal thankfulness, and nothing doubting, to do! Our *doing* and life were then, so far as government could regulate it, well regulated; that were the ideal of constitutions.

Alas, we know very well that Ideals can never 30 be completely embodied in practice. Ideals must ever lie a very great way off; and we will right

thankfully content ourselves with any not intolerable approximation thereto! Let no man, as Schiller says, too querulously 'measure by a scale of perfection the meagre product of reality' in this
5 poor world of ours. We will esteem him no wise man; we will esteem him a sickly, discontented, foolish man. And yet, on the other hand, it is never to be forgotten that Ideals do exist; that if they be not approximated to at all, the whole
10 matter goes to wreck! Infallibly. No bricklayer builds a wall *perfectly* perpendicular, mathematically this is not possible; a certain degree of perpendicularity suffices him; and he, like a good bricklayer, who must have done with his job, leaves
15 it so. And yet if he sway *too much* from the perpendicular; above all, if he throw plummet and level quite away from him, and pile brick on brick heedless, just as it comes to hand —! Such bricklayer, I think, is in a bad way. *He* has forgotten
20 himself: but the Law of Gravitation does not forget to act on him: he and his wall rush-down into confused welter of ruin! —

This is the history of all rebellions, French Revolutions, social explosions in ancient or modern times.
25 You have put the too *Unable Man* at the head of affairs! The too ignoble, unvaliant, fatuous man. You have forgotten that there is any rule, or natural necessity whatever, of putting the *Able Man* there. Brick must lie on brick as it may and can.
30 *Unable Simulacrum of Ability*, *quack*, in a word, must adjust himself with *quack*, in all manner of administration of human things; — which accord-

ngly lie unadministered, fermenting into unmeasured masses of failure, of indigent misery: in the outward, and in the inward or spiritual, miserable millions stretch-out the hand for their due supply, and it is not there. The 'law of gravitation' acts; Nature's laws do none of them forget to act. The miser- 5
able millions burst-forth into Sansculottism, or some other sort of madness: bricks and brick-
layer lie as a fatal chaos!—

Much sorry stuff, written some hundred years ago or more, about the 'Divine right of Kings,' moulders unread now in the Public Libraries of this country. Far be it from us to disturb the calm process by which it is disappearing harmlessly from the earth, in those repositories! At the same time, not to let the immense rubbish go without leaving us, as it ought, some soul of it behind —I will say that it did mean something; something true, which it is important for us and all men to keep in mind. To assert that in whatever 20
man you choose to lay hold of (by this or the other plan of clutching at him); and clapt a round piece of metal on the head of, and called King, —there straightway came to reside a divine virtue, so that he became a kind of god, and a Divinity inspired him with faculty and right to rule over you to all lengths: this, — what can we do with this but leave it to rot silently in the Public Libraries? 25
But I will say withal, and that is what these Divine-right men meant, That in Kings, and in all human Authorities, and relations that men god-created can form among each other, there is verily 30

- either a Divine Right or else a Diabolic Wrong; one or the other of these two! For it is false altogether, what the last Sceptical Century taught us, that this world is a steam-engine. There is a God
5 in this world; and a God's-sanction, or else the violation of such, does look-out from all ruling and obedience, from all moral acts of men. There is no act more moral between men than that of rule and obedience. Woe to him that claims obedience
10 when it is not due; woe to him that refuses it when it is! God's law is in that, I say, however the Parchment-laws may run: there is a Divine Right or else a Diabolic Wrong at the heart of every claim that one man makes upon another.
- 15 It can do none of us harm to reflect on this: in all the relations of life it will concern us; in Loyalty and Royalty, the highest of these. I esteem the modern error, That all goes by self-interest and the checking and balancing of greedy knaveries
20 and that, in short, there is nothing divine whatever in the association of men, a still more despicable error, natural as it is to an unbelieving century than that of a 'divine right' in people *called* Kings I say, Find me the true *Könning*, King, or Able
25 man, and he *has* a divine right over me. That we knew in some tolerable measure how to find him and that all men were ready to acknowledge his divine right when found: this is precisely the healing which a sick world is everywhere, in these ages
30 seeking after! The true King, as guide of the practical, has ever something of the Pontiff in him — guide of the spiritual, from which all practic

as its rise. This too is a true saying, That the *King* is head of the *Church*. — But we will leave the Polemic stuff of a dead century to lie quiet on its book-shelves.

Certainly it is a fearful business, that of having 5
your Able-man to *seek*, and not knowing in what
manner to proceed about it! That is the world's
sad predicament in these times of ours. They are
times of revolution, and have long been. The brick- 10
layer with his bricks, no longer heedful of plum-
met or the law of gravitation, have toppled, tumbled,
and it all welters as we see! But the beginning of
it was not the French Revolution; that is rather
the *end*, we can hope. It were truer to say, the
beginning was three centuries farther back: in the 15
Reformation of Luther. That the thing which
still called itself Christian Church had become a
Falsehood, and brazenly went about pretending to
pardon men's sins for metallic coined money, and
to do much else which in the everlasting truth of 20
Nature it did *not* now do: here lay the vital mal-
ady. The inward being wrong, all outward went
ever more and more wrong. Belief died away;
all was Doubt, Disbelief. The builder *cast away*
his plummet; said to himself, "What is gravita- 25
tion? Brick lies on brick there!" Alas, does it
not still sound strange to many of us, the assertion
that there *is* a God's-truth in the business of god-
created men; that all is not a kind of grimace, an
'expediency,' diplomacy, one knows not what! — 30
From that first necessary assertion of Luther's,

"You, self-styled *Papa*, you are no Father in God at all; you are — a Chimera, whom I know not how to name in polite language!" — from that onwards to the shout which rose round Camille
5 Desmoulins in the Palais-Royal, "*Aux armes!*" when the people had burst-up against *all* manner of Chimeras, — I find a natural historical sequence. That shout too, so frightful, half-infernal, was a great matter. Once more the voice of awakened
10 nations; — starting confusedly, as out of nightmare, as out of death-sleep, into some dim feeling that Life was real; that God's-world was not an expediency and diplomacy! Infernal; — yes, since they would not have it otherwise. Infernal, since
15 not celestial or terrestrial! Hollowness, insincerity *has* to cease; sincerity of some sort *has* to begin. Cost what it may, reigns of terror, horrors of French Revolution or what else, we have to return to truth. Here is a Truth, as I said: a Truth clad
20 in hellfire, since they would not but have it so! —

A common theory among considerable parties of men in England and elsewhere used to be, that the French Nation had, in those days, as it were gone
mad; that the French Revolution was a general act
25 of insanity, a temporary conversion of France and large sections of the world into a kind of Bedlam. The Event had risen and raged; but was a madness and nonentity, — gone now happily into the region of Dreams and the Picturesque! — To such comfortable
30 philosophers, the Three Days of July, 1830, must have been a surprising phenomenon. Here is the French Nation risen again, in musketry and death

struggle, out shooting and being shot, to make that **same** mad French Revolution good! The sons and **grandsons** of those men, it would seem, persist in **the** enterprise: they do not disown it; they will **have** it made good; will have themselves shot, **if** it be not made good! To philosophers who **had** made-up their life-system on that 'madness' **quietus**, no phenomenon could be more alarming. Poor Niebuhr, they say, the Prussian Professor and Historian, fell broken-hearted in consequence; **sickened**, if we can believe it, and died of the Three Days! It was surely not a very heroic death;—little better than Racine's, dying because Louis Fourteenth looked sternly on him once. The world had stood some considerable shocks, in its time; might have been expected to survive the Three Days too, and be found turning on its axis after even them! The Three Days told all mortals that the old French Revolution, mad as it might look, was not a transitory ebullition of Bedlam, but a genuine product of this Earth where we all live; that it was verily a Fact, and that the world in general would do well everywhere to regard it as such.

Truly, without the French Revolution, one would not know what to make of an age like this at all. We will hail the French Revolution, as shipwrecked mariners might the sternest rock, in a world otherwise all of baseless sea and waves. A true Apocalypse, though a terrible one, to this false withered artificial time; testifying once more that Nature is *preternatural*; if not divine, then diabolic; that

Semblance is not Reality; that it has to become Reality, or the world will take-fire under it, — burn it into what it is, namely Nothing! Plausibility has ended; empty Routine has ended; much has
5 ended. This, as with a Trump of Doom, has been proclaimed to all men. They are the wisest who will learn it soonest. Long confused generations before it be learned; peace impossible till it be! The earnest man, surrounded, as ever, with a world
10 of inconsistencies, can await patiently, patiently strive to do *his* work, in the midst of that. Sentence of Death is written down in Heaven against all that; sentence of Death is now proclaimed on the Earth against it: this he with his eyes may see.
15 And surely, I should say, considering the other side of the matter, what enormous difficulties lie there, and how fast, fearfully fast, in all countries, the inexorable demand for solution of them is pressing on, — he may easily find other work to do than
20 labouring in the Sansculottic province at this time of day!

To me, in these circumstances, that of 'Hero-worship' becomes a fact inexpressibly precious; the most solacing fact one sees in the world at
25 present. There is an everlasting hope in it for the management of the world. Had all traditions, arrangements, creeds, societies that men ever instituted, sunk away, this would remain. The certainty of Heroes being sent us; our faculty, our
30 necessity, to reverence Heroes when sent: it shines like a polestar through smoke-clouds, dust-clouds, and all manner of down-rushing and conflagration.

Hero-worship would have sounded very strange to those workers and fighters in the French Revolution. Not reverence for Great Men; not any hope or belief, or even wish, that Great Men could again appear in the world! Nature, turned into a 'Machine,' was as if effete now; could not any longer produce Great Men:—I can tell her, she may give-up the trade altogether, then; we cannot do without Great Men!—But neither have I any quarrel with that of 'Liberty and Equality'; with the faith that, wise great men being impossible, a level immensity of foolish small men would suffice. It was a natural faith then and there. "Liberty and Equality; no Authority needed any longer. Hero-worship, reverence for *such* Authorities, has proved false, is itself a falsehood; no more of it! We have had such *forgeries*, we will now trust nothing. So many base plated coins passing in the market, the belief has now become common that no gold any longer exists,—and even that we can do very well without gold!" I find this, among other things, in that universal cry of Liberty and Equality; and find it very natural, as matters then stood.

And yet surely it is but the *transition* from false to true. Considered as the whole truth, it is false altogether;—the product of entire sceptical blindness, as yet only *struggling* to see. Hero-worship exists forever, and everywhere: not Loyalty alone; it extends from divine adoration down to the lowest practical regions of life. 'Bending before men,' it is not to be a mere empty grimace, better dis-

which will not be practised, is Hero-worship,—a religion that does dwell in that presence that is rather something divine: that every created man, as Nietzsche said, is a 'revelation in the Flesh.' They were these too, that devised all those graceful contrasts which make life noble! 'Courtesy is not a mere word or grimace; it need not be such. And courtesy, religious Worship itself, are still possible: they still inevitable.

- 20 May we not say, moreover, while so many of our age have worked rather as revolutionary men, that nevertheless every Great Man, every genuine man is by the nature of him a son of Order, not of Disorder? It is a tragical position for a true man to work in revolutions. He seems an anarchist; and indeed a painful element of anarchy does encumber him at every step,—him to whose whole soul anarchy is hostile, hateful. His mission is Order; every man's is. He is here to make what was disorderly, chaotic, into a thing ruled, regular. He is the missionary of Order. Is not all work of man in this world a making of Order? The carpenter finds rough trees: shapes them, constrains them into square fitness, into purpose and use. We are all born enemies of Disorder: it is tragical for us all to be concerned in image-breaking and down-pulling: for the Great Man, more a man than we, it is doubly tragical.

Thus for all human things, maddest French Sans-culottes, to and with that terrible Order. I say, there is no man in them, seeing in the thick-
est of the madness, but a perfect will, at all

moments, towards Order. His very life means
that; Disorder is dissolution, death. No chaos but
it seeks a *centre* to revolve round. While man is
man, some Cromwell or Napoleon is the necessary
finish of a Sansculottism. — Curious: in those days
when Hero-worship was the most incredible thing
to every one, how it does come-out nevertheless,
and assert itself practically, in a way which all
have to credit. Divine *right*, take it on the great
scale, is found to mean divine *might* withal! While
 old false Formulas are getting trampled every-
where into destruction, new genuine Substances
 unexpectedly unfold themselves indestructible. In
 rebellious ages, when Kingship itself seems dead
and abolished, Cromwell, Napoleon step-forth again
as Kings. The history of these men is what we
have now to look at, as our last phasis of Heroism.
 The old ages are brought back to us; the manner
in which Kings were made, and Kingship itself,
 first took rise, is again exhibited in the history of
 these Two.

We have had many civil-wars in England; wars
 of Red and White Roses, wars of Simon de Mont-
 fort; wars enough, which are not very memorable.
 But that war of the Puritans has a significance
 which belongs to no one of the others. Trusting
 to your candour, which will suggest on the other
 side what I have not room to say, I will call it a
 section once more of that great universal war which
 alone makes-up the true History of the World,
 the war of Belief against Unbelief! The struggle

- of men intent on the real essence of things, against men intent on the semblances and forms of things. The Puritans, to many, seem mere savage Iconoclasts, fierce destroyers of Forms; but it were more
5 just to call them haters of *untrue* Forms. I hope we know how to respect Laud and his King as well as them. Poor Laud seems to me to have been weak and ill-starred, not dishonest; an unfortunate Pedant rather than anything worse. His 'Dreams'
10 and superstitions, at which they laugh so, have an affectionate, lovable kind of character. He is like a College-Tutor, whose whole world is forms, College-rules; whose notion is that these are the life and safety of the world. He is placed suddenly, with
15 that unalterable luckless notion of his, at the head not of a College but of a Nation, to regulate the most complex deep-reaching interests of men. He thinks they ought to go by the old decent regulations; nay that their salvation will lie in extending
20 and improving these. Like a weak man, he drives with spasmodic vehemence towards his purpose; cramps himself to it, heeding no voice of prudence, no cry of pity: He will have his College-rules obeyed by his Collegians; that first; and till that,
25 nothing. He is an ill-starred Pedant, as I said. He would have it the world was a College of that kind, and the world *was not* that. Alas, was not his doom stern enough? Whatever wrongs he did, were they not all frightfully avenged on him?
- 30 It is meritorious to insist on forms; Religion and all else naturally clothes itself in forms. Everywhere the *formed* world is the only habitable

ne. The naked formlessness of Puritanism is not
 he thing I praise in the Puritans; it is the thing I
 ity,—praising only the spirit which had rendered
 hat inevitable! All substances clothe themselves
 n forms: but there are suitable true forms, and 5
 hen there are untrue, unsuitable. As the briefest
 efinition, one might say, Forms which *grow* round
 substance, if we rightly understand that, will
 orrespond to the real nature and purport of it, will
 e true, good; forms which are consciously *put* 10
 ound a substance, bad. I invite you to reflect on
 his. It distinguishes true from false in Ceremo-
 ial Form, earnest solemnity from empty pageant,
 all human things.

There must be a veracity, a natural spontaneity 15
 n forms. In the commonest meeting of men, a
 erson making, what we call, ‘set speeches,’ is not
 e an offence? In the mere drawing-room, what-
 soever courtesies you see to be grimaces, prompted
 y no spontaneous reality within, are a thing you 20
 ish to get away from. But suppose now it were
 ome matter of vital concernment, some transcen-
 ent matter (as Divine Worship is), about which
 our whole soul, struck dumb with its excess of
 eeling, knew not how to *form* itself into utterance 25
 t all, and preferred formless silence to any utter-
 nce there possible,—what should we say of a
 ian coming forward to represent or utter it for
 ou in the way of upholsterer-mummery? Such a
 ian,—let him depart swiftly, if he love himself! 30
 ou have lost your only son; are mute, struck
 own, without even tears: an importunate man

importunately offers to celebrate Funeral Games for him in the manner of the Greeks! Such mummery is not only not to be accepted, — it is hateful, unendurable. It is what the old Prophets called
5 'Idolatry,' worshipping of hollow *shows*; what all earnest men do and will reject. We can partly understand what those poor Puritans meant. Laud dedicating that St. Catherine Creed's Church, in the manner we have it described; with his mul-
10 tiplied ceremonial bowings, gesticulations, exclamations: surely it is rather the rigorous formal *Pedant*, intent on his 'College-rules,' than the earnest Prophet, intent on the essence of the matter!

Puritanism found *such* forms insupportable;
15 trampled on such forms; — we have to excuse it for saying, No form at all rather than such! It stood preaching in its bare pulpit, with nothing but the Bible in its hand. Nay, a man preaching from his earnest *soul* into the earnest *souls* of men:
20 is not this virtually the essence of all Churches whatsoever? The nakedest, savagest reality, I say, is preferable to any semblance, however dignified. Besides, it will clothe itself with *due* semblance by and by, if it be real. No fear of that;
25 actually no fear at all. Given the living *man*, there will be found *clothes* for him: he will find himself clothes. But the *suit-of-clothes* pretending that *it* is both clothes and man —! — We cannot 'fight the French' by three-hundred-thousand red
30 uniforms: there must be *men* in the inside of them! Semblance, I assert, must actually *not* divorce itself from Reality. If Semblance do, — why then

ere must be men found to rebel against Sem-
ance, for it has become a lie! These two Antag-
isms at war here, in the case of Laud and the
uritans, are as old nearly as the world. They
ent to fierce battle over England in that age; and 5
ught-out their confused controversy to a certain
ngth, with many results for all of us.

In the age which directly followed that of the
uritans, their cause or themselves were little likely
> have justice done them. Charles Second and 10
is Rochesters were not the kind of men you would
et to judge what the worth or meaning of such
ten might have been. That there could be any
aith or truth in the life of a man, was what these
oor Rochesters, and the age they ushered-in, had 15
orgotten. Puritanism was hung on gibbets, — like
he bones of the leading Puritans. Its work never-
theless went on accomplishing itself. All true
work of a man, hang the author of it on what gibbet
ou like, must and will accomplish itself. We have 20
ur *Habeas-Corpus*, our free Representation of the
'eople; acknowledgment, wide as the world, that
ll men are, or else must, shall and will become,
hat we call *free* men; — men with their life
rounded on reality and justice, not on tradition, 25
hich has become unjust and a chimera! This in
art, and much besides this, was the work of the
'uritans.

And indeed, as these things became gradually
anifest, the character of the Puritans began to 30
lear itself. Their memories were, one after another,

- taken down from the gibbet; nay a certain portion of them are now, in these days, as good as canonised. Eliot, Hampden, Pym, nay Ludlow, Hutchinson, Vane himself, are admitted to be a kind of Heroes;
- 3 political Conscript Fathers, to whom in no small degree we owe what makes us a free England: it would not be safe for anybody to designate these men as wicked now. Few Puritans of note but find their apologists somewhere, and have a certain
- 10 reverence paid them by earnest men. One Puritan, I think, and almost he alone, our poor Cromwell, seems to hang yet on the gibbet, and find no hearty apologist anywhere. Him neither saint nor sinner will acquit of great wickedness. A man of ability,
- 15 infinite talent, courage, and so forth: but he betrayed the Cause. Selfish ambition, dishonesty, duplicity; a fierce, coarse, hypocritical *Tartuffe*, turning all that noble Struggle for constitutional Liberty into a sorry farce played for his own bene-
- 20 fit: this and worse is the character they give of Cromwell. And then there come contrasts with Washington and others: above all, with these noble Pym and Hampdens, whose noble work he stole for himself, and ruined into a futility and deformity.
- 25 This view of Cromwell seems to me the not unnatural product of a century like the Eighteenth. As we said of the Valet, so of the Sceptic: He does not know a Hero when he sees him! The Valet expected purple mantles, gilt sceptres, bodyguards and flourishes of trumpets: the Sceptic of the
- 30 Eighteenth century looks for regulated respectable Formulas, 'Principles,' or what else he may call

em; a style of speech and conduct which has got
 seem 'respectable,' which can plead for itself in
 handsome articulate manner, and gain the suf-
 ages of an enlightened sceptical Eighteenth cen-
 tury! It is, at bottom, the same thing that both
 the Valet and he expect: the garnitures of some
 acknowledged royalty, which then they will acknow-
 ledge! The King coming to them in the rugged
 reformulistic state shall be no King.

For my own share, far be it from me to say
 to insinuate a word of disparagement against such
 characters as Hampden, Eliot, Pym; whom I be-
 lieve to have been right worthy and useful men. I
 have read diligently what books and documents about
 them I could come at;—with the honestest wish
 to admire, to love and worship them like Heroes;
 but I am sorry to say, if the real truth must be told,
 with very indifferent success! At bottom, I found
 that it would not do. They are very noble men,
 these; step along in their stately way, with their
 measured euphemisms, philosophies, parliamentary
 eloquences, Ship-moneys, *Monarchies of Man*; a
 most constitutional, unblamable, dignified set of
 men. But the heart remains cold before them;
 the fancy alone endeavours to get-up some worship
 of them. What man's heart does, in reality, break-
 forth into any fire of brotherly love for these men?
 They are become dreadfully dull men! One breaks-
 down often enough in the constitutional eloquence
 of the admirable Pym, with his 'seventhly and
 lastly.' You find that it may be the admirablest
 thing in the world, but that it is heavy,—heavy

as lead, barren as brick-clay; that, in a word, for you there is little or nothing now surviving thereof. One leaves all these Nobilities standing in their niches of honour: the rugged outcast Cromwell, he is the man of them all in whom one still finds human stuff. The great savage *Baresark*: he could write no euphemistic *Monarchy of Man*; did not speak, did not work with glib regularity; had no straight story to tell for himself anywhere. But he stood bare, not cased in euphemistic coat-of-mail; he grappled like a giant, face to face, heart to heart, with the naked truth of things! That, after all, is the sort of man for one. I plead guilty to valuing such a man beyond all other sorts of men. Smooth-shaven Respectabilities not a few one finds, that are not good for much. Small thanks to a man for keeping his hands clean, who would not touch the work but with gloves on!

Neither, on the whole, does this constitutional tolerance of the Eighteenth century for the other happier Puritans seem to be a very great matter. One might say, it is but a piece of Formulism and Scepticism, like the rest. They tell us, It was a sorrowful thing to consider that the foundation of our English Liberties should have been laid by 'Superstition.' These Puritans came forward with Calvinistic incredible Creeds, Anti-Laudisms, Westminster Confessions; demanding, chiefly of all, that they should have liberty to *worship* in their own way. Liberty to *tax* themselves: that was the thing they should have demanded! It was Superstition, Fanaticism, disgraceful ignorance of Constitutional Philosophy to

assist on the other thing! — Liberty to *tax* oneself? Not to pay-out money from your pocket except on reason shown? No century, I think, but a rather barren one would have fixed on that as the first sight of man! I should say, on the contrary, A just man will generally have better cause than *money* in what shape soever, before deciding to revolt against his Government. Ours is a most confused world; in which a good man will be thankful to see any kind of Government maintain itself in a not insupportable manner: and here in England, to this hour, if he is not ready to pay a great many taxes which he can see very small reason in, it will not go well with him, I think! He must try some other climate than this. Taxgatherer? Money? He will say: 15
“Take my money, since you *can*, and it is so desirable to you; take it,—and take yourself away with it; and leave me alone to my work here. I am still here; can still work, after all the money you have taken from me!” But if they come to him, and say, 20
“Acknowledge a Lie; pretend to say you are worshipping God, when you are not doing it: believe not the thing that *you* find true, but the thing that I find, or pretend to find true!” He will answer: 25
“No; by God’s help, no! You may take my purse; but I cannot have my moral Self annihilated. The purse is any Highwayman’s who might meet me with a loaded pistol: but the Self is mine and God my Maker’s; it is not yours; and I will resist you to the death, and revolt against you, and, on the whole, front all manner of extremities, accusations 30
and confusions, in defence of that!” —

REALITY. It seems to me the one reason why the
 could justify revolting this of the Puritans. It is not
 been the soul of all just revolts among men. *Not* for
 Hunger alone produced even the French Revolution.
 5 not, but the feeling of the insupportable all-pervading
Falseness which had now embodied itself in Hunger,
 in universal material Scarcity and Nonentity, all
 thereby become *indisputably* false in the eyes of all.
 We will leave the Eighteenth century with its 'li-
 10 ertry to tax itself.' We will not astonish ourselves
 that the meaning of such men as the Puritans re-
 mained dim to it. To men who believe in no reality
 at all, how shall a *real* human soul, the intensest of
 all realities, as it were the Voice of this world's
 15 Maker still speaking to us, — be intelligible? What
 it cannot reduce into constitutional doctrines rela-
 tive to 'taxing,' or other like material interest,
 gross, palpable to the sense, such a century will
 needs reject as an amorphous heap of rubbish.
 20 Hampdens, Pym's and Ship-money will be the theme
 of much constitutional eloquence, striving to be fer-
 vid; — which will glitter, if not as fire does, then as
 ice does: and the irreducible Cromwell will remain
 a chaotic mass of 'madness,' 'hypocrisy,' and much
 25 else.

From of old, I will confess, this theory of Crom-
 well's falsity has been incredible to me. Nay I
 cannot believe the like, of any Great Man whatever.
 Multitudes of Great Men figure in History as false
 30 selfish men; but if we will consider it, they are but
figures for us, unintelligible shadows; we do not see

into them as men that could have existed at all. A
 superficial unbelieving generation only, with no eye
 out for the surfaces and semblances of things, could
 form such notions of Great Men. Can a great soul
 be possible without a *conscience* in it, the essence of
 all real souls, great or small? — No, we cannot fig- 5
 ure Cromwell as a Falsity and Fatuity; the longer
 I study him and his career, I believe this the less.
 Why should we? There is no evidence of it. Is
 it not strange that, after all the mountains of cal- 10
 umny this man has been subject to, after being rep-
 resented as the very prince of liars, who never, or
 hardly ever, spoke truth, but always some cunning
 counterfeit of truth, there should not yet have been
 one falsehood brought clearly home to him? A prince 15
 of liars, and no lie spoken by him. Not one that I
 could yet get sight of. It is like Pococke asking Gro-
 tius, Where is your *proof* of Mahomet's Pigeon? No
 proof! — Let us leave all these calumnious chime-
 ras, as chimeras ought to be left. They are not 20
 portraits of the man; they are distracted phantasms
 of him, the joint product of hatred and darkness.

Looking at the man's life with our own eyes, it
 seems to me, a very different hypothesis suggests
 itself. What little we know of his earlier obscure 25
 years, distorted as it has come down to us, does it not
 all betoken an earnest, affectionate, sincere kind of
 man? His nervous melancholic temperament indi-
 cates rather a seriousness *too* deep for him. Of those
 stories of 'Spectres'; of the white Spectre in broad 30
 daylight, predicting that he should be King of Eng-
 land, we are not bound to believe much; — probably

- no more than of the other black Spectre, or Devil in person, to whom the Officer *saw* him sell himself before Worcester Fight! But the mournful, oversensitive, hypochondriac humour of Oliver, in his young years, is otherwise indisputably known. The Huntingdon Physician told Sir Philip Warwick himself, He had often been sent for at midnight; Mr. Cromwell was full of hypochondria, thought himself near dying, and "had fancies about the Town-cross." These things are significant. Such an excitable deep-feeling nature, in that rugged stubborn strength of his, is not the symptom of falsehood; it is the symptom and promise of quite other than falsehood!
- The young Oliver is sent to study Law; falls, or is said to have fallen, for a little period, into some of the dissipations of youth; but if so, speedily repents, abandons all this: not much above twenty, he is married, settled as an altogether grave and quiet man. 'He pays-back what money he had won at gambling,' says the story; — he does not think any gain of that kind could be really *his*. It is very interesting, very natural, this 'conversion,' as they well name it; this awakening of a great true soul from the worldly slough, to see into the awful truth of things; — to see that Time and its shows all rested on Eternity, and this poor Earth of ours was the threshold either of Heaven or of Hell! Oliver's life at St. Ives and Ely, as a sober industrious Farmer, is it not altogether as that of a true and devout man? He has renounced the world and its ways; *its* prizes are not the thing that can enrich him. He tills the

h; he reads his Bible; daily assembles his ser-
 vants around him to worship God. He comforts per-
 turbed ministers, is fond of preachers; nay can
 himself preach, — exhorts his neighbours to be wise,
 redeem the time. In all this what 'hypocrisy,' 5
 'ambition,' 'cant,' or other falsity? The man's
 desires, I do believe, were fixed on the other Higher
 World; his aim to get well *thither*, by walking well
 through his humble course in *this* world. He courts
 no notice: what could notice here do for him? 10
 or in his great Taskmaster's eye.'

It is striking, too, how he comes out once into pub-
 lic view; he, since no other is willing to come: in
 response to a public grievance. I mean, in that
 case of the Bedford Fens. No one else will go to 15
 meet with Authority; therefore he will. That matter
 settled, he returns back into obscurity, to his
plough and his Plough. 'Gain influence'? His in-
 fluence is the most legitimate; derived from personal
 knowledge of him, as a just, religious, reasonable 20
 determined man. In this way he has lived till
 forty; old age is now in view of him, and the
 great portal of Death and Eternity; it was at this
 time that he suddenly became 'ambitious'! I do
 interpret his Parliamentary mission in that way. 25
 His successes in Parliament, his successes through-
 out war, are honest successes of a brave man; who
 more resolution in the heart of him, more light
 in the head of him than other men. His prayers to
 God; his spoken thanks to the God of Victory, who 30
 preserved him safe, and carried him forward so
 through the furious clash of a world all set in

conflict through desperate-looking engagements at
 Denbigh: through the death-roll of so many battles
 mercy after mercy: to the 'crowning mercy' of
 Worcester Fight: all this is good and genuine for
 a deep-hearted Calvinistic Cromwell. Only to vain
 unfeeling Cavaliers, worshipping not God but
 their own 'love-locks,' frivolities and formalities,
 living quite apart from contemplations of God,
 living without God in the world, need it seem
 10 hypocritical.

Not will his participation in the King's death in-
 volve him in condemnation with us. It is a stern
 business killing of a King: But if you once go to
 war with him, it lies *there*: this and all else lies
 15 there. Once at war, you have made wager of battle
 with him: it is he to die, or else you. Reconcilia-
 tion is problematic: may be possible, or, far more
 likely, is impossible. It is now pretty generally
 admitted that the Parliament, having vanquished
 20 Charles First, had no way of making any tenable
 arrangement with him. The large Presbyterian
 party, apprehensive now of the Independents, were
 most anxious to do so; anxious indeed as for their
 own existence; but it could not be. The unhappy
 25 Charles, in those final Hampton-Court negotiations,
 shows himself as a man fatally incapable of being
 dealt with. A man who, once for all, could not and
 would not *understand*: — whose thought did not in
 any measure represent to him the real fact of the
 30 matter; nay worse, whose *word* did not at all repre-
 sent his thought. We may say this of him without
 cruelty, with deep pity rather: but it is true and

undeniable. Forsaken there of all but the *name* of Kingship, he still, finding himself treated with outward respect as a King, fancied that he might play-off party against party, and smuggle himself into his old power by deceiving both. Alas, they both discovered 5 that he was deceiving them. A man whose word will not inform you at all what he means or will do, is not a man you can bargain with. You must get out of that man's way, or put him out of yours! The Presbyterians, in their despair, were still for 10 believing Charles, though found false, unbelievable again and again. Not so Cromwell: "For all our fighting," says he, "we are to have a little bit of paper?" No!—

In fact, everywhere we have to note the decisive 15 practical *eye* of this man; how he drives towards the practical and practicable; has a genuine insight into what *is* fact. Such an intellect, I maintain, does not belong to a false man: the false man sees false shows, plausibilities, expediciencies: the true 20 man is needed to discern even practical truth. Cromwell's advice about the Parliament's Army, early in the contest, How they were to dismiss their city-tapsters, flimsy riotous persons, and choose substantial yeomen, whose heart was in the work, to be 25 soldiers for them: this is advice by a man who *saw*. Fact answers, if you see into Fact! Cromwell's *Iron-sides* were the embodiment of this insight of his; men fearing God; and without any other fear. No more conclusively genuine set of fighters ever trod 30 the soil of England, or of any other land.

Neither will we blame greatly that word of Crom-

in the unworthy; and can accomplish little. For himself he does accomplish a heroic life, which is such, which is all; but for the world he accomplishes comparatively nothing. The wild rude Sincerity, direct from Nature, is not glib in answering from the witness-box: in your small-debt *pie-powder* court, he is scouted as a counterfeit. The vulpine intellect 'detects' him. For being a man worth any thousand men, the response your Knox, your Cromwell gets, is an argument for two centuries whether he was a man at all. God's greatest gift to this Earth is sneeringly flung away. The miraculous talisman is a paltry plated coin, not fit to pass in the shops as a common guinea.

Lamentable this! I say, this must be remedied. Till this be remedied in some measure, there is nothing remedied. 'Detect quacks?' Yes do, for Heaven's sake; but know withal the men that are to be trusted! Till we know that, what is all our knowledge; how shall we even so much as 'detect'? For the vulpine sharpness, which considers itself to be knowledge, and 'detects' in that fashion, is far mistaken. Dupes indeed are many: but, of all dupes, there is none so fatally situated as he who lives in undue terror of being duped. The world does exist; the world has truth in it, or it would not exist! First recognise what is true, we shall then discern what is false; and properly never till then.

'Know the men that are to be trusted:' alas, this is yet, in these days, very far from us. The sincere alone can recognise sincerity. Not a Hero only is

needed, but a world fit for him; a world not of *Valets*;—the Hero comes almost in vain to us otherwise! Yes, it is far from us: but it must come; thank God, it is visibly coming. Till it
 5 do come, what have we? Ballot-boxes, suffrages, French Revolutions:—if we are as *Valets*, and do not know the Hero when we see him, what good are all these? A heroic Cromwell comes; and for a hundred-and-fifty years he cannot have a vote
 10 from us. Why, the insincere, unbelieving world is the *natural property* of the Quack, and of the Father of quacks and quackeries! Misery, confusion, un-
 15 of him continues. The Valet-World *has* to be governed by the Sham-Hero, by the King merely *dressed* in King-gear. It is his: he is its! In brief, one of two things: We shall either learn to know a Hero, a true Governor and Captain, somewhat
 20 better, when we see him: or else go on to be forever governed by the Unheroic:—had we ballot-boxes clattering at every street-corner, there were no remedy in these.

Poor Cromwell.—great Cromwell! The inarticulate Prophet: Prophet who could not *speak*. Rude, confused, struggling to utter himself, with his savage depth, with his wild sincerity: and he looked so strange, among the elegant Euphemisms, dainty little Falklands, Attic Chillingworths,
 25 diplomatic Clarendons! Consider him. An outer hull of chaotic confusion, visions of the Devil, veils drawn, almost semi-madness: and yet

such a clear determinate man's-energy working in
 the heart of that. A kind of chaotic man. The
 ray as of pure starlight and fire, working in such
 an element of boundless hypochondria, *unformed*
 black of darkness! And yet withal this hypo- 5
 chondria, what was it but the very greatness of the
 man? The depth and tenderness of his wild
 affections: the quantity of *sympathy* he had with
 things, — the quantity of insight he would yet get
 into the heart of things, the mastery he would yet 10
 get over things: this was his hypochondria. The
 man's misery, as man's misery always does, came
 of his greatness. Samuel Johnson too is that kind
 of man. Sorrow-stricken, half-distracted; the wide
 element of mournful *black* enveloping him, — wide 15
 as the world. It is the character of a prophetic
 man; a man with his whole soul *seeing*, and strug-
 gling to see.

On this ground, too, I explain to myself Crom-
 well's reputed confusion of speech. To himself the 20
 internal meaning was sun-clear; but the material
 with which he was to clothe it in utterance was
 not there. He had *lived* silent; a great unnamed
 sea of Thought round him all his days; and in his
 way of life little call to attempt *naming* or uttering 25
 that. With his sharp power of vision, resolute
 power of action, I doubt not he could have learned
 to write Books withal, and speak fluently enough;
 — he did harder things than writing of Books.
 This kind of man is precisely he who is fit for 30
 doing manfully all things you will set him on
 doing. Intellect is not speaking and logicising;

situation any more? To them it was as the
shining of Heaven's own Splendour in the waste-
welling darkness; the Pillar of Fire by night, that
was to guide them on their desolate perilous way.
Was it not such? Can a man's soul, to this hour, 5
get guidance by any other method than intrinsically
that same,—devout prostration of the earnest
ruggling soul before the Highest, the Giver of all
light; be such *prayer* a spoken, articulate, or be it
voiceless, inarticulate one? There is no other 10
method. 'Hypocrisy'? One begins to be weary
all that. They who call it so, have no right to
speak on such matters. They never formed a pur-
pose, what one can call a purpose. They went
out balancing expediences, plausibilities; gath- 15
ing votes, advices; they never were alone with
the *truth* of a thing at all.—Cromwell's prayers
were likely to be 'eloquent,' and much more than
that. His was the heart of a man who *could* pray.
But indeed his actual Speeches, I apprehend, 20
were not nearly so ineloquent, incondite, as they
look. We find he was, what all speakers aim to
be, an impressive speaker, even in Parliament; one
who, from the first, had weight. With that rude
passionate voice of his, he was always understood 25
to mean something, and men wished to know what.
He disregarded eloquence, nay despised and dis-
counted it; spoke always without premeditation of
the words he was to use. The Reporters, too, in
those days seem to have been singularly candid; 30
used to have given the Printer precisely what they
heard and on their own note-paper. And withal, what

a strange proof is it of Cromwell's being the pre-meditative ever-calculating hypocrite, acting a play before the world, That to the last he took no more charge of his Speeches! How came he not to study
5 his words a little, before flinging them out to the public? If the words were true words, they could be left to shift for themselves.

But with regard to Cromwell's 'lying,' we will make one remark. This, I suppose, or something
10 like this, to have been the nature of it. All parties found themselves deceived in him; each party understood him to be meaning *this*, heard him even say so, and behold he turns-out to have been meaning *that*! He was, cry they, the chief of liars.
15 But now, intrinsically, is not all this the inevitable fortune, not of a false man in such times, but simply of a superior man? Such a man must have *reticences* in him. If he walk wearing his heart upon his sleeve for daws to peck at, his journey will not
20 extend far! There is no use for any man's taking-up his abode in a house built of glass. A man always is to be the judge how much of his mind he will show to other men; even to those he would have work along with him. There are impertinent
25 inquiries made: your rule is, to leave the inquirer *uninformed* on that matter; not, if you can help it, *misinformed*, but precisely as dark as he was! This, could one hit the right phrase of response, is what the wise and faithful man would
30 aim to answer in such a case.

Cromwell, no doubt of it, spoke often in the dialect of small subaltern parties; uttered to them

ert of his mind. Each little party thought him
 its own. Hence their rage, one and all, to find
 not of their party, but of his own party! Was
 is blame? At all seasons of his history he must
 re felt, among such people, how, if he explained 5
 them the deeper insight he had, they must either
 re shuddered aghast at it, or believing it, their
 n little compact hypothesis must have gone
 olly to wreck. They could not have worked in
 province any more; nay perhaps they could not 10
 w have worked in their own province. It is the
 vitable position of a great man among small men.
 all men, most active, useful, are to be seen
 rywhere, whose whole activity depends on some
 iction which to you is palpably a limited one; 15
 perfect, what we call an *error*. But would it be
 indness always, is it a duty always or often, to
 turb them in that? Many a man, doing loud
 rk in the world, stands only on some thin tra-
 tionality, conventionality; to him indubitable, to 20
 a incredible: break that beneath him, he sinks to
 lless depths! "I might have my hand full of
 th," said Fontenelle, "and open only my little
 ger."

And if this be the fact even in matters of doc- 25
 ne, how much more in all departments of prac-
 e! He that cannot withal *keep his mind to*
nsely cannot practise any considerable thing
 atever. And we call it 'dissimulation,' all this?
 hat would you think of calling the general of an 30
 ny a dissembler because he did not tell every
 poral and private soldier, who pleased to put the

question, what his thoughts were about everything? — Cromwell, I should rather say, managed all this in a manner we must admire for its perfection. An endless vortex of such questioning 'corporals' rolled confusedly round him through his whole course; whom he did answer. It must have been as a great true-seeing man that he managed this too. Not one proved falsehood, as I said; not one! Of what man that ever wound himself through such a coil of things will you say so much? —

But in fact there are two errors, widely prevalent, which pervert to the very basis of our judgments formed about such men as Cromwell; about their 'ambition,' 'falsity,' and suchlike. The first is what I might call substituting the *goal* of their career for the course and starting-point of it. The vulgar Historian of a Cromwell fancies that he had determined on being Protector of England, at the time when he was ploughing the marsh lands of Cambridgeshire. His career lay all mapped-out: a program of the whole drama; which he then step by step dramatically unfolded, with all manner of cunning, deceptive dramaturgy, as he went on,—the hollow, scheming 'Ἰσχυροποιός, or Play-actor, that he was! This is a radical perversion; all but universal in such cases. And think for an instant how different the fact is! How much does one of us foresee of his own life? Short way ahead of us it is all dim; an unwound skein of possibilities, of apprehensions, attemptabilities, vague-looming hopes. This Cromwell had *not* his life lying all in

~~That~~ fashion of Program, which he needed then,
with that unfathomable cunning of his, only to
~~enact~~ dramatically, scene after scene! Not so.
We see it so; but to him it was in no measure so.
What absurdities would fall-away of themselves, 5
were this one undeniable fact kept honestly in view
by History! Historians indeed will tell you that
they do keep it in view; — but look whether such is
practically the fact! Vulgar History, as in this
Cromwell's case, omits it altogether; even the best 10
kinds of History only remember it now and then.
To remember it duly with rigorous perfection, as in
fact it *stood*, requires indeed a rare faculty; rare,
nay impossible. A very Shakspeare for faculty; or
more than Shakspeare; who could *enact* a brother 15
man's biography, see with the brother man's eyes at
all points of his course what things *he* saw; in
short, *know* his course and him, as few 'Historians'
are like to do. Half or more of all the thick-pliced
perversions which distort our image of Cromwell, 20
will disappear, if we honestly so much as try to rep-
resent them so; in sequence, as they *were*; not in
the lump, as they are thrown-down before us.

But a second error, which I think the generality
commit, refers to this same 'ambition' itself. We 25
exaggerate the ambition of Great Men; we mistake
what the nature of it is. Great Men are not am-
bitious in that sense; he is a small poor man that
is ambitious so. Examine the man who lives in
misery because he does not shine above other men; 30
who goes about producing himself, pruriently anx-
ious about his gifts and claims; struggling to force

- everybody, as it were begging everybody for God's sake, to acknowledge him a great man, and set him over the heads of men! Such a creature is among the wretchedest sights seen under this sun. A
- 5 *great man*? A poor morbid prurient empty man; fitter for the ward of a hospital, than for a throne among men. I advise you to keep-out of his way. He cannot walk on quiet paths; unless you will look at him, wonder at him, write paragraphs about
- 10 him, he cannot live. It is the *emptiness* of the man, not his greatness. Because there is nothing in himself, he hungers and thirsts that you would find something in him. In good truth, I believe no great man, not so much as a genuine man who had
- 15 health and real substance in him of whatever magnitude, was ever much tormented in this way.

- Your Cromwell, what good could it do him to be 'noticed' by noisy crowds of people? God his Maker already noticed him. He, Cromwell, was
- 20 already there; no notice would make *him* other than he already was. Till his hair was grown gray; and Life from the downhill slope was all seen to be limited, not infinite but finite, and all a measurable matter *how* it went, — he had been content to
- 25 plough the ground, and read his Bible. He in his old days could not support it any longer, without selling himself to Falsehood, that he might ride in gilt carriages to Whitehall, and have clerks with bundles of papers haunting him, "Decide this, de-
- 30 cide that," which in utmost sorrow of heart no man can perfectly decide! What could gilt carriage do for this man? From of old, was there not i-

a weight of meaning, a terror and a splendour of Heaven itself? His existence there as him beyond the need of gilding. Death, at and Eternity: these already lay as the end of whatsoever he thought or did. All may begirt as in a sea of nameless Thoughts, o speech of a mortal could name. God's as the Puritan prophets of that time had this was great, and all else was little to o call such a man 'ambitious,' to figure him rurient windbag described above, seems to poorest solecism. Such a man will say: your gilt carriages and huzzaing mobs, keep d-tape clerks, your influentialities, your it businesses. Leave me alone, leave me here is *too much of life* in me already!" uel Johnson, the greatest soul in England y, was not ambitious. 'Corsica Boswell' at public shows with printed ribbons round but the great old Samuel stayed at home. old-wide soul wrapt-up in its thoughts, in ws; — what could parading, and ribbons at, do for it?

s, I will say again: The great *silent* men! round on the noisy inanity of the world, ith little meaning, actions with little worth, s to reflect on the great Empire of *Silence*. le silent men, scattered here and there, his department; silently thinking, silently ; whom no Morning Newspaper makes of! They are the salt of the Earth. A that has none or few of these is in a bad

- way. Like a forest which had no *roots*; which had all turned into leaves and boughs;—which must soon wither and be no forest. Woe for us if we had nothing but what we can *show*, or speak.
- 5 Silence, the great Empire of Silence: higher than the stars; deeper than the Kingdoms of Death! It alone is great; all else is small.—I hope we English will long maintain our *grand talent pour le silence*. Let others that cannot do without standing on barrel-heads, to spout, and be seen of all the market-place, cultivate speech exclusively,—become a most green forest without roots! Solomon says, There is a time to speak; but also a time to keep silence. Of some great silent Samuel, not
- 15 urged to writing, as old Samuel Johnson says he was, by *want of money*, and nothing other, one might ask, “Why do not you too get up and speak; promulgate your system, found your sect?” “Truly,” he will answer, “I am *continent* of my
- 20 thought hitherto; happily I have yet had the ability to keep it in me, no compulsion strong enough to speak it. My ‘system’ is not for promulgation first of all; it is for serving myself to live by. That is the great purpose of it to me.
- 25 And then the ‘honour’? Alas, yes;—but as Cato said of the statue: So many statues in that Forum of yours, may it not be better if they ask, Where is Cato’s statue?” —

But now, by way of counterpoise to this of

30 Silence, let me say that there are two kinds of ambition; one wholly blamable, the other laudable and inevitable. Nature has provided that the

reat silent Samuel shall not be silent too long.
 The selfish wish to shine over others, let it be ac-
 counted altogether poor and miserable. 'Seekest
 thou great things, seek them not:' this is most
 true. And yet, I say, there is an irrepressible ten- 5
 dency in every man to develop himself according
 to the magnitude which Nature has made him of;
 to speak-out, to act-out, what Nature has laid in
 him. This is proper, fit, inevitable; nay it is a
 duty, and even the summary of duties for a man. 10
 The meaning of life here on earth might be defined
 as consisting in this: To unfold your *self*, to work
 what thing you have the faculty for. It is a neces-
 sity for the human being, the first law of our
 existence. Coleridge beautifully remarks that the 15
 infant learns to *speak* by this necessity it feels. —
 We will say therefore: To decide about ambition,
 whether it is bad or not, you have two things to
 take into view. Not the coveting of the place
 alone, but the fitness of the man for the place 20
 withal: that is the question. Perhaps the place was
 his; perhaps he had a natural right, and even obli-
 gation, to seek the place! Mirabeau's ambition to
 be Prime Minister, how shall we blame it, if he
 were 'the only man in France that could have done 25
 any good there'? Hopefuler perhaps had he not
 so clearly *felt* how much good he could do! But a
 poor Necker, who could do no good, and had even
 felt that he could do none, yet sitting broken-hearted
 because they had flung him out, and he was now 30
 quit of it, well might Gibbon mourn over him. —
 Nature, I say, has provided amply that the silent

- way. Like a tree
 had all turned brown,
 must soon wither
 we had nothing left.
- 5 Silence, the great
 the stars : down
 alone is greater
 lish will keep
silence. Let
- 10 ing on harm
 the marketplace
 come a man
 says, There
 keep silent
- 15 urged to
 was, by
 might a
 speak : per
 "Truly."
- 20 thought
 ability
 enough
 vulgar
 live !
- 25 And the
 said o
 of you
 Cato
 But
- 30 Silence
 and
 and

...possible well-grounded hope
 of the Earth. Was not such a
 ...a member of? Cromwell
 ...and hastened thither.
 ...rugged bursts of earnestness, 5
 ...where we get a glimpse of
 ...there; he fought and strove,
 ...of a man, through cannon-
 ...— on and on, till the Cause
 ...so formidable enemies all swept 10
 ...the dawn of hope had become
 ...ory and certainty. That *he* stood
 ...greatest soul of England, the undis-
 ...all England, — what of this? It
 ...the Law of Christ's Gospel could 15
 ...itself in the world! The Theocracy
 ...Knox in his pulpit might dream of as
 ...agination,' this practical man, experi-
 ...whole chaos of most rough practice,
 ...sider as capable of being *realised*. 20
 ...were highest in Christ's Church, the
 ...sest men, were to rule the land: in
 ...derable degree, it might be so and should
 ...it not *true*, God's truth? And if *true*,
 ...then the very thing to do? The strong- 25
 ...intellect in England dared to answer,
 ...I call a noble true purpose; is it not,
 ...dialect, the noblest that could enter into
 ...of Statesman or man? For a Knox to
 ...something; but for a Cromwell, with 30
 ...i sense and experience of what our
 ...history, I think, shows it only this

once in such a degree. I account it the culminating point of Protestantism: the most heroic phasis that 'Faith in the Bible' was appointed to exhibit here below. Fancy it: that it were made manifest to one of us, how we could make the Right supremely victorious over Wrong, and all that we had longed and prayed for, as the highest good to England and all lands, an attainable fact!

Well, I must say, the *vulpine* intellect, with its knowingness, its alertness and expertness in 'detecting hypocrites,' seems to me a rather sorry business. We have had but one such Statesman in England; one man, that I can get sight of, who ever had in the heart of him any such purpose at all. One man, in the course of fifteen-hundred years; and this was his welcome. He had adherents by the hundred or the ten; opponents by the million. Had England rallied all round him,—why, then, England might have been a *Christian* land! As it is, vulpine knowingness sits yet at its hopeless problem, 'Given a world of Knaves, to educe an Honesty from their united action';—how cumbrous a problem, you may see in Chancery Law-Courts, and some other places! Till at length, by Heaven's just anger, but also by Heaven's great grace, the matter begins to stagnate; and this problem is becoming to all men a *palpably* hopeless one.—

But with regard to Cromwell and his purposes Hume, and a multitude following him, come upon me here with an admission that Cromwell *was* sincere at first; a sincere 'Fauatic' at first, but gradu

ly became a 'Hypocrite' as things opened round
m. This of the Fanatic-Hypocrite is Hume's
theory of it; extensively applied since,—to Ma-
omet and many others. Think of it seriously,
ou will find something in it; not much, not all, 5
ery far from all. Sincere hero hearts do not sink
a this miserable manner. The Sun flings-forth
impurities, gets balefully incrustated with spots; but
does not quench itself, and become no Sun at all,
ut a mass of Darkness! I will venture to say that 10
uch never befell a great deep Cromwell; I think,
ever. Nature's own lion-hearted Son; Antæus-
ike, his strength is got by *touching the Earth*, his
Mother; lift him up from the Earth, lift him up
nto Hypocrisy, Inanity, his strength is gone. We 15
will not assert that Cromwell was an immaculate
nan; that he fell into no faults, no insincerities
among the rest. He was no dilettante professor of
perfections,' 'immaculate conducts.' He was a
ugged Orson, rending his rough way through act- 20
ial true *work*,—doubtless with many a *fall* therein.
Insincerities, faults, very many faults daily and
hourly: it was too well known to him; known to God
and him! The Sun was dimmed many a time; but
the Sun had not himself grown a Dimness. Crom- 25
well's last words, as he lay waiting for death, are
those of a Christian heroic man. Broken prayers
to God, that He would judge him and this Cause,
He, since man could not, in justice yet in pity. They
are most touching words. He breathed-out his wild 30
great soul, its toils and sins all ended now, into the
presence of his Maker, in this manner.

I, for one, will not call the man a Hypocrite; Hypocrite, mummer, the life of him a mere theatricality; empty barren quack. hungry for the shout of mobs? The man had made obscurity do very much for him till his head was gray; and now he stood there as he stood recognised unblamed, the King of England. Cannot a man do with his King's Coaches and Cloaks? Is it such a disadvantage to have clerks forever pestering you with bundles of papers in red tape? A simple man prefers planting of cabbages; a George Washington, no very immeasurable man, does the same. ~~As~~ would say, it is what any genuine man would do, and would do. The instant his real duty was set in the matter of Kingship,—away

we can remark, meanwhile, how indispensable a King is, in all movements of men. It is strikingly shown, in this very War, what becometh of men when they cannot find a Chief Man whom their enemies can. The Scotch Nation was all the while in Puritanism: zealous and of one mind about it, as in this English end of the Island was always far from being the case. But there was no great Cromwell among them; poor trembling, hesitating, diplomatic Argyles and suchlike: none of them had a heart true enough for the truth, or durst commit himself to the truth. They had no leader: and the scattered Cavalier party in that country had one: Montrose, the noblest of all the Cavaliers: an accomplished, gallant-hearted, splendid man; what one may call the Hero-Cavalier.

Well, look at it; on the one hand subjects without
a King; on the other a King without subjects!
The subjects without King can do nothing; the
subjectless King can do something. This Mont-
rose, with a handful of Irish or Highland savages, 5
few of them so much as guns in their hands, dashes
at the drilled Puritan armies like a wild whirlwind;
sweeps them, time after time, some five times over,
from the field before him. He was at one period,
for a short while, master of all Scotland. One 10
man; but he was a man: a million zealous men,
but *without* the one; they against him were power-
less! Perhaps of all the persons in that Puritan
struggle, from first to last, the single indispensable
one was verily Cromwell. To see and dare, and 15
decide; to be a fixed pillar in the welter of uncer-
tainty; — a King among them, whether they called
him so or not.

Precisely here, however, lies the rub for Cromwell.
His other proceedings have all found advocates, and 20
stand generally justified; but this dismissal of the
Rump Parliament and assumption of the Protector-
ship, is what no one can pardon him. He had fairly
grown to be King in England; Chief Man of the
victorious party in England: but it seems he could 25
not do without the King's Cloak, and sold himself
to perdition in order to get it. Let us see a little
how this was.

England, Scotland, Ireland, all lying now sub-
dued at the feet of the Puritan Parliament, the 30
practical question arose, What was to be done with

it? How will you govern these Nations, which Providence in a wondrous way has given-up to your disposal? Clearly those hundred surviving members of the Long Parliament, who sit there as
5 supreme authority, cannot continue forever to sit. What *is* to be done?—It was a question which theoretical constitution-builders may find easy to answer; but to Cromwell, looking there into the real practical facts of it, there could be none more complicated. He asked of the Parliament, What it was they would decide upon? It was for the Parliament to say. Yet the Soldiers too, however contrary to Formula, they who had purchased this victory with their blood, it seemed to them that
15 they also should have something to say in it! We will not “For all our fighting have nothing but a little piece of paper.” We understand that the Law of God’s Gospel, to which He through us has given the victory, shall establish itself, or try to establish
20 itself, in this land!

For three years, Cromwell says, this question had been sounded in the ears of the Parliament. They could make no answer; nothing but talk, talk. Perhaps it lies in the nature of parliamentary bodies;
25 perhaps no Parliament could in such case make any answer but even that of talk, talk! Nevertheless the question must and shall be answered. You sixty men there, becoming fast odious, even despicable, to the whole nation, whom the nation already
30 calls Rump Parliament, *you* cannot continue to sit there: who or what then is to follow? ‘Free Parliament,’ right of Election, Constitutional Formulas.

of one sort or the other,—the thing is a hungry **Fact** coming on us, which we must answer or be **devoured** by it! And who are you that prate of **Constitutional Formulas**, rights of Parliament? **You** have had to kill your King, to make Pride's **Purges**, to expel and banish by the law of the **stronger** whosoever would not let your Cause prosper: there are but fifty or three-score of you left there, debating in these days. Tell us what we shall do; not in the way of Formula, but of practicable Fact! 5

How they did finally answer, remains obscure to this day. The diligent Godwin himself admits that he cannot make it out. The likeliest is, that this poor Parliament still would not, and indeed could 15 not dissolve and disperse; that when it came to the point of actually dispersing, they again, for the tenth or twentieth time, adjourned it,—and Cromwell's patience failed him. But we will take the favourablest hypothesis ever started for the Parliament; the favourablest, though I believe it is not the true one, but too favourable. 20

According to this version: At the uttermost crisis, when Cromwell and his Officers were met on the one hand, and the fifty or sixty Rump Members 25 on the other, it was suddenly told Cromwell that the Rump in its despair *was* answering in a very singular way; that in their splenetic envious despair, to keep-out the Army at least, these men were hurrying through the House a kind of Reform 30 Bill,—Parliament to be chosen by the whole of England; equable electoral division into districts;

free suffrage, and the rest of it: A very questionable, or indeed for them an unquestionable thing. Reform Bill, free suffrage of Englishmen? Why, the Royalists themselves, silenced indeed but not exterminated, perhaps outnumber us; the great numerical majority of England was always indifferent to our Cause, merely looked at it and submitted to it. It is in weight and force, not by counting of heads, that we are the majority! And now with your Formulas and Reform Bills, the whole matter, merely won by our swords, shall again launch itself to sea; become a mere hope, and likelihood, small even as a likelihood? And it is not a likelihood; it is a certainty, which we have won, by God's strength and our own right hands, and do now hold here. Cromwell walked down to these refractory Members; interrupted them in that rapid speed of their Reform Bill; — ordered them to begone, and talk there no more. — Can we not forgive him? Can we not understand him? John Milton, who looked on it all near at hand, could applaud him. The Reality had swept the Formulas away before it. I fancy, most men who were realities in England might see into the necessity of that.

The strong daring man, therefore, has set all manner of Formulas and logical specialities against him; has dared appeal to the genuine Fact of this England. Whether it will support him or not? It is curious to see how he struggles to govern in some constitutional way: find some Parliament to support him; but cannot. His first Parliament, the one they call Bare-

Bones's Parliament, is, so to speak, a *Convocation of the Notables*. From all quarters of England the leading Ministers and chief Puritan Officials nominate the men most distinguished by religious reputation, influence and attachment to the true Cause: these are assembled to shape-out a plan. They sanctioned what was past; shaped as they could what was to come. They were scornfully called *Barebones's Parliament*: the man's name, it seems, was not *Barebones*, but *Barbone*, — a good enough man. Nor was it a jest, their work; it was a most serious reality, — a trial on the part of these Puritan Notables how far the Law of Christ could become the Law of this England. There were men of sense among them, men of some quality; men of deep piety I suppose the most of them were. They failed, it seems, and broke-down, endeavouring to reform the Court of Chancery! They dissolved themselves, as incompetent; delivered-up their power again into the hands of the Lord General Cromwell, to do with it what he liked and could.

What *will* he do with it? The Lord General Cromwell, 'Commander-in-chief of all the Forces raised and to be raised'; he hereby sees himself, at this unexampled juncture, as it were the one available Authority left in England, nothing between England and utter Anarchy but him alone. Such is the undeniable Fact of his position and England's, there and then. What will he do with it? After deliberation, he decides that he will *accept* it; will formally, with public solemnity, say and vow before God and men, "Yes, the

Fact is so, and I will do the best I can with it!" Protectorship, Instrument of Government,—these are the external forms of the thing; worked out and sanctioned as they could in the circumstances
 5 be, by the Judges, by the leading Official people, 'Council of Officers and Persons of interest in the Nation': and as for the thing itself, undeniably enough, at the pass matters had now come to, there *was* no alternative but Anarchy or that. Puritan
 10 England might accept it or not; but Puritan England was, in real truth, saved from suicide thereby! —I believe the Puritan People did, in an inarticulate, grumbling, yet on the whole grateful and real way, accept this anomalous act of Oliver's; at least,
 15 he and they together made it good, and always better to the last. But in their Parliamentary *articulate* way, they had their difficulties, and never knew fully what to say to it! —

Oliver's second Parliament, properly his *first*
 20 regular Parliament, chosen by the rule laid-down in the Instrument of Government, did assemble, and worked;—but got, before long, into bottomless questions as to the Protector's *right*, as to 'usurpation,' and so forth; and had at the earliest legal
 25 day to be dismissed. Cromwell's concluding Speech to these men is a remarkable one. So likewise to his third Parliament, in similar rebuke for their pedantries and obstinacies. Most rude, chaotic, all these Speeches are; but most earnest-looking. You
 30 would say, it was a sincere helpless man; not used to *speak* the great inorganic thought of him, but to *act* it rather! A helplessness of utterance, in such

sting fulness of meaning. He talks much about
rths of Providence': All these changes, so many
tories and events, were not forethoughts, and the-
ical contrivances of men, of *me* or of men; it is
nd blasphemers that will persist in calling them 5
! He insists with a heavy sulphurous wrathful
phasis on this. As he well might. As if a Crom-
ll in that dark huge game he had been playing,
e world wholly thrown into chaos round him,
d *foreseen* it all, and played it all off like a pre- 10
atrived puppetshow by wood and wire! These
ings were foreseen by no man, he says; no man
uld tell what a day would bring forth: they were
irths of Providence,' God's finger guided us on,
d we came at last to clear height of victory, God's 15
use triumphant in these Nations; and you as a
rliament could assemble together, and say in
at manner all this could be *organised*, reduced
to rational feasibility among the affairs of men.
ou were to help with your wise counsel in doing 20
at. "You have had such an opportunity as no
rliament in England ever had." Christ's Law,
e Right and True, was to be in some measure
de the Law of this land. In place of that, you
ve got into your idle pedantries, constitutionalties, 25
tomless cavillings and questionings about written
vs for *my* coming here; — and would send the whole
tter in Chaos again, because I have no Notary's
chment, but only God's voice from the battle-
irlwind, for being President among you! That 30
portunity is gone; and we know not when it will
urn. You have had your constitutional Logic;

and Mammon's Law, not Christ's Law, rules yet in this land. "God be judge between you and me!"

These are his final words to them: Take you your constitution-formulas in your hand; and I my in-
 5 formal struggles, purposes, realities and acts; and "God be judge between you and me!" —

We said above what shapeless, involved chaotic things the printed Speeches of Cromwell are. *Wfully* ambiguous, unintelligible, say the most: a hyp-
 10 ocrite shrouding himself in confused Jesuitic jargon! To me they do not seem so. I will say rather, they afforded the first glimpses I could ever get into the reality of this Cromwell, nay into the possibility of him. Try to believe that he means something,
 15 search lovingly what that may be: you will find a real *speech* lying imprisoned in these broken, rude, tortuous utterances; a meaning in the great heart of this inarticulate man! You will, for the first time, begin to see that he was a man; not an enig-
 20 matic chimera, unintelligible to you, incredible to you. The Histories and Biographies written of this Cromwell, written in shallow sceptical generations that could not know or conceive of a deep believing man, are far more *obscure* than Crom-
 25 well's Speeches. You look through them only into the infinite vague of Black and the Inane. 'Heats and jealousies,' says Lord Clarendon himself: 'heats and jealousies,' mere crabbed whims, theories and crotchets; these induced slow, sober, quiet English-
 30 men to lay down their ploughs and work; and fly into red fury of confused war against the best-conditioned of Kings! *Try* if you can find that true

Scepticism writing about Belief may have great gifts; but it is really *ultra vires* there. It is Blindness laying-down the Laws of Optics. —

Cromwell's third Parliament split on the same rock as his second. Ever the constitutional Formula: How came *you* there? Show us some Notary parchment! Blind pedants:—"Why, surely the same power which makes you a Parliament, that, and something more, made me a Protector!" If my Protectorship is nothing, what in the name of wonder is your Parliamenteership, a reflex and creation of that? —

Parliaments having failed, there remained nothing but the way of Despotism. Military Dictators, each with his district, to *coerce* the Royalist and other gainsayers, to govern them, if not by act of Parliament, then by the sword. Formula shall not carry it, while the Reality is here! I will go on, protecting oppressed Protestants abroad, appointing just judges, wise managers, at home, cherishing true Gospel ministers; doing the best I can to make England a Christian England, greater than old Rome, the Queen of Protestant Christianity; I, since you will not help me; I while God leaves me life! — Why did he not give it up; retire into obscurity again, since the Law would not acknowledge him? cry several. That is where they mistake. For him there was no giving of it up! Prime Ministers have governed countries, Pitt, Pombal, Choiseul; and their word was a law while it held: but this Prime Minister was one that *could not get resigned*. Let him once resign, Charles Stuart and

the Cavaliers waited to kill him; to kill the Cause and him. Once embarked, there is no retreat, no return. This Prime Minister could *retire* no-whither except into his tomb.

- 5 One is sorry for Cromwell in his old days. His complaint is incessant of the heavy burden Providence has laid on him. Heavy; which he must bear till death. Old Colonel Hutchinson, as his wife relates it, Hutchinson, his old battle-mate,
10 coming to see him on some indispensable business, much against his will, — Cromwell ‘follows him to the door,’ in a most fraternal, domestic, conciliatory style; begs that he would be reconciled to him, his old brother in arms; says how much it grieves him
15 to be misunderstood, deserted by true fellow-soldiers, dear to him from of old: the rigorous Hutchinson, cased in his Republican formula, sullenly goes his way. — And the man’s head now white; his strong arm growing weary with its long work!
20 I think always too of his poor Mother, now very old, living in that Palace of his; a right brave woman; as indeed they lived all an honest God-fearing Household there: if she heard a shot go-off, she thought it was her son killed. He had to come
25 to her at least once a day, that she might see with her own eyes that he was yet living. The poor old Mother! — What had this man gained; what had he gained? He had a life of sore strife and toil, to his last day. Fame, ambition, place in History?
30 His dead body was hung in chains; his ‘place in History,’ — place in History forsooth! — has been a place of ignominy, accusation, blackness and dis-

Grace; and here, this day, who knows if it is not
 rash in me to be among the first that ever ventured
 to pronounce him not a knave and liar, but a genu-
 inely honest man! Peace to him. Did he not, in
 spite of all, accomplish much for us? We walk
 smoothly over his great rough heroic life; step-over
 his body sunk in the ditch there. We need not
 spurn it, as we step on it!—Let the Hero rest. It
 was not to *men's* judgment that he appealed; nor
 have men judged him very well.

Precisely a century and a year after this of Puri-
 tanism had got itself hushed-up into decent com-
 posure, and its results made smooth, in 1688, there
 broke-out a far deeper explosion, much more diffi-
 cult to hush-up, known to all mortals, and like to
 be long known, by the name of French Revolution.
 It is properly the third and final act of Protestant-
 ism; the explosive confused return of mankind to
 Reality and Fact, now that they were perishing of
 Semblance and Sham. We call our English Puri-
 tanism the second act: "Well then, the Bible is
 true; let us go by the Bible!" "In Church," said
 Luther; "In Church and State," said Cromwell,
 "let us go by what actually is God's Truth." Men
 have to return to reality; they cannot live on sem-
 blance. The French Revolution, or third act, we
 may well call the final one; for lower than that
 savage *Sansculottism* men cannot go. They stand
 there on the nakedest haggard Fact, undeniable in
 all seasons and circumstances; and may and must
 begin again confidently to build-up from that. The

PICTURES ON HEROES

... the English ... Notary parchment ...
 ... have still to glance for a ...
 ... Second modern King.
 ... means seem to me so great
 ... enormous victories which
 ... Europe, while Cromwell shod
 ... England, are but as the high
 ... seen standing: the sub-
 ... altered thereby. I find in
 ... Cromwell: only a far
 ... No slow walking, through long
 ... of this Universe;
 ... as he called it; and faith and
 ... latent thought and valour,
 ... then burst out as in blaze of
 ... Napoleon lived in an age
 ... no longer believed; the meaning of
 ... was thought to be Nonentity:
 ... not out of the Puritan Bible, but
 ... *Sceptical Encyclopédies*. This was the
 ... man carried it. Meritorious to get so far,
 ... prompt, **everyway** articulate character
 ... **small**, compared with our great
 25 to how ... Cromwell's. Instead of '*dumb*
 ... speak,' **we have** a portentous
 ... Hume's notion of
 ... as it has,
 ... it did
 30 His death ... — where
 ... any truth
 ... ambition shows

§, from the first, in this man; gets the victory him at last, and involves him and his work in.

'else as a bulletin' became a proverb in Napoleon's time. He makes what excuse he could for 5
 hat it was necessary to mislead the enemy, to
 -up his own men's courage, and so forth. On
 whole, there are no excuses. A man in no case
 liberty to tell lies. It had been, in the long-
better for Napoleon too if he had not told any. 10
 act, if a man have any purpose reaching beyond
 hour and day, meant to be found extant *next*
 what good can it ever be to promulgate lies?
 lies are found-out; ruinous penalty is exacted
 hem. No man will believe the liar next time 15
 when he speaks truth, when it is of the last
 rtance that he be believed. The old cry of
 ! — A Lie is *no*-thing; you cannot of nothing
 e something; you make *nothing* at last, and lose
 labour into the bargain. 20

at Napoleon *had* a sincerity: we are to dis-
 ish between what is superficial and what is
 amental in insincerity. Across these outer
 coverings and quackeries of his, which were
 y and most blamable, let us discern withal that 25
 nan had a certain instinctive ineradicable feel-
 for reality; and did base himself upon fact, so
 as he had any basis. He has an instinct of
 re better than his culture was. His *savans*,
 rienne tells us, in that voyage to Egypt were 30
 evening busily occupied arguing that there
 d be no God. They had proved it, to their

satisfaction, by all manner of logic. Napoleon looking up into the stars, answers, "Very ingenious, Messieurs: but *who made* all that?" The Atheistic logic runs off from him like water; the great Fact stares him in the face: "Who made all that?" So too in Practice: he, as every man that can be great, or have victory in this world, sees, through all entanglements, the practical heart of the matter; drives straight towards that. When the steward of his Tuileries Palace was exhibiting the new upholstery, with praises and demonstration, how glorious it was, and how cheap withal, Napoleon, making little answer, asked for a pair of scissors, clipt one of the gold tassels from a window-curtain, put it in his pocket, and walked on. Some days afterwards, he produced it at the right moment, to the horror of his upholstery functionary; it was not gold but tinsel! In St. Helena, it is notable how he still, to his last days, insists on the practical, the real. "Why talk and complain; above all, why quarrel with one another? There is no *result* in it; it comes to nothing that one can do. Say nothing, if one can do nothing!" He speaks often so, to his poor discontented followers; he is like a piece of silent strength in the middle of their morbid querulousness there.

And accordingly was there not what we call a *faith* in him, genuine so far as it went? That this new enormous Democracy asserting itself here in the French Revolution is an insuppressible Fact, which the whole world, with its old forces and institutions, cannot put down; this was a true insight

~~Of~~ his, and took his conscience and enthusiasm along
with it, — a *faith*. And did he not interpret the
~~aim~~ purport of it well? ‘*La carrière ouverte aux*
~~talents~~, The implements to him who can handle
~~them~~:’ this actually is the truth, and even the 5
whole truth; it includes whatever the French Revolution, or any Revolution, could mean. Napoleon, in his first period, was a true Democrat. And yet by the nature of him, fostered too by his military trade, he knew that Democracy, if it were a true 10 thing at all, could not be an anarchy: the man had a heart-hatred for anarchy. On that Twentieth of June (1792), Bourrienne and he sat in a coffee-house, as the mob rolled by: Napoleon expresses the deepest contempt for persons in authority that 15 they do not restrain this rabble. On the Tenth of August he wonders why there is no man to command these poor Swiss; they would conquer if there were. Such a faith in Democracy, yet hatred of anarchy, it is that carries Napoleon through all 20 his great work. Through his brilliant Italian Campaigns, onwards to the Peace of Leoben, one would say, his inspiration is: ‘Triumph to the French Revolution; assertion of it against these Austrian ‘Simulacra that pretend to call it a Simulacrum!’ 25 Withal, however, he feels, and has a right to feel, how necessary a strong Authority is; how the Revolution cannot prosper or last without such. To bridle-in that great devouring, self-devouring French Revolution; to *tame* it, so that its intrinsic 30 purpose can be made good, that it may become *organic*, and be able to live among other organisms

and *formed* things, not as a wasting destruction alone: is not this still what he partly aimed at, as the true purport of his life; nay, what he actually managed to do? Through Wagrams, Austerlitz; triumph after triumph,—he triumphed so far. There was an eye to see in this man, a soul to dare and do. He rose naturally to be the King. All men saw that he *was* such. The common soldiers used to say on the march: “These babbling *Avocats*, up at Paris; all talk and no work! What wonder it runs all wrong? We shall have to go and put our *Petit Caporal* there!” They went, and put him there; they and France at large. Chief-consulship, Emperorship, victory over Europe;—till the poor Lieutenant of *La Fère*, not unnaturally, might seem to himself the greatest of all men that had been in the world for some ages.

But at this point, I think, the fatal charlatan-element got the upper hand. He apostatised from his old faith in Facts, took to believing in Semblances; strove to connect himself with Austrian Dynasties, Popedom, with the old false Feudalities which he once saw clearly to be false;—considered that he would found “his Dynasty” and so forth; that the enormous French Revolution meant only that! The man was ‘given-up to strong delusion, that he should believe a lie’; a fearful but most sure thing. He did not know true from false now when he looked at them.—the fearfulest penalty a man pays for yielding to untruth of heart. *Self* and false ambition had now become his god: *self*-deception once yielded to, all other deceptions follow.

Naturally more and more. What a paltry patch-
 work of theatrical paper-mantles, tinsel and mum-
 mery, had this man wrapt his own great reality
 in, thinking to make it more real thereby! His
 hollow Pope's *Concordat*, pretending to be a re- 5
 establishment of Catholicism, felt by himself to
 be the method of extirpating it, "*la vaccine de la*
religion": his ceremonial Coronations, consecra-
 tions by the old Italian Chimera in Notre-Dame, —
 "wanting nothing to complete the pomp of it," as 10
 Augereau said, "nothing but the half-million of
 men who had died to put an end to all that"! Cromwell's
 Inauguration was by the Sword and Bible; what we must call a genuinely *true* one.
 Sword and Bible were borne before him, without 15
 any chimera: were not these the *real* emblems of
 Puritanism; its true decoration and insignia? It
 had used them both in a very real manner, and
 pretended to stand by them now! But this poor
 Napoleon mistook: he believed too much in the 20
Dupeability of men; saw no fact deeper in man
 than Hunger and this! He was mistaken. Like
 a man that should build upon cloud; his house
 and he fall down in confused wreck, and depart out
 of the world. 25

Alas, in all of us this charlatan-element exists;
 and *might* be developed, were the temptation strong
 enough. 'Lead us not into temptation!' But it is
 fatal, I say, that it *be* developed. The thing into
 which it enters as a cognisable ingredient is doomed 30
 to be altogether transitory; and, however huge it
 may *look*, is in itself small. Napoleon's working,

accordingly, what was it with all the noise it made? A flash as of gunpowder wide-spread; a blazing-up as of dry heath. For an hour the whole Universe seems wrapt in smoke and flame; but only for an hour. It goes out: the Universe with its old mountains and streams, its stars above and kind soil beneath, is still there.

The Duke of Weimar told his friends always, To what courage; this Napoleonism was *unjust*, a false doctrine, and could not last. It is true doctrine. The moment this Napoleon trampled on the world, holding it tyrannously down, the fiercer would the world's revolt against him be, one day. Injustice pays its penalty with frightful compound-interest. I am not sure but he had better have lost his best park of artillery, or had his best regiment drowned in the sea, than shot that poor German Bookseller, Palm! There was a palpable tyrannous injustice, which no amount of heroism, or of him paint an inch thick, could make-out to the world. It burnt deep into the hearts of men, and the like of it; suppressed fire flashed in the eyes of men, as they thought of it, — waiting their day. Which day *came*: Germany rose round him. What Napoleon *did* will in the long-run amount to nothing. He did *justly*; what Nature with her laws sanctions. To what of reality was in him; to what of nothing more. The rest was all smoke and waste. *La carrière ouverte aux talents*: that was the Message, which has yet to articulate and to fulfil itself everywhere, he left in a most inarticulate state. He was a great *ébauche*, a rude-draught

r completed; as indeed what great man is
: ? Left in *too* rude a state, alas!
s notions of the world, as he expresses them
; at St. Helena, are almost tragical to consider.
eems to feel the most unaffected surprise that it 5
ll gone so; that he is flung-out on the rock here,
the World is still moving on its axis. France
eat, and all-great; and at bottom, he is France.
and itself, he says, is by Nature only an append-
f France; "another Isle of Oleron to France." 10
; was *by Nature*, by Napoleon-Nature; and yet
how in fact — HERE AM I! He cannot under-
l it: inconceivable that the reality has not cor-
nded to his program of it; that France was
ll-great, that he was not France. 'Strong delu- 15
' that he should believe the thing to be which
t! The compact, clear-seeing, decisive Italian
re of him, strong, genuine, which he once had,
nveloped itself, half-dissolved itself, in a turbid
sphere of French fanfaronade. The world was 20
disposed to be trodden-down underfoot; to be
d into masses, and built together, as *he* liked,
; pedestal to France and him: the world had
; other purposes in view! Napoleon's aston-
ent is extreme. But alas, what help now? He 25
gone that way of his; and Nature also had gone
way. Having once parted with Reality, he
les helpless in Vacuity; no rescue for him.
ad to sink there, mournfully as man seldom did;
break his great heart, and die, — this poor Na- 30
m: a great implement too soon wasted, till it
useless: our last Great Man!

Our last, in a double sense. For here finally these wide roamings of ours through so many times and places, in search and study of Heroes, are to terminate. I am sorry for it: there was pleasure
5 for me in this business, if also much pain. It is a great subject, and a most grave and wide one, this which, not to be too grave about it, I have named *Hero-worship*. It enters deeply, as I think, into the secret of Mankind's ways and vilest interests in
10 this world, and is well worth explaining at present. With six months, instead of six days, we might have done better. I promised to break-ground on it; I know not whether I have even managed to do that. I have had to tear it up in the rudest manner in
15 order to get into it at all. Often enough, with these abrupt utterances thrown-out isolated, unexplained, has your tolerance been put to the trial. Tolerance, patient candour, all-hoping favour and kindness, which I will not speak of at present. The accom-
20 plished and distinguished, the beautiful, the wise, something of what is best in England, have listened patiently to my rude words. With many feelings, I heartily thank you all; and say, Good be with you all!

SUMMARY



LECTURE I

THE HERO AS DIVINITY. ODIN. PAGANISM: SCANDINAVIAN MYTHOLOGY

HEROES: ~~Universal History~~ consists essentially of their united Biographies. Religion not a man's church-creed, but his practical *belief* about himself and the Universe: Both with Men and Nations it is the One fact about them which creatively determines all the rest. Heathenism: Christianity: Modern Scepticism. The Hero as Divinity. Paganism a fact; not Quackery, nor Allegory: Not to be pretentiously 'explained'; to be looked at as old Thought, and with sympathy. (p. 1.)—Nature no more seems divine except to the Prophet or Poet, because men have ceased to *think*: To the Pagan Thinker, as to a child-man, all was either godlike or God. Canopus: Man. Hero-worship the basis of Religion, Loyalty, Society. ~~A Hero not the 'creature of the time': Hero-worship indestructible.~~ Johnson: Voltaire. (10.)—Scandinavian Paganism the Religion of our Fathers. Iceland, the home of the Norse Poets, described. The *Edda*. The primary characteristic of Norse Paganism, the impersonation of the visible workings of Nature. Jötuns and the Gods. Fire: Frost: Thunder: The Sun: Sea-Tempest. Mythos of the Creation: The Life-Tree Igdrasil. The modern '*Machine* of the Universe.' (21.)—The Norse Creed, as recorded, the summation of several successive systems:

Originally the shape given to the national thought by their first 'Man of Genius.' Odin: He has no history or date; yet was no mere adjective, but a man of flesh and blood. How deified. The World of Nature, to every man a Fantasy of Himself. (28.)—Odin the inventor of Runes, of Letters and Poetry. His reception as a Hero: the pattern Norseman; a God: His shadow over the whole History of his People. (36.)—The essence of Norse Paganism, not so much Morality, as a sincere recognition of Nature: Sincerity better than Gracefulness. The Allegories, the after-creations of the Faith. Main practical Belief: Hall of Odin: Valkyrs: Destiny: Necessity of Valour. Its worth: Their Sea-Kings, Woodcutter Kings, our spiritual Progenitors. The growth of Odinism. (40.)—The strong simplicity of Norse lore quite unrecognised by Gray. Thor's veritable Norse rage: Balder, the white Sungod. How the old Norse heart loves the Thunder-god, and sports with him: Huge Broddignag genius, needing only to be tamed-down, into Shakspeares, Goethes. Truth in the Norse Songs: This World a show. Thor's Invasion of Jötunheim. The Ragnarök, or Twilight of the Gods: The Old must die, that the New and Better may be born. Thor's last appearance. The Norse Creed a Consecration of Valour. It and the whole Past a possession of the Present. (46.)

LECTURE II

THE HERO AS PROPHET. MAHOMET: ISLAM

The Hero no longer regarded as a God, but as one god-inspired. All Heroes primarily of the same stuff; differing according to their reception. ~~The welcome of its Heroes,~~ the truest test of an epoch. Odin: Burns. (p. 56.)—Mahomet a true Prophet; not a scheming Impostor. ~~A Great Man,~~ and therefore first of all a sincere man. ~~No man to be~~ judged merely by his faults. David the Hebrew King. Of

all acts for man *repentance* the most divine: The deadliest **sin**, a supercilious consciousness of none. (61.)—Arabia **described**. The Arabs always a gifted people; of wild **strong** feelings, and of iron restraint over these. Their **Religiosity**: Their Star-worship: Their Prophets and inspired **men**; from Job downwards. Their Holy Places. Mecca, its site, history and government. (63.)—Mahomet. His **Youth**: His fond Grandfather. Had no book-learning: **Travels** to the Syrian Fairs; and first comes in contact with the Christian Religion. An altogether solid, brotherly, **genuine** man: A good laugh, and a good flash of anger in him withal. (68.)—Marries Kadijah. Begins his Prophet-career at forty years of age. *Allah Akbar*; God is great: *Islam*; we must *submit* to God. Do we not all live in Islam? Mahomet, 'the Prophet of God.' (71.)—The good Kadijah believes in him: Mahomet's gratitude. His **slow** progress: Among forty of his kindred, young Ali alone joined him. His good Uncle expostulates with him: Mahomet, bursting into tears, persists in his mission. The **Hegira**. Propagating by the sword: First get your sword: A thing will propagate itself as it can. Nature a just umpire. Mahomet's Creed unspeakably better than the wooden idolatries and jangling Syrian Sects extirpated by it. (77.)—The Koran, the universal standard of Mahometan life: An imperfectly, badly written, but genuine book: Enthusiastic extempore preaching, amid the hot haste of wrestling with flesh-and-blood and spiritual enemies. Its direct poetic insight. The World, Man, human Compassion; all wholly miraculous to Mahomet. (86.)—His religion did not succeed by 'being easy': None can. The sensual part of it not of Mahomet's making. He himself, frugal; patched his own clothes; proved a hero in a rough actual trial of twenty-three years. Traits of his generosity and **resignation**. His total freedom from cant. (94.)—His moral precepts not always of the superfinest sort; yet is there always a tendency to good in them. His Heaven and Hell sensual, yet not altogether so. Infinite Nature of Duty.

The evil of sensuality, in the *slavery* to pleasant things, not in the enjoyment of them. Mahometanism a religion heartily *believed*. To the Arab Nation it was as a birth from darkness into light: Arabia first became alive by means of it. (98.)

LECTURE III

THE HERO AS POET. DANTE; SHAKESPEARE

The Hero as Divinity or Prophet, inconsistent with the modern progress of science: The Hero Poet, a figure common to all ages. ~~All Heroes at bottom the same; the different sphere constituting the grand distinction. Examples~~ Varieties of aptitude. (p. 104.) — Poet and Prophet meet in *Vates*: Their Gospel the same, for the Beautiful and the Good are one. All men somewhat of poets; and the highest Poets far from perfect. Prose, and Poetry or *musical Thought*. Song a kind of inarticulate unfathomable speech: All deep things are Song. The Hero as Divinity, as Prophet, and then only as Poet, no indication that our estimate of the Great Man is diminishing: The Poet seems to be losing caste, but it is rather that our Notions of God are rising higher. (107.) — Shakspeare and Dante, Saints of Poetry. Dante: His history, in his Book and Portrait. His scholastic education, and its fruit of subtlety. His miseries: Love of Beatrice: His marriage not happy. A banished man: Will never return, if to plead guilty be the condition. His wanderings: '*Come è duro calle.*' At the Court of Della Scala. The great soul of Dante, homeless on earth, made its home more and more in Eternity. His mystic, unfathomable Song. Death: Buried at Ravenna. (114.) — His *Divina Commedia* a Song: Go *deep* enough, there is music everywhere. The sincerest of Poems: It has all been as if molten, in the hottest furnace of his soul. Its Intensity, and Pictorial power. The three parts make-up the true Unseen World of the Middle Ages: How the Christian

Dante felt Good and Evil to be the two polar elements of his Creation. Paganism and Christianity. (120.) — Ten silent centuries found a voice in Dante. The thing that is uttered from the inmost parts of a man's soul differs altogether from what is uttered by the outer. The 'uses' of Dante: We will not estimate the Sun by the quantity of gas it saves us. Mahomet and Dante contrasted. Let a man do his work; the *fruit* of it is the care of Another than he. (131.) — As Dante embodies musically the Inner Life of the Middle Ages, so does Shakspeare embody the Outer Life which grew therefrom. The strange outbudding of English Existence which we call 'Elizabethan Era.' — ~~Shakspeare~~ the chief of all Poets: His calm, all-seeing Intellect: His marvellous Portrait-painting. (135.) — ~~The Poet's first gift, as it is all men's, that he have intellect enough, — that he be able to see.~~ Intellect the summary of all human gifts: Human intellect and vulpine intellect contrasted. Shakspeare's instinctive unconscious greatness: ~~His works a part of Nature, and partaking of her inexhaustible depth.~~ Shakspeare greater than Dante; in that he not only sorrowed, but triumphed over his sorrows. His mirthfulness, and genuine overflowing love of laughter. His Historical Plays, a kind of National Epic. The Battle of Agincourt: A noble Patriotism, far other than the 'indifference' sometimes ascribed to him. His works, like so many windows, through which we see glimpses of the world that is in him. (140.) — Dante the melodious Priest of Middle-Age Catholicism: Out of this Shakspeare too there rises a kind of Universal Psalm, not unfit to make itself heard among still more sacred Psalms. Shakspeare an 'unconscious Prophet'; and therein greater and truer than Mahomet. This poor Warwickshire Peasant worth more to us than a whole regiment of highest Dignitaries: Indian Empire, or Shakspeare, — which? An English King, whom no time or chance can dethrone: A rallying-sign and bond of brotherhood for all Saxondom: Wheresoever English men and women are, they will say to one another, 'Yes, this Shakspeare is *ours*!' (148.)

LECTURE IV

THE HERO AS PRIEST. LUTHER; REFORMATION: KNOI;
PURITANISM

The Priest a kind of Prophet; but more familiar, as the daily enlightener of daily life. A true Reformer he who appeals to Heaven's invisible justice against Earth's visible force. The finished Poet often a symptom that his epoch itself has reached perfection, and finished. Alas, the battling Reformer, too, is at times a needful and inevitable phenomenon: Offences *do* accumulate, till they become insupportable. Forms of Belief, modes of life must perish; yet the Good of the Past survives, an everlasting possession for us all. (p. 154.) — Idols, or visible recognised Symbols, common to all Religions: Hatred only when insincere: The property of every Hero, that he come back to sincerity, to reality: Protestantism and 'private judgment.' No living communion possible among men who believe only in hearsays. The Hero-Teacher, who delivers men out of darkness into light. Not abolition of Hero-worship does Protestantism mean; but rather a whole World of Heroes, of *sincere*, believing men. (161.) — Luther; his obscure, seemingly-insignificant birth. His youth schooled in adversity and stern reality. Becomes a Monk. His religious despair: Discovers a Latin Bible: No wonder he should venerate the Bible. He visits Rome. Meets the Pope's fire by fire. At the Diet of Worms; ~~The greatest moment in the modern History of men.~~ (171.) — The Wars that followed are not to be charged to the Reformation. The Old Religion once true: 'The cry of 'No Popery' foolish enough in these days. Protestantism not dead: German Literature and the French Revolution rather considerable signs of life! (181.) — How Luther held the sovereignty of the Reformation and kept Peace while he lived. His written Works: Their rugged homely strength: His dialect became the language of al

ting. No mortal heart to be called *braver*, ever lived in the Teutonic Kindred, whose character is valour: Yet a soft gentle heart withal, full of pity and love, as the truly great heart ever is: Traits of character from his Table-talk: His daughter's Deathbed: The miraculous in Nature. Love of Music. His Portrait. (185.) — Puritanism the very phasis of Protestantism that ripened into a living faith: effective enough, but genuine. Its fruit in the world. The coming of the Mayflower from Delft Haven the beginning of American Saxondom. In the history of Scotland properly one epoch of world-interest, — the Reformation by Knox: 'nation of heroes'; a *believing* nation. The Puritanism of Scotland became that of England, of New England. 1.) — Knox 'guilty' of being the bravest of all Scotchmen: Did not seek the post of Prophet. At the siege of Andrew's Castle. Emphatically a sincere man. A Galley-slave on the River Loire. An Old-Hebrew Prophet, in disguise of an Edinburgh Minister of the Sixteenth Century. 6.) — Knox and Queen Mary: 'Who are you, that presume to school the nobles and sovereign of this realm?' 'I am a subject born within the same.' His intolerance of falsehoods and knaveries. Not a mean acrid man; but he had never been virtual President and Sovereign of Scotland. His unexpected vein of drollery: A cheery social man; practical, cautious-hopeful, patient. His 'devout imagination' of a Theocracy, or Government of God. Hildebrand wished a Theocracy; Cromwell wished it, fought for it; Mahomet attained it. In one form or other, it is the one thing to be struggled for. (199.)

LECTURE V

THE HERO AS MAN OF LETTERS. JOHNSON, ROUSSEAU, BURNS

The Hero as Man of Letters altogether a product of these very ages: A Heroic Soul in very strange guise. Literary

men; genuine and spurious. Fichte's 'Divine Idea of the World': His notion of the True Man of Letters. Goethe, the Pattern Literary Hero. (p. 206.) — The disorganised condition of Literature, the summary of all other modern disorganisations. The Writer of a true Book our true modern Preacher. Miraculous influence of Books: The Hebrew Bible. Books are now our actual University, our Church, our Parliament. With Books, Democracy is inevitable. *Thought* the true thaumaturgic influence, by which man works all things whatsoever. (212.) — Organisation of the 'Literary Guild': Needful discipline; 'priceless lessons' of Poverty. The Literary Priesthood, and its importance to society. Chinese Literary Governors. Fallen into strange times; and strange things need to be speculated upon. (222.) — An age of Scepticism: The very possibility of Heroism formally abnegated. Benthamism an *eyeless* Heroism. Scepticism, Spiritual Paralysis, Insincerity: Heroes gone-out; Quacks come-in. Our brave Chatham himself lived the strangest mimetic life all along. Violent remedial revulsions: Chartisms, French Revolutions: The Age of Scepticism passing away. Let each Man look to the mending of his own Life. (228.) — Johnson one of our Great English Souls. His miserable Youth and Hypochondria: Stubborn Self-help. His loyal submission to what is really higher than himself. How he stood by the old Formulas: Not less original for that. Formulas; Their Use and Abuse. Johnson's unconscious sincerity. His Twofold Gospel, a kind of Moral Prudence and clear Hatred of Cant. His writings sincere and full of substance. Architectural nobleness of his Dictionary. Boswell, with all his faults, a true hero-worshipper of a true Hero. (236.) — Rousseau a morbid, excitable, spasmodic man; intense rather than strong. Had not the invaluable 'talent of Silence.' His Face, expressive of his character. His Egoism: Hungry for the praises of men. His books: Passionate appeals, which did once more struggle towards Reality: A Prophet to his Time; as he could, and as the Time could. Rosepink, and artificial

bedizenment. Fretted, exasperated, till the heart of him went mad: He could be cooped, starving, into garrets; laughed at as a maniac; but he could not be hindered from setting the world on fire. (247.) — Burns a genuine Hero, in a withered, unbelieving, secondhand Century. The largest soul of all the British lands, came among us in the shape of a hard-handed Scottish Peasant. His heroic Father and Mother, and their sore struggle through life. His rough untutored dialect: Affectionate joyousness. His writings a poor fragment of him. His conversational gifts: High duchesses and low ostlers alike fascinated by him. (252.) — Resemblance between Burns and Mirabeau. Official Superiors: The greatest 'thinking-faculty' in this land superciliously dispensed with. Hero-worship under strange conditions. The notablest phasis of Burns's history his visit to Edinburgh. For one man who can stand prosperity, there are a hundred that will stand adversity. Literary Lionism. (256.)

LECTURE VI

THE HERO AS KING. CROMWELL, NAPOLEON: MODERN REVOLUTIONISM

The King the most important of Great Men; the summary of all the various figures of Heroism. To enthrone the Ablest Man, the true business of all Social procedure; The Ideal of Constitutions. Tolerable and intolerable approximations. Divine Rights and Diabolic Wrongs. (p. 262.) — The world's sad predicament; that of having its Ablest Man to seek, and not knowing in what manner to proceed about it. The era of Modern Revolutionism dates from Luther. The French Revolution no mere act of General Insanity: Truth clad in hell-fire; the Trump of Doom to Plausibilities and empty Routine. The cry of 'Liberty and Equality' at bottom the repudiation of sham Heroes. Hero-worship exists forever and everywhere; from divine adora-

...tion down to the common courtesies of man and man: The soul of Order, to which all things, Revolutions included, work. Some Cromwell or Napoleon the necessary finish of a Sansculottism. The manner in which Kings were made, and Kingship itself first took rise. (267.) — Puritanism: a section of the universal war of Belief against Make-believe. Laud a weak ill-starred Pedant; in his spasmodic vehemence heeding no voice of prudence, no cry of pity. Universal necessity for true Forms: How to distinguish between True and False. The nakedest Reality preferable to any empty Semblance, however dignified. (273.) — The work of the Puritans. The Sceptical Eighteenth century, and its constitutional estimate of Cromwell and his associates. No wish to disparage such characters as Hampden, Eliot, Pym; a most constitutional, unblamable, dignified set of men. The rugged outcast Cromwell, the man of them all in whom one still finds human stuff. The One thing worth revolting for. (277.) — Cromwell's 'hypocrisy,' an impossible theory. His pious Life as a Farmer until forty years of age. His public successes honest successes of a brave man. His participation in the King's death no ground of condemnation. His eye for facts no hypocrite's gift. His Ironsides the embodiment of this insight of his. (282.) — Know the men that may be trusted: Alas, this is yet, in these days, very far from us. Cromwell's hypochondria: His reputed confusion of speech: His habit of prayer. His speeches unpremeditated and full of meaning. His *reticences*; called 'lying' and 'dissimulation': Not one falsehood proved against him. (289.) — Foolish charge of 'ambition.' The great Empire of Silence: Noble silent men, scattered here and there, each in his department; silently thinking, silently hoping, silently working. Two kinds of ambition; one wholly blamable, the other laudable, inevitable: How it actually was with Cromwell. (296.) — Hume's Fanatic-Hypocrite theory. How indispensable everywhere a *King* is, in all movements of men. Cromwell, as King of Puritanism, of England. Constitutional palaver: Dismissal of the Rump Parliament.

l's Parliaments and Protectorship: Parliaments failed, there remained nothing for him but the way of tism. His closing days: His poor old Mother. It to men's judgments that he appealed; nor have men him very well. (304.) — The French Revolution, the 'st' of Protestantism. Napoleon, infected with the ices of his age: Had a kind of sincerity, — an instinct the *practical*. His *faith*, — 'the Tools to him that die them,' the whole truth of Democracy. His dread of Anarchy. Finally, his quackeries got the and: He would found a 'Dynasty': Believed in the dupeability of Men. This Napoleonism was falsehood, and could not last. (317.)

Z

NOTES

"Thomas Carlyle, with his natural taste for what is manly and daring in character, has suffered no heroic trait in his favorites to drop from his biographical and historical pictures." — EMERSON, Essay on Heroism.

LECTURE I

THE HERO AS DIVINITY

Page 1, line 2. **Great Men**: Cf. Sartor Resartus, Bk. II, Ch. VIII: "Great Men are the inspired (speaking and acting) Texts of that divine Book of Revelations, whereof a chapter is completed from epoch to epoch and by some named History."

1, 7. Hero-worship: This term was probably borrowed from David Hume's Philosophical Essays, Vol. IV, Sec. V, Various Forms of Polytheism; Allegory, Hero-Worship: "The same principles naturally deify mortals, superior in power, courage, or understanding, and produce hero-worship," etc. pp. 444, 445 (Boston, 1854).

1, 12. Universal History: For elaboration of this thought, see Carlyle's C. & M. Essays, Vol. III, On History Again. Carlyle's conception of History as "Biography of Great Men" has been much criticised by scientific historians and philosophers; see Mazzini's censure, Introduction, p. xxiv.

3, 25. religion: The word, as used here, suggests both derivations, accepted by modern etymologists; from *relegère*, to read or ponder again; from *religère*, to bind again. See Cent. Dict.

4, 7, 8. **Time . . . resting on Eternity:** Cf. Carlyle's C. & M. Essays, Vol. III, Characteristics: "Yet Time reposes on Eternity," etc.

5, 7. **stocks:** From A.-S. *stocc*, trunk of tree; used in Bible for idolatry; see Isaiah xlii: 19, etc.; possibly reference here to Druidism.

5, 32. **Quackery and dupery:** Unique, effective words, often used by Carlyle.

6, 17. **Grand Lamaism:** Religion of Thibet and Mongolia; priests are called Grand Lamas.

6, 19. **Mr. Turner's Account:** Samuel Turner, sent to Thibet by Warren Hastings, in behalf of East India Company.

6, 30. **methods of their own:** For Mr. Turner's description of the competitive, riotous methods, see *An Account of Embassy*, by Captain Samuel Turner (London, 1800), Ch. VIII, pp. 310-316.

7, 12. **Allegory:** Carlyle may refer especially to Hume's Essays, Vol. IV, Sec. V, Polytheism; Allegory.

8, 7, 8. **a Symbol . . . the Universe:** Cf. Goethe's *Faust*, Part II, Act V,—

"All we see before us passing,
Sign and symbol is alone;
Here, what thought can never reach to,
Is by semblances made known;
What man's word may never utter
Done in act—in symbol shown."

9, 6. **imbroglio:** From Italian, *imbrogliare*, to embroil,—confusion, intricacy; a favorite word with Carlyle.

9, 23. **fancy of Plato's:** See Plato's Republic, Bk. VII: "After this, I said, imagine the enlightenment or ignorance of our nature in a figure; behold! human beings living in a sort of underground den," etc.

10, 15. **This green flowery rock-built earth:** Platonic thoughts expressed in Carlyle's vivid, pictorial diction.

10, 28. **mere words:** See Job xxxv: 16.

11, 3. **Nescience:** "But in Carlyle's mind this conviction of the immeasurable ignorance (or Nescience as he pre-

s to call it in antithesis to science) which underlies all knowledge was not in the least 'a deep meaning,' but constant conviction, which it took a great genius like his to interpret to all who were capable of learning from him."

H. Hutton, *Modern Guides to English Thought in Matters of Faith* (London, 1887), pp. 17, 18.

11, 8. **mystery of Time**: See *Wisdom of Solomon*, ii: 5.

11, 20. **Force**: Force was often used by earlier philosophers and physicists in this sense of energy or power. See *Int. Dict.*; see, also, Coleridge's *Aids to Reflection*, LIII, c.

11, 22. **There is not a leaf**: Cf. Sartor Resartus, Bk. I, ch. XI: "The withered leaf is not dead and lost, there are forces in it and around it, though working in inverse order; else how could it rot?"

11, 32. **Leyden jars**: Invented by Vanlegh, of Leyden; used for electrical experiments.

12, 16. **All was Godlike**: Quotation from last paragraph of Richter's *Quintus Fixlein*, in Carlyle's translations.

12, 17. **the giant Jean Paul**: "Richter has been called intellectual Colossus; and in truth it is somewhat in this light that we view him." Carlyle's *C. & M. Essays*, Vol. I, chapter, p. 17. Johann Paul Friedrich Richter, 1763-1825.

12, 23. **Ishmaelitic man**: See *Gen.* xvi: 11, 12.

12, 30. **Sabeans**: See 64, 31.

12, 32. **Worship is transcendent wonder**: Cf. similar passage, Sartor Resartus, Bk. I, Ch. X.

13, 6, 7: **through every star**: This passage suggests Emerson's *The Higher Pantheism*, —

The sun, the moon, the stars, the seas, the hills, and the plains,
Are not these, O soul, the vision of Him who reigns!"

130, Sartor Resartus, Bk. III, Ch. VIII.

13, 12, 13. **a window . . . Infinitude**: Another quotation from Sartor Resartus, Bk. I, Ch. XI: "Rightly viewed, the meanest object is insignificant; all objects are as windows, through which the philosophic eye looks into Infinitude."

tude itself." Similar thoughts are found in Richter's Titian, Cycles, 20, 64, and Levana, II, IV, Sec. 37; III, Sec. 17.

13, 24. St. Chrysostom: John, Patriarch of Constantinople, 347-407. See F. W. Farrar's *Lives of the Fathers*, Vol. II, pp. 615-693 (Edinburgh, 1889).

13, 27. Shekinah: See Exodus xxv: 22; xxvi: 34; quotation, also, in Sartor Resartus, Bk. I, Ch. X.

14, 3. Novalis: Friedrich von Hardenburg (Novalis), 1772-1801. See Carlyle's C. & M. Essays, Vol. II, Novalis; quotation from *Schriften*.

14, 13. mystery of God: Cf. Psalm cxxxix: 14.

14, 23, 24. divinity is in man and Nature: Suggests Tennyson's Flower in the Crannied Wall, —

"Flower in the crannied wall,
I pluck you out of the crannies,
I hold you here, root and all, in my hand,
Little flower,—but, if I could understand
What you are, root and all and all in all,
I should know what God and man is."

16, 3. King: This derivation of king is refuted by later etymologists, who derive the word from *cyng*, *cyning*, chief of tribe. The Cent. Dict. says: "There is no connection with *can* and *cunning*."

16, 22, 23. Hero-worship . . . gone out: Cf. similar thoughts in Carlyle's Past and Present, Bk. I, Ch. VI, Hero-Worship.

17, 20. The great man . . . lightning: Cf. "She [Nature] produces in every age men suited to be great men; but the times do not allow them to develop their talents." Fontenelle, Digression sur les Anciens et les Modernes.

18, 19, 20. Boswell . . . Johnson: See Lecture V, pp. 245-247.

18, 22. Voltaire: Carlyle reproduced this scene of Voltaire's visit to Paris in Essays, Vol. II, Voltaire, and in Fr. Rev., Bk. I, Ch. IV. His description was largely borrowed from Mémoires sur Voltaire par Longchamp et Wagniere, ses Secrétaires (Paris, 1826), Vol. II, pp. 466, 467.

19, 2. Ferney: After 1758, Voltaire spent most of his time at Ferney, in Switzerland.

19, 6. Calases: Voltaire's efforts in behalf of persecuted Calas family. See Guizot's History of France, Vol. V, Ch. LV, pp. 205-207; also, John Morley's Voltaire, Ch. V, p. 222 (New York, 1872).

19, 10. persifleur: "He is no great Man but only a great Persifleur, a man for whom life and all that pertains to it, has at best but a despicable meaning." Carlyle's C. & M. Essays, Vol. II, Voltaire.

19, 14. Queen Antoinette: See Carlyle's C. & M. Essays, Vol. IV, The Diamond Necklace.

19, 15. Douanier: Custom-house official.

19, 18. Va bon train: Make good speed; go fast.

19, 28. Pontiff of Encyclopedism: Reference to Johnson's Dictionary and "Johnsonese" style. !!!

21, 21. jokuls: Icelandic, glaciers; a paragraph noted for forceful diction.

22, 8, 9: Elder or Poetic Edda: Edda of Sæmund, translated by A. S. Cottle (Bristol, 1797); also translated by Benjamin Thorpe (London, 1866).

22, 14. several other books: Snorro (or Snorri) Sturlason (Sturlason or Sturluson), born 1178, was author of Heimskringla, The Gylfa, Skaldskoparmal (Scaldic Songs), Hattalykill, or Key of the Wise, and Fræðibækur, or Manuals of Science.

22, 20. Prose Edda: Translated by G. W. Dasent (Stockholm, 1842); also by J. Blackwell, added to Mallet's Northern Antiquities, translated by Bishop Percy (London, 1847).

23, 11, 12. Asgard, Jötunheim: For description of their cosmogony, see Benjamin Thorpe's Northern Mythology, Vol. I, pp. 10, 11; also Mary E. Litchfield's The Nine Worlds (Boston, 1890).

23, 21. Ladrões Islands: Islands in Pacific, discovered by Magellan, 1819, and named Ladrões, Islands of Thieves, because of character of natives. In 1668 missionaries were sent by Mariana, queen of Austria, and the name was

changed to Mariana Islands. For account of inhabitants, see *First Voyage round the World by Magellan*, edited by Lord Stanley (London, 1874), pp. 9, 68-70; also Captain Anson's *Voyages* (1742), Bk. III, Ch. I; Freycinet's *Voyage autour du Monde*, II.

24, 5. *Hymir* (also *Ymir*): Created by the meeting of flames and frozen vapor. See Thorpe's *Northern Mythology*, Vol. I, pp. 3-5.

24, 9. *Thor*:

"I am the God Thor,
I am the War God,
I am the Thunderer,
Here in my Northland,
My fastness and fortress,
Reign I forever!"

Longfellow, *Tales of a Wayside Inn*; *Saga of King Olaf*.

24, 13. *Hammer*:

"In another place
Thor's hammer gleamed o'er Thor's red-bearded face."

William Morris, *The Earthly Paradise*; *The Lovers of Godrin*. For Eddaic account of Thor's hammer or mallet, see Mallet's *Northern Antiquities*, p. 417.

24, 17. *Balder* (or *Baldur*): Invulnerable to everything except the mistletoe. See Dasent's translation of *Edda*, pp. 70-73 (Stockholm, 1842); see, also, 46, 18.

24, 24. *God Wünsch* (or *Wish*): See Grimm's *Teutonic Mythology*, Vol. I, pp. 138-144 (London, 1883).

25, 1. *Aegir*: For description, see R. B. Anderson's *Norse Mythology*, pp. 39, 40, 343-349.

25, 15. *incessant invasions*: Danish invasions, about 802-880.

25, 27. *recognition of forces of Nature*: "Carlyle's characteristic delight in Odin and the Scandinavian mythology is a mere reflection of this strong appreciation of the religion of the volcano, the thunder-cloud, and the lightning-flash," etc. R. H. Hutton, *Modern Guides to English Thought in Matters of Faith*, p. 25.

26, 28. constructing a world :

'From Ymir's flesh the earth was formed,
And from his bones the hills," etc.

Samund's Edda, Lay of Vafthrúdmir ; see, also, **H. W. Mabie's** Stories retold from the Eddas (Boston, 1882).

27, 1. Hyper-Brobdignagian : Reference to Giant-Land in Swift's Gulliver's Travels ; Brobdingnag.

27, 8. Tree Igdrasil (or Yggdrasil) : See Dasent's translation of Edda, pp. 19-21 ; also Thorpe's Northern Mythology, Vol. I, pp. 11-13 ; also The Sacred Tree, in Religion and Myth, by Mrs. J. H. Philpot (London, 1897).

27, 14. Nornas (or Normas) : Fates.

"The Normas besprinkle
The Ash Yggdrasil."

Lord Lytton, Harold, Bk. VIII.

27, 25, 26. Tree of Existence : Cf. Past and Present, Bk. I, Ch. VI.

27, 28. the infinite conjugation : Quotation from Carlyle's Fr. Rev., Bk. III, Ch. I : "The all of things is an infinite conjugation of the verb, To Do."

27, 31. Ulfila (also written Ulfilas, Ulphilas, and Wulfilas) : About 311-381, Gothic missionary and Bible translator. See W. P. Walsh's Heroes of the Mission Field, pp. 34-43 (New York, 1890).

28, 3. Machine of the Universe : Sarcastic reference to theories of utilitarianism, etc. ; see explanation 229, 1-16.

29, 3. such System of Thought : Suggests Tennyson's Locksley Hall,—

"Yet I doubt not through the ages, one increasing purpose runs,
And the thoughts of men are widen'd with the process of the suns."

30, 16. Trebisond (or Trebizond) : Ancient Trapezus in Asia Minor. In 1204 Alexius entered the city, was crowned Grand Comenus, and founded an empire which lasted until

1462, when conquered by Mohammed II. Alexius III rebuilt Monastery of Sumelas, and issued "golden bull" which became its charter. Cardinal Bessarion wrote *The Praise of Trebizond* (Ἐγκώμιον Τραπεζούντος).

Council of Trent: Ecumenical Council, 1545-1563. See *Ecumenical Councils* (in *Historical Studies*) by Eugene Lawrence, pp. 187-197 (New York, 1876).

Athanasius: Bishop of Alexandria, about 296-373, opponent of Arius; Carlyle's characteristic plurals used here.

Dantes, Luthers: They represent unknown poets and reformers of Norse history.

31, 4, 5. Heimskringla: 3 vols., *Chronicles of the Kings of Norway*, translated by Samuel Laing, revised by R. B. Anderson (London, 1889).

31, 14. Saxo Grammaticus: Danish historian, died about 1204.

31, 19. Torfæus: Thormodr Torfason, Icelandic historian, 1639-1719.

31, 30. Wuotan: See Grimm's *Teutonic Mythology*, Vol. I, pp. 62, 131-133, 160 (London, 1883); see, also, Anderson's *Norse Mythology*, pp. 233-236, *The Historical Odin*.

32, 17. Lope: Felix Lope de Vega, Spanish dramatist, 1562-1635. See Ticknor's *History of Spanish Literature*, Vol. II, Ch. XIII.

32, 21. Adam Smith: 1723-1790. Dissertation on the Origin of Language was added to later editions of *Theory of Moral Sentiments*. See John Rae's *Adam Smith* (London and New York, 1895).

33, 26, 27. knows not what he is: Cf. Plato's *Charmides*: "For self-knowledge would certainly be maintained by me to be the very essence of knowledge," etc.

34, 16. Arundel-marble: Ancient sculptures, with tablets dating back to 263 B.C., collected by Thomas Harvard, Earl of Arundel, and later given to Oxford University.

35, 20. The number Twelve: See Grimm's *Teutonic Mythology*, Vol. I, p. 26.

35, 32. Cestus of Venus: The embroidered girdle; see

iad, XIV, 214; also Schiller's Letters on *Æsthetic Culture*; also Carlyle's Life of Schiller, pp. 128-130.

36, 10. Odin's Runes: Rûn (Gaelic, secret) was applied to all mysterious writing or speech. See Odin's Rune Song in Elder Edda, —

"I know that I hung
On a wind-rocked tree
Nine whole nights," etc.

See, also, Mallet's *Northern Antiquities* (London, 1847), pp. 225-233.

36, 20. Atahualpa (also written Atahualpa): Inca or Prince of Peru, killed 1533. See Prescott's *Conquest of Peru*, Vol. I, Bk. I, Ch. II.

36, 22. Dios: God. An attempt was made to convert Atahualpa to Christianity by Father Valverde.

38, 12. Wednesbury (or Wodenburg): Town in Stafford.

Wansborough (or Wanborough): Town in Surrey.

Wanstead: Town in Essex.

Wandsworth: Town in Surrey.

38, 21. For this Odin . . . God: "It must after all be confessed that we cannot discern anything very certain concerning Odin, but only this, that he was the founder of new religion," etc. Mallet's *Northern Antiquities*, p. 83.

39, 7. Thought: "Life is but thought." Coleridge.

40, 15. The essence of the Scandinavian: Carlyle's imagination over-emphasizes the poetic nature of Norse mythology and hides many of its sterner phases. See the *Instinctive Messages of the Old Religions*, by Rev. George Matheson (London, Edinburgh, and New York, 1894), pp. 17-275, *The Message of the Teuton*: "What is the mythology of the Eddas but a history of the survival of the fittest, and a delineation of how that survival has been effected through struggle?" etc. p. 270.

41, 30. Valkyrs (or Valkyries): Maidens sent to bring warriors to Valhalla; see Thomas Gray's *The Fatal Sisters*.

41, 30, 31. Hall of Odin (or Valhalla):

"For all the nobler sons of mortal men,
On battle-field have met their death, and now
Feast in Valhalla, in my father's hall."

Matthew Arnold, Balder Dead.

42, 19, 20. Valour . . . value: Both are derived from Latin *valère*, to be strong, to be worth.

42, 21. get rid of Fear: Cf. Macbeth III, ii:

"Our fears do make us traitors."

43, 6. Old kings, about to die:

"Thus sailed the Sea-king, wrapped in smoke and fire,
On his last voyage across the stormy wave,
The blazing log-ship for his funeral pyre,
The ocean for his grave."

A. F. Major's Songs and Sagas of the Norsemen; The Burial of the Sea-King (London, 1894).

43, 17, 18. Blakes and Nelsons: English admirals; Blake 1598-1657; Nelson, 1758-1805. See Captain A. T. Mahan's Life of Nelson (1897).

43, 19. Agamemnon: See Iliad, XI, 91-661; also Troilus and Cressida, I, iii.

43, 21. Hrolf (or Rolf): See Heimskringla, Vol. I, 31, 308-317; II, 50; III, 236-237.

44, 32. Banyan-tree: Sacred tree of India, with far-reaching roots and branches.

45, 9. Cow Adumbla (also Audhumbla): See 16, 31. Eddaic account in Mallet's Northern Antiquities, p. 403.

46, 4. Gray's fragments: Thomas Gray's poems, The Fatal Sisters and The Descent of Odin.

46, 5, 6. Pope . . . Homer: Cf. T. C., Vol. II, p. 78, Journal: "Pope's 'Homer's Odyssey,' surely a very false, and though ingenious and talented, yet bad translation."

46, 17. knuckles grow white: "He clutched the haft of his hammer with his hands, so that the knuckles whitened." Dasent's translation of Edda, p. 52.

46, 18. Balder dies: See 24, 17; also Matthew Arnold's poem, Balder Dead.

- 46, 21. **Hermoder**: Greek Hermes, swiftest of gods.
- 47, 8. **Uhland**: Ludwig Uhland, 1787-1862; wrote Monograph, *Mythus von Thor* (Stuttgart, 1830). See Menzel's *German Literature*, Vol. III, p. 212.
- 48, 2. **Brobdignag**: See 27, 1.
- 48, 6. **Jack the Giant-killer**: See Mallet's *Northern Antiquities*, p. 435, and J. C. Murray's *Ballads and Songs of Scotland*, pp. 36, 37 (1874).
- 48, 9. **world-tree**: See 27, 8.
- 48, 11. **shoes of swiftness**: Jack possessed "an invisible coat, a cap of wisdom, shoes of swiftness, and a resistless sword."
- 48, 17. **Amleth**: See *The Sources of the Plot, Rolfe's edition of Hamlet*, pp. 12-14 (New York, 1881).
- 48, 30. **greatness of soul**: Cf. Ovid's *Metam.*, XIII: "It is the mind that makes the man, and our vigor is in our immortal soul."
- 49, 5. **Hindoo Mythologist**: Reference may be to mythological poem, *Gitagovinda*, composed by Jayadeva in twelfth century. The ethical teaching refers to the vanity of objects of sense.
- 49, 6. **German Philosopher**: "In all German systems, since the time of Kant, it is the fundamental principle to deny the existence of matter." Carlyle's *C. & M. Essays*, Vol. II, *Novalis*.
- 49, 8. **We are such stuff**: Favorite quotation with Carlyle, —
- "We are such stuff
As Dreams are made on; and our little life
Is rounded with a sleep."
- Tempest, IV, i.
- 49, 27. **the Giant Skrymir**: Eddaic account of Thor's journey in Mallet's *Northern Antiquities*, p. 373.
- 50, 29; 51, 2. **Cat; Old Woman**: See, also, Thorpe's *Northern Mythology*, Eddaic account, Vol. I, pp. 62, 63; Dasent's translation of *Edda*, pp. 59-61.

51, 16, 17. Time . . . wrestle: Similar thought in Schiller's *The Immutable* and Pope's *Pastorals*, Winter, 88.

51, 32; 52, 1. Mimer-smithy: Mimer was the god of wisdom. Odin embalmed his head and consulted it as an oracle.

52, 6, 7. rare old Ben: "O rare Ben Jonson!" Sir John Young, Epitaph.

52, 9. American Backwoods: Possibly reference to writings of Irving or Cooper.

52, 11. Twilight of the Gods (or Ragnarök): See Matthew Arnold's *Balder Dead*.

"Far to the south beyond the blue, there spreads
Another heaven, the boundless," etc.

Eddaic account in Mallet's *Northern Antiquities*, p. 451.

52, 28. phoenix fire-death: The tradition of the Arabian phoenix, which, once a cycle, sets fire to its nest of spices and rises from the ashes; emblem of immortality. See Herodotus, II, 73; the legend is also found in Persian and Sanskrit literature; see, also, *Tempest* III, iii, and Moore's *Paradise and the Peri*.

53, 6. King Olaf: Olaf II, 995-1030. See Carlyle's *Early Kings of Norway*. Also Snorro's *Heimskringla*, Vol. I, pp. 3, 47-50, etc.

54, 7. Pindar's time: About 522-443 B.C. For Pindar's description of Nemean games, see *Nem.*, II, 4, 5 and *Olymp.*, XIII, 44.

54, 19. Consecration of Valour: Cf. discussion of Norse religion in Mallet's *Northern Antiquities*, p. 106. Also *The Faiths of the World*, St. Giles Lectures (New York, 1882), pp. 213-232.

55, 7. Meister: This passage is found in Carlyle's translation of Wilhelm Meister's *Apprenticeship and Travels*, Vol. III, Ch. X, pp. 72, 73 (London, 1874).

LECTURE II

THE HERO AS PROPHET. MAHOMET: ISLAM

6. **welcoming a Great Man**: Same thought expressed in Past and Present, Bk. I, Ch. VI.

6. **ever the same kind**: Cf. 37, 12: "A hero is a man at all points."

6. **deliquium of love**: Literally, want or defect; in physics, melting process; also used, as here, melting or mood.

7. **all the good**: Cf. Carlyle's C. & M. Essays, 106th: "We are firm believers in the maxim that the right judgment of any man or thing it is useful, nay, to see his good qualities before pronouncing on his

1. **current hypothesis**: Cf. Washington Irving's Life and his Successors, Bk. I, Ch. XXXIX. For studies of Mahomet, see Ali Ameer's Critical Examination of the Life and Teachings of Mahomet; W. Muir's Mahomet, Vol. IV, Ch. XXXVII; Dr. Gustav Weil's Leben des Propheten (Stuttgart, 1843); A. Sprenger's Leben und die Lehre des Mohammed (Berlin, 1861).

7. **Pococke**: Edward Pocock, or Pococke, English scholar, 1604-1691; author of Specimen Historiæ Ara-

18. **Hugo Grotius**, Dutch publicist and theologian, 1583-1645.

18. **pigeon**: For traditions about Mahomet, see Life of Mahomet, Vol. I, pp. lxiii, lxiv; see, also, Vol. I, iii, —

"Was Mahomet inspired with a dove?
Thou with an eagle art inspired."

1. **Cagliostro**: Giuseppe Balsamo, or Count Cagliostro, 1743-1795. A charlatan who sold eter-

1. See Carlyle's C. & M. Essays, Vol. III, Count

Amosro: See the s. Magliostro's *Stammbaum*; Alexander von Leopold Bassano, or *Memoirs of a Physician*.

53. 11. *Mirabano*: Cf. Carlyle's discussion of Mirabano's activity in *Ed. Rev.*, Vol. I, Sk. X, Ch. VI.

53. 12. *Infinite Unknowing*: The same thought is found in Emerson, *Journal*, Oct. 14, 1880.

53. 13. *Inspiration of the Almighty*: See Job xxxii:8. *Ed. Rev.*, 18: 16.

53. 14. *Man according to God's own heart*: See Acts xiii: 22.

53. 15. 16. *It is not in man*: See Jer. x: 23.

53. 17. *repugnance*: Cf. Acts xxvi: 20, adapted.

53. 18. *pure*: Carlyle uses "pure" here in sense of Kantian philosophy. — non-sensuous. See *Cent. Dict.*

53. 19. 20. *Savage inaccessible, etc.*: Vivid picture description.

54. 1. *Arab character*: Discussion of Arab traits in Sale's *Preliminary Discourse* (Wherry's Commentary on Quran, Vol. I, Sec. I, pp. 55, 56); also Gibbons' *D. & I. Ch. I*, edited as *Life of Mahomet*, by Dean Milman at V. Smith, pp. 21-45.

54. 2. *Jewish kindred*: According to tradition, Ishmael married in Arabia and had twelve sons. Cf. Gen. xvi: 15 xvii: 18: xxv: 18.

54. 3. *Sale*: George Sale, 1680-1736; made translation of Koran, 1734.

54. 4. *Sabeans*: also Sabians, from Saba, host of heaven. Sale's description of Sabian religion is found in Wherry's Commentary on Quran, Vol. I, Sec. I, pp. 34-36.

65. 15. *Book of Job*: "It evinces knowledge, not slight nor casual, of Arabian deserts, Judean mountain-ravines, mines of the Sinai peninsula, beasts and plants of the Nile region; it contemplates modes of life, both pastoral and urban; it purports to represent a distant patriarchal time, yet breathes the air of a later civilization." John F. Genung, *Epic of the Inner Life, Study of Job*, p. 91 (Boston, 1891). See, also, Coleridge's *Table-Talk*, p. 310 (New York, 1835).

- 15, 29, 30. **the Horse**: See Job xxxix: 19.
- 35, 31. **he 'laughs'**: See Job xli: 29.
- 36, 7, 8. **Black Stone**; **Caabah**: Tradition declared that Black Stone, in the shrine of Caabah at Mecca, was composed of basalt and crystals, had been sent to Abraham from heaven, and that its natural dazzling whiteness had been blackened by the kisses of impure men and women. See Muir's *Life of Mahomet*, Vol. I, pp. cxxvi, cciv.
- 36, 9. **Diodorus Siculus**: Greek historian of first century, born in Sicily; he wrote *Historical Library*, covering 8 years.
- 36, 12. **Silvestre de Sacy**: Antoine Isaac Silvestre de Sacy, 1758-1838, French orientalist.
- 36, 21, 22. **Well . . . Hagar**: See Gen. xxi: 19.
- 36, 32. **Kebalah**: Arabic word, meaning opposite; point of adoration.
- 37, 1. **Delhi . . . to Morocco**: These places represent extremes of Mahometan kingdom.
- 37, 29, 30. **Keepers of the Caabah**: Irving says this guardianship "was connected with civil dignities and privileges, and gave the holder of it the control of the sacred city." Bk. I, Ch. II.
- 38, 30. **Grandfather**: Abd al Motâlleb, guardian of the Caabah. He gave the prophet his name, Mohammed, and raised him.
- 38, 31. **Father, Abdallah**: According to tradition, he was so beautiful that on the day of his marriage to Amina, one hundred virgins of the Koreish tribe died of broken hearts. See Muir's *Life of Mahomet*, Vol. I, pp. cclix, cclxx, 9.
- 69, 22, 23. **Sergius, the Nestorian Monk**: Muir doubts the exact narrative. See Vol. II, Ch. II.
- 70, 30. **taciturn**: "The temperament of Mohammed was melancholic and in the highest degree nervous. He was generally low-spirited, thinking, and restless; and he spoke little and never without necessity." Spenger's Mohammed.
- 71, 12. **horse-shoe vein**: Reference to Walter Scott's *Waverley*, Letter Eleventh: "Ye maun ken he had a

way of bending his brows, that men saw the visible mark of a horse-shoe in his forehead, deep-dinted, as if it had been stamped there."

71, 20. Kadijah (also written Khadijah, Cadijah, Cadija, etc.): See Muir's *Life of Mahomet*, Vol. II, Ch. II, and Prideaux's *Life of Mahomet*, p. 11.

72, 28. Here am I: See 1 Sam. iii: 5.

73, 6. Mount Hara: Three miles from Mecca.

Mount Sinai: See Ex. xix: 18.

74, 5. Heraclius: Byzantine emperor, 575-641.

Chosroes: Persian king, 590-628. A deputy of Momensah said: "I have seen the Chosroes of Persia and the Caesar of Rome, but never did I behold a king among his subjects like Mahomet among his companions." Gibbons' *D. & F.*, Ch. L, p. 130.

74, 10: Sheik (also written sheikh): A venerable man, lord of tribe; later, preacher in mosque.

74, 17. Month Ramadhan (also written Ramadan, Ramadzan, etc.): The "hot" or ninth month.

75, 8. Islam (Arabic, *salem*, *salm*, peace or salvation; some Moslem writers attempt to derive it from Ishmael): See Muir's *Life of Mahomet*, Vol. II, pp. 60-70.

75, 20, 21. the wisest, the best: Cf. Dryden's *Œdipus*, III, 1, —

"Whatever is, is in its causes just."

Also, Pope's *Essay on Man*, I, 289, —

"One truth is clear, whatever is, is right."

76, 18. Though He slay me: See Job xiii: 15. ▲

76, 20. Annihilation of Self: This idea was borrowed from Goethe's *Renunciation* and Novalis' *Self-Annihilation*: "The true philosophical act is Annihilation of self" (*Selbsttödtung*). Novalis, *Schriften*, II; see, also, Carlyle's *C. & M. Essays*, Vol. II, Novalis.

76, 29. inspiration: See 61, 24.

76, 30; 77, 1. know . . . Belief: Cf. 2 Tim. i: 12. This quotation and 77, 18, 19, from Novalis, *Schriften*, II

77, 22. Ayesha : A beautiful daughter of Abu Beker, an earnest disciple of Mahomet. See Muir's *Life of Mahomet*, II, pp. 100, 111, 254, 265, III, 14-16, 229, 236-238.

78, 5, 6. gained but thirteen followers : Cf. Gibbon's *D. & F.*, Ch. L, p. 114: "Three years were silently employed in the conversion of fourteen proselytes, the first fruits of his mission."

78, 31. died by assassination : Ali was fourth Caliph. See Muir's *Annals of the Early Caliphate*; also, Irving's *Mahomet and his Successors*, Bk. II. For account of Ali's services, see Muir's *Life of Mahomet*, Vol. II, pp. 48, 66, IV, pp. 33, 34.

79, 15. good Uncle : Another uncle, Abu Lahab, wealthy and proud, was Mahomet's bitter opponent.

80, 9. laid plots : Mahomet was nearly strangled in the Caabah, but was rescued by Abu Beker; later assassinations were also planned, but were foiled.

80, 14, 15. hide in caverns : Tradition locates one cave on Mount Thor, near Mecca. When the Koreish pursuers came to the mouth of the cave, an acacia tree suddenly sprang up to hide the entrance, and a pigeon's nest and spider's web rested on the branches.

81, 2. Hegira : Instituted by Omar, second Caliph.

82, 12. Charlemagne's conversion of the Saxons : About 772-785. Carlyle's defence of Mahomet's propagation by the sword is weak and disjointed. Cf. Muir's *Life of Mahomet*, Vol. IV, Ch. XXXVII: "The sword of Mahomet and the Coran are the most fatal enemies of Civilization, Liberty, and Truth which the world has yet known." See, also, James Freeman Clarke's *Ten Great Religions*, Ch. XI, Sec. 7; also, Wherry's *Commentary on Quran*, Sec. II, p. 84.

83, 30, 31. chaff . . . wheat : See Jer. xxiii: 28; Luke xxii: 31, etc.

83, 30. Not how much chaff : A forceful antithesis.

84, 11. Homoiousion : (Gr.) Literally, similar substance. This sect believed the Son was of *like* essence as the Father; opposed to *Homocousion*, literally, same substance. This

sect maintained that the Son was of the *same* essence as the Father.

85, 16. Duty: Cf. Eccles. xii: 13.

85, 28. Sons of Adam: See Deut. xxxii: 8.

86, 7. Koran: More properly Quran, from *qurān*, to read. For import of word see Sale's Preliminary Discourse, Sec. III, p. 96.

86, 30. toilsome reading: See Sale's Preliminary Discourse, Sec. III, pp. 102-104; Rodwell's Quran, notes.

87, 13. flung pell-mell into a chaos: Authority for statement is doubted by Muir, *Life of Mahomet*, Introduction, p. iv.

87, 13, 14. published it: Two years after Mahomet's death Zeid von Thabit, former secretary, began to gather text from "date-leaves, and tablets of white stone, and from the breasts of men." Weil's Mohammed, p. 348.

87, 26. written in Heaven: According to tradition, an ornamental volume from God's throne was brought by Gabriel and revealed to Mahomet. See Quran, Ch. XLV, 17-19.

88, 10. Prideaux: Humphrey Prideaux, 1648-1724; author of *Life of Mahomet*; also see translations and commentaries by Sale, Geiger, Burton, Muir, Rodwell, Hughes' Dictionary of Islam, and E. M. Wherry's Commentary on the Quran.

88, 18. deceit prepense: For Mahomet's hallucinations, etc., see Irving's *Life of Mahomet*, Vol. I, Ch. XXXIX; Renan's *Studies in Religious History and Criticism*; W. W. Ireland's *Blot upon the Brain*. "The student of history will trace for himself how the pure and lofty aspirations of Mahomet were first tinged and then gradually debased by a half-unconscious self-deception." Muir's *Life of Mahomet*, Vol. IV, Ch. XXXVII.

88, 27, 28. breathless intensity: "And of all the Suras [chapters] it must be remarked that they were intended not for readers but for hearers . . . and that they were left, as the imperfect sentences show, to the manner and suggestive action of the reciter." The Quran; Introduction, J. M. Rod-

well. "Der Styl des Korans ist, seinem Inhalt und Zweck gemäss, streng, gross, furchtbar, stellenweis, warhafft erhaben." See Goethe's Mahomet, Sammt Werke, Vol. II (Stuttgart, 1854-1855). Sale says of style of Quran, Preliminary Discourse, Sec. III, pp. 103, 104: "The style of the Quran is generally beautiful and fluent, especially where it imitates the prophetic manner and Scripture phrases."

89, 28. Gabriel: See **87**, 26.

90, 2. Bedouin (Arabic *bedawi*, or *badwi*, a desert): For account of Bedouin traits see Gibbon's D. and F., Ch. L, p. 17.

90, 5. mess of pottage: See Gen. xxv: 34.

90, 23. Prophet Hud: See Sale's Preliminary Discourse in Wherry's Commentary, Sec. I, p. 21. Hud is supposed to be Heber (1 Chron. vii: 31). He was prophet of tribe of Ad, and was sent to reclaim the Adites from idolatry. A storm of hot winds raged seven nights and eight days, and all the tribe perished except those who went away with Hud.

91, 18. Mahomet . . . miracles: See Muir's Life of Mahomet, Vol. I, p. lxxv; Vol. II, pp. 257, 262; also Quran, Ch. VI, 10, 109-111, Ch XI, 3, etc.

92, 3. cattle: See Quran, Ch. VI, 138; Ch. XL, 79.

92, 21. Ye have compassion: See Matt. xviii: 33; 1 Pet. iii: 8.

93, 4. world . . . Nothing: Cf. Sartor Resartus, Bk. III, Ch. VIII: "Stately they tread the Earth as if it were a firm substance: fool! the Earth is but a film."

95, 3. Not happiness: Cf. similar thoughts in Sartor Resartus, Bk. II, Ch. IX; The Everlasting Yea; Wotton Reinfred, p. 92; T. C., Vol. I, p. 389.

95, 29. clouting: A.-S. *clut*, a patch; see Josh. ix: 5 and Jer. xxxviii: 11.

96, 6. His last words: For account of Mahomet's last days, see Muir's Life of Mahomet, Vol. IV, pp. 242-278. "After a little he prayed in a whisper, — 'Lord, grant me pardon, and join me to the companionship on high,' " etc. p. 279.

96, 13. The Lord giveth: See Job i: 21.

96, 21. Seid's daughter: See Muir's *Life of Mahomet*, Vol. IV, pp. 101, 102.

96, 32. No, by Allah: See **77, 29.**

97, 11. Greek Emperors: According to tradition, Heraclius sought Mahomet's advice, and later became a convert. See Muir's *Life of Mahomet*, Vol. IV, pp. 50-54.

97, 21. War of Tabûc: Sept.-Oct., 630. See Muir's *Life of Mahomet*, Vol. IV, Ch. XXVIII.

98, 6. No Dilettantism: Cf. T. C., Vol. II, p. 92: "The sin of this age is Dilettantism," etc.; also *Past and Present*, Bk. III, Ch. II.

99, 4. propriety of giving alms: Prescribed alms, *Zakat*, were enjoined; voluntary gifts, *Sadakats*, were urged.

99, 19. work of doctors: See Muir's *Life of Mahomet*, Vol. I, pp. xvi, xx, xxv, li.

100, 8, 9. Meister's Travels: This passage is found in Carlyle's translation, Vol. III, Ch. XV, p. 143 (London, 1874).

100, 22. Month Ramadhan: See **74, 17.**

101, 6. man's actions: Cf. Fletcher's *On an Honest Man's Fortune*, —

"Our acts our angels are, or good or ill,
Our fatal shadows that walk by us still."

101, 20, 21. chief end of man: See Westminster Catechism.

101, 23. Bentham: 1748-1832. Utilitarian reformer; Paley: William Paley, 1743-1805, theologian, author of *Natural Religion*, etc. Cf. T. C., Vol. II, pp. 72, 73, *Journal*, Sept. 9, 1830. "What is Jeremy Bentham's significance? Altogether intellectual, logical . . . I mean that the Utilitarians have logical machinery and do grind fiercely and potently on their own foundations." Paley's *Science of Morality* discussed by Coleridge, *Aids to Reflection*, CXI.

102, 10. It is not Mahomet: Litotes is a favorite rhetorical figure with Carlyle.

103, 7. Malays: Inhabitants of Peninsula, southern point of Asia.

Papuaans: Inhabitants of New Guinea, in Eastern Archipelago.

103, 18. Granada: Conquered by Saracens, 711-714; **Delhi:** conquered by Saracens, 635-642. See Irving's *Mahomet and his Successors*, Bk. II, Ch. LVIII; also Irving's *Chronicle of the Conquest of Granada*.

LECTURE III

THE HERO AS POET. DANTE; SHAKESPEARE

105, 10. all sorts of men: Cf. Carlyle's *C. & M. Essays*, Vol. I, Burns: "How does the poet speak to men with power, but by being still more a man than they?" See, also, **37, 12**, and **57, 14**.

105, 18. Mirabeau: See **60, 11**.

105, 25. Austerlitz Battles: Napoleon's defeat of the Austrians and Russians, Dec. 2, 1805.

105, 26. Marshals: Tallard, Villeroy, Berwick and others. Carlyle's admiration for prowess leads him here into extravagant hero-worship.

105, 27. Turenne: Henri de la Tour d'Auvergne, French general, 1611-1675. See G. P. R. James, *Memoirs of Great Commanders*, Vol. II.

105, 31. Petrarch: Francesco Petrarch, 1304-1374. Boccaccio: Giovanni Boccaccio, 1313-1375. See Macaulay's *Essays*, Vol. I, On the Principal Italian writers.

106, 2, 3. Burns . . . Mirabeau: Carlyle means that the intellectual acumen of Burns would have fitted him for statescraft, as well as for poetry.

106, 9. circumstance: Cf. Wilhelm Meister, Vol. I, Bk. I, Ch. XVII: "The web of life is woven," etc.; also, Byron's *Don Juan*, Canto V, 17.

106, 16. Addison: This suggests Addison's essay, *A Vision of Justice*.

106, 19. Samson: See Judges xiii: 24; xvi.

107, 2. Vates (L.): A bard or prophet, —

“Poetry is itself a thing of God,
He made his prophets poets.”

Bailey, Festus, Proem.

“And thus the poet is at once a teacher, a prophet, and a friend of gods and men.” Wilhelm Meister, Vol. I, Bk. II, Ch. II.

107, 12. Divine Idea: This paragraph suggests philosophic theories of Goethe, Schiller, and Fichte. For further discussion of Fichte's Divine Idea, see Carlyle's *C. & M. Essays*, Vol. I, *State of German Literature*, pp. 68–70.

107, 9. the open secret: Cf. Wilhelm Meister's Travels, Ch. XIII, p. 106: “And while Nature unfolded the open secret of her beauty,” etc. (London, 1874).

107, 20, 22. Universe . . . Thought of God: “The Universe is a thought of God.” Schiller's *Essays, Aesthetic and Philosophical*, Letter 4.

108, 28. Consider the lilies: See Matt. vi : 28.

109, 8. the Beautiful: “Of the Beautiful men are seldom capable, oftener of the Good.” Wilhelm Meister's Travels, Ch. VII, p. 41 (London, 1874). “In days of yore nothing was holy but the beautiful.” Schiller, *Die Gotter Griechenlands*, St. 6.

109, 12. Vauxhall: See Thackeray's *Vanity Fair*, Ch. VI.

109, 19. no perfect Poet: Cf.

“God is the perfect Poet,
Who in creation acts his own conceptions.”

Browning, *Paracelsus*, Sc. II.

109, 21. We are all poets: Cf. Emerson's *Literary Ethics*, “All men are poets at heart.”

109, 25. Saxo Grammaticus: See 31, 14.

110, 17. German Critics: For elaboration of thought, see Carlyle's *Essays*, Vol. I, *The State of German Literature*, pp. 65–68, comments on the Schlegels, Schiller, Fichte, Herder, Richter, and Goethe.

111, 31. Poetry . . . musical Thought: Among many

definitions of poetry may be cited, "Poetry is simply the most beautiful, impressive, and widely effective mode of saying things." Matthew Arnold, *Essays in Criticism*, Heinrich Heine. "Poetry is rhythmical, imaginative language, expressing the invention, taste, thought, passion, and insight of the human soul." E. C. Stedman, *Nature and Elements of Poetry*.

112, 6, 7. *Apocalypse of Nature*: Cf. expanded thought in Sartor Resartus, Bk. I, Ch. VIII.

112, 30. *Sceptical Dilettantism*: See 98, 5.

113, 11, 12. *Tiaraed and Diademed*: These forms are rarely used as adjectives or substantives, though given in some dictionaries.

114, 27. *five centuries*: Dante died 1321.

114, 31. *Giotto* (1276-1337): Another famous portrait is by Giannetti.

115, 14, 15. *Grim-trenchant*, etc.: This diction recalls Taine's criticism on Carlyle's style, *English Literature*, Bk. V, Ch. IV: "All is new here—ideas, style, tone,—the shape of the phrases and the very vocabulary."

115, 29. *mystic unfathomable song*: See 120, 27.

116, 14, 15. *chiaroscuro* (L. *clarus*, clear, and *oscurus*, shadowy): A successful distribution of light and shade.

116, 19. *embassy*: The embassy to the pope was to oppose the approach of Charles of Valois to Florence, 1301. See Mrs. Oliphant's *Makers of Florence*, pp. 51, 52.

116, 22. *Beatrice*: The story of their meeting (May, 1274 or 1275) is told by Dante in *Vita Nuova*. See D. G. Rossetti's *Dante and his Circle* (London, 1874).

116, 27. *wedded*: Beatrice married Simone de Bardi.

116, 28. *her death*: See last chapters of *Vita Nuova*. Later critics have discussed the reality of Beatrice. Some commentators consider her an ideal, an allegory; others accept the tale of her life as written by Dante, Boccaccio, and Villari. See J. A. Symonds, *In the Key of Blue*, etc. (1893), *The Dantesque and Platonic Ideals of Love*.

117, 2. Dante himself was wedded: About 1293 Dante married "Gemma." See Mrs. Oliphant's *Makers of Florence*, Dante, pp. 30-32.

117, 8. Prior: In June, 1300, Dante was one of the Priors or Signoria of Florence, the term of office lasting two months.

117, 22, 23. Guelf-Ghibelline, Bianchi-Neri: For history of these rival parties, see Mrs. Oliphant's *Makers of Florence*, Dante, pp. xvi-xviii, 6-10; also, Machiavelli's *Florentine Histories*, Vol. I. Guelfs represented the faction in interest of the pope. Ghibellines represented the faction favoring German emperors.

118, 20; 119, 14: Can della Scala: A wealthy Ghibelline prince of Verona, referred to in *Paradiso*, Canto XVII.

119, 24. Malebolge Pool: See *Inf.*, Canto XVIII, 1-3, —

"Luogo è in inferno, detto Malebolge,
Tutto di pietra e di color ferrigno,
Come la cerchia che d' intorno il volge.

For Diagrams of Dante's worlds see Maria Francesca Rossetti's *A Shadow of Dante* (London, 1871).

119, 25. alti guai: Loud or deep groans. See *Inf.*, III, 21.

119, 30. Divine Comedy: In a letter to Can della Scala, Dante thus explains the title, Comedy (the word "Divine" was added later): "For if we regard the matter in the commencement it is horrible and stinking, inasmuch as it begins with Hell; but, in the conclusion, it is prosperous, pleasant, and desirable, inasmuch as it ends with Paradise."

120, 6. If thou follow thy star: See *Inf.*, XV, 55, 56, for these words of Brunetto Latini.

120, 12, 13. which has made me lean: See *Paradiso*, XXV, 3, 4.

120, 21. Hic claudor: See 120, 24, 25.

120, 22. Florentines begged back, —

22
1
12

"Ungrateful Florence! Dante sleeps afar,
Like Scipio, buried by the upbraiding shore."

Byron, *Childe Harold*, IV, 51.

120, 26. Tieck: Ludwig Tieck, 1773-1853; poet, novelist, critic, translator of Shakspeare's dramas; see Carlyle's translations for extracts from Tieck.

120, 28, 29. Coleridge remarks: This idea, expressed in various forms, occurs frequently in *Biographia Literaria*, Chs. XVII and XVIII.

122, 3, 4. *canto fermo*: Literally steady song; early applied to church chanting.

122, 5. *terza rima*: "Dante's Rime terse, restrained, definite, without precise limits, has no Homeric ocean-roll, no surges and subsidences of Miltonic cadence, but, instead, a forceful onward march as of serried troops, in burnished coats of glittering steel." J. A. Symonds, *Introduction to Study of Dante*, VII.

123, 2, 3. *perfect through suffering*: See Heb. ii: 10.

123, 31. *Hall of Dite*: See Inf., VIII, 70-75, —

"Its mosques already, master, clearly
Written there in the valley I discern
Vermillion, as if issuing from the fire."

Longfellow's translation.

124, 4. *Tacitus*: Caius Cornelius Tacitus, historian, 55-117.

124, 11. *Plutus*: See Inf., VII, 13-15, —

"Quali dal vento le gonfiate vele," etc.

124, 14. *Brunetto Latini*: See Inf., XV, 24-55. Brunetto Latini had been Dante's teacher.

124, 18. *Tombs*: See Inf., X, 115-133.

124, 21, 22. *Farinata rises*: See Inf., X, 32-39. *Farinata degli Uberti*, leader of Ghibellines.

124, 22. *Cavalcante falls*: See Inf., X, 51-70.

124, 23. *fue*: See Inf., X, 61-64, —

"Colui, che attende là, per qui mi mena,
Forse cui Guido vostro ebbe a disdegno,
Le fue parole e il modo della pena
M'Avenam di costui già letto il nome."

"I said: 'Not by myself my way I find;
And unto him who leads and makes it plain
Thy Guido's soul perchance *was* ne'er inclined.'"

Fue or *fù* is past tense of *essere*, to be. Then follows Cavalcante's tragic question, "How saidst thou? *Was?* Ah, lives he then no more?"

125, 23. the eye seeing: See 138, 29.

125, 24, 25. To the mean eye: Cf. Titus i: 15.

125, 31. Dante's painting: Cf. Macaulay's Essay, Dante: "There is probably no writer in any language who has presented so many strong pictures to the mind. Yet there is probably no writer equally concise."

126, 2. Francesca and her Lover: See Inf., V, 99-104.

126, 7. della bella persona:

"Love that on gentle breast doth swiftly seize,
Seized this man *for the person beautiful*,
That was ta'en from me."

Longfellow's translation.

126, 10. alti guai: See 114, 25.

aer bruno: Gloomy, dark atmosphere.

126, 13, 14. Francesca's father: Guido de Polenta, lord of Ravenna. Francesca was married to deformed Lanciotto of Rimini, but became enamoured of his handsome brother, Paolo, and Lanciotto brought vengeance on the lovers.

126, 30. Beatrice: See Paradiso, I, 44-50. Does Carlyle forget their earlier meetings in Purgatory?

127, 6. essence of all: Cf. J. A. Symond's Introduction to the study of Dante, VI: "He goes straight to the essence of his subject, rejecting accidents, despising ornaments, and having seized its truth he grasps that with a grip of iron."

127, 12. A Dio spiacenti: See Inf., III, 59, 60.

127, 15. Non ragionam: See Inf., III, 49.

127, 17. They have not . . . hope to die: See Inf., III, 44, 45.

127, 30, 31. Byronism of taste: Cf. T. C., Vol. II, p. 75, Journal; see, also, John Morley's Critical Miscellanies, p. 217 (London, 1871): "As a negative renovation,

style's doctrine was perfect. It effectually put an end to the mood of Byronism."

128, 7, 8. tremolar dell' onde: This passage sometimes reads, "tremolar della marina." See *Purg.*, II, 115, 116.

128, 17. Giovanna: See *Purg.*, VIII, 71-78, —

"Di 'a Giovanna mia, che per me chiami."

128, 20. corbels: See *Purg.*, X, 130-135.

128, 26. shakes with joy: See *Purg.*, XX, 127-129, —

"Quand io senti', come cosa che cada,
Tremar lo monte," etc.

129, 27. Allegory: Cf. J. A. Symond's Introduction to a Study of Dante, IV: "At the risk of seeming to introduce a distinction where there is no difference, I should like to call the Divine Comedy an Apocalypse and not an Allegory. . . . I do not deny that the Divine Comedy is full of allegories."

130, 5. Gehenna: Lowest pit of Inferno.

131, 5. found a voice: Cf. H. W. Mabie's *Essays in Literary Interpretation*, Some Modern Readings from Dante: "He had absorbed the past and made it part of himself before he expressed the soul of it in poetry."

132, 6, 8. outer . . . inmost: Cf. Ruskin's distinction between "books of the hour" and "books of all time" in *Sesame and Lilies*, Of King's Treasuries.

133, 4. Greece, where is it? Cf. Byron's *Childe Harold*, Canto II.

133, 22. Mahomet: See **103, 18.**

134, 13. Utility? This is a thrust at utilitarian spirit.

134, 13, 14. do his work: Cf. Goethe's *Wilhelm Meister*, II, Bk. VII, Ch. I, p. 125: "The safe plan is, always simply to do the task that lies nearest us."

134, 16. Caliph Thrones: Mahomet and his Successors.

134, 26. piasters: Variable silver coins. Skeat's *Etym.* suggests that the word may be a "variant" of plaster.

135, 11, 12. Shakspeare and Dante: Cf. Lowell's *Among the Books*, Ser. II, Dante: "But we cannot help thinking

that if Shakespeare be the most comprehensive intellect, Dante is the highest spiritual nature that has expressed itself in rhythmical form."

136, 1. Warwickshire Squire: See Walter Savage Landor's Citation and Examination of William Shakespeare before the Worshipful Sir Thomas Lucy, Knight, etc. (in *Pentameron*, etc., 1888).

136, 8. Tree Igdrasil: See 27, 8.

136, 11, 12. Sir Thomas Lucy: It is conceded that he formed the model for Justice Shallow in *Henry IV*, Part II, and Merry Wives of Windsor.

137, 4. Catholicism abolished: Cf. Green's *Shorter History of the English People*, Ch. VII, Sec. IV.

137, 10. King-Henrys: From *Henry IV*, 1399, to *Henry VIII*, 1509.

137, 14. St. Stephen's: St. Stephen's Hall. A part of House of Commons.

137, 14, 15. hustings: Platform for Parliamentary candidates.

137, 16, 17. Freemason's Tavern: Situated in Little Queen Street, a popular place for public dinners, etc.

137, 22. gift of Nature: Cf. Novalis' *Schriften*, II: "Shakespeare was no calculator, no learned thinker; he was a mighty, many-gifted soul, whose feelings and works, like products of Nature, bear the stamp of the same spirit."

138, 9. constructing of . . . Dramas: See De Quincey's tribute to Shakespeare's constructive skill in *Miscellaneous Essays*, On the Knocking at the Gate in *Macbeth*.

138, 12. Bacon's Novum Organum: *Novum Organum Scientiarum*, 1620; noted for its creative power. See 140, 10.

138, 29. seeing eye: Cf. *Matt. xiii: 13*; *Mark viii: 18*; also, Carlyle's *C. & M. Essays*, Vol. IV, *Varnhagen von Ense's Memoirs*: "The eye of the intellect sees in all objects what it brought with it the means of seeing."

139, 12. Let there be light: See *Gen. i: 3*.

139, 24. Creative: For discussion of Shakespeare's

ative faculty, see Hiram Corson's Introduction to the study of Shakespeare, p. 12 (Boston, 1890).

140, 10, 11. secondary order : Carlyle, when visited by Lord Bacon, said : " Lord Bacon could as easily have created this planet as he could have written Hamlet." Moncreux's Conway's Thomas Carlyle, Ch. XIV (New York, 1881).

140, 13. Goethe alone : Cf. similar tribute in Carlyle's C. & M. Essays, Vol. I, Goethe.

140, 17. His characters : See Goethe's Theatre und dramatische Poesie ; Shakespeare und kein Ende.

142, 1. superiority of Intellect : Cf. Ruskin's tribute to Shakespeare in Sesame and Lilies, On the Mystery of Life and its Arts.

143, 2. without morality : Carlyle's ethical teaching is discussed in John Morley's Critical Miscellanies, pp. 222-225 (London, 1871).

143, 21. vulpine : L. *vulpus*, a fox.

144, 9. Novalis : Criticism of Shakespeare's Dramas in Schlegel's Schriften, II ; quoted, also, in Carlyle's C. & M. Essays, vol. II, Novalis.

144, 15. Nature : Cf. Edmund Sherer's Essays in English Literature, Shakespeare : " He is Nature herself, capricious, prodigal, always new, always full of surprises and of profundity."

145, 11. Sonnets : Cf. Wordsworth's Scorn not the Sonnet, —

" Scorn not the sonnet. Critic, you have frowned
Mindless of its just honours ; with this key
Shakespeare unlocked his heart."

See, also, Browning's The House, X.

145, 28. words . . . that burn :

" Bright-eyed Fancy, hov'ring o'er,
Scatters from her pictured urn,
Thoughts that breathe and words that burn."

Gray, The Progress of Poesy, III, 3.

146, 4, 5. genial laughter : Cf. Lowell's Among my

Books, Ser. I, Shakespeare Once More: "His humor and satire are never of the destructive kind; what he does in that way is suggestive only, — not breaking bubbles with Thor's hammer, but puffing them away with the breath of a clown, or shivering them with the light laugh of a genial cynic."

146, 10. the crackling of thorns: See Eccl. vii: 6. "For as the crackling of thorns under a pot, so is the laughter of the fool."

146, 13. Dogberry and Verges: City-officers in Much Ado about Nothing, III, 3.

146, 18. like sunshine: Cf. Thackeray's Sketches and Travels in London: "A good laugh is sunshine in a house."

146, 23, 24. Hamlet, in Wilhelm Meister: This poetic and keen analysis is found in Vol. I, Bk. IV, Ch. III; also, Vol. II, Bk. V, Ch. IV, Carlyle's translation.

146, 25. August Wilhelm Schlegel: Poet and translator, 1767-1845. See Course of Lectures on Dramatic Art and Literature, pp. 414-446, translated by John Black (London, 1846).

146, 28. Marlborough: John Churchill, Duke of Marlborough, 1650-1722. See Addison's The Campaign, celebrating Marlborough's victories in War of Spanish Succession.

147, 6. form one: History of Wars of the Roses, 1455-1485.

147, 6. battle of Agincourt: See Henry V, IV, 4-7.

148, 12. disjecta membra: Freely translated, fragments, disjointed parts.

148, 18. Tophet: See 2 Kings xxiii: 10, 11; Isa. xxx: 33.

148, 19. We are such stuff: See 49, 8.

148, 20. scroll in Westminster Abbey: Reference to Shakespeare's statue by Kent. In his hand is a roll with the passage from The Tempest, IV, i, beginning: "The cloud-capt Towers," etc.

149, 6. Sceptic: Cf. Ruskin's Sesame and Lilies, Mystery of Life and its Arts. See, also, God in Shakspeare, by "Clelia" (London, 1890), and The Religion of Shakespeare, by J. M. Robertson.

- 149, 22. Bringer of Light:** Cf. John iii: 19; 1 Cor. iv: 5.
- 150, 14. Æschylus:** Greek dramatist, 525-456 B.C.
- 151, 3, 4. Sir Thomas Lucy:** See Irving's Sketch Book, Stratford-on-Avon.
- 151, 5. Treadmill:** The wheel was used for grinding corn, turning machinery, etc., the axis turned by tread of prisoners.
- 151, 19. give-up . . . Indian Empire:** Carlyle is satirical here regarding the mercenary and acquisitive spirit of the age. The government of India was not transferred to the crown until 1858.
- 152, 2. New Holland:** Name given to Australia by Dutch navigator, Tasman, in 1644; often applied to lands of southern seas.
- 152, 17, 18. King Shakspeare:**
- "There Shakspeare, on whose forehead climb
The crowns o' the world."
- Mrs. Browning, A Vision of Poets.
- 152, 24. Paramatta:** A town in New South Wales.
- 152, 29. we are of one blood:**
- "Shakspeare is not our poet, but the world's."
- Walter Savage Landor, To Robert Browning.

LECTURE IV

THE HERO AS PRIEST. LUTHER, REFORMATION; KNOX,
PURITANISM.

- 154, 3. all sorts of Heroes:** See 37, 12, etc.
- 154, 10, 11. Priest; Prophet:** These terms are often allied in the Bible. See Jer. vi: 13, xxiii: 11, etc.
- 155, 3. open secret:** Goethe's thought; see 107, 9.
- 156, 9. a seer:** Cf. 1 Sam. ix: 9.
- 156, 16, 17. Theories . . . Practices.** See 135, 5-10.
- 156, 28. Saint Dominics:** Domingo de Guzman, Saint Dominic, founder of Dominicans, born in Spain, 1170. See A. T. Drane's History of St. Dominic (London, 1891).

156, 28, 29. Thebaid Eremites : Theban hermits. "The Hermits of Egypt dragged out a wretched life in perfect solitude, and were scattered here and there in caves, in deserts, in the hollows of rocks, sheltered from the wild beasts only by the cover of a miserable cottage, in which each one lived sequestered from the rest of his species." Thomas D. Fosbroke's *British Monachism* (London, 1843), *The Consuetudinal of Anchorets and Hermits*, p. 370.

156, 31. Walter Raleigh : 1552-1618. See Creighton's *Life of Sir Walter Raleigh*, or Charles Kingsley's *Sir Walter Raleigh and his Times*.

156, 31. Uifla : See **27, 31.**

156, 31, 32. Cranmer : Archbishop of Canterbury, 1489-1556. See Hume's *History of England*, Vol. III, 393-400; also C. W. Le Bas' *Life of Archbishop Cranmer*.

157, 7. Orpheus : For myth of Thracian poet, see Ovid's *Metam.*, XI; Horace's *Carmen*, I, 7-12; *Eclogues* IV, 55; Southey's *Thalaba*, etc.

157, 16. furtherances . . . obstructions : Cf. Lowell's *The Present Crisis*, —

"New occasions teach new duties,
Time makes ancient good uncouth."

157, 29. Malebolges : See **119, 24.**

158, 1. Progress of the Species : Reference to current evolutionary ideas towards which Carlyle showed much prejudice. Darwin's *Origin of the Species* did not appear until 1859. See Coleridge's *The Friend*, Sec. II, *Introd.*: "The progress of the species neither is nor can be like that of a Roman road in a right line."

158, 26. Dante's Mountain : See *Inf.*, XXXIV, 106-118.

158, 28. Columbus : Cf. *Past and Present*, Bk. III, Ch. XI, —

"Columbus, my hero," etc.

159, 23. Shakspeare's noble Feudalism : For comment on Shakspeare's *Feudalism versus Civil Liberty*, see Hume's *History of England*, Vol. IV, p. 358, note (Boston, 1849).

160, 3, 4. destruction . . . creation : Same thoughts in Sartor Resartus, Bk. III, Ch. VII; also T. C., Vol. II, 800.

160, 5. Odinism . . . Valour : See **54**, 19.

160, 22. Schweidnitz Fort : This incident of the Seven Years' War occurred Sept. 30 and Oct. 1, 1761; see Carlyle's Frederick the Great, VI, 167 (Ch. VIII, Bk. XX).

161, 14, 15. Thor's strong hammer : See **24**, 13.

162, 12, 13. worship by Symbols : Cf. Sartor Resartus, Bk. III, Ch. III, Symbols.

162, 22, 23. religious forms : Cf. Sartor Resartus, Bk. III, Ch. II, Church-clothes.

163, 6. Canopus : See **12**, 19. Caabah : See **66**, 7, 8.

163, 31. Ark of the Covenant : See Num. x : 33.

164, 24. Koreish : See **73**, 29; **84**, 25-30.

164, 25, 26. Tetzel's Pardons of Sin : For description of Tetzel's methods, see Michelet's Life of Luther, pp. 20, 21, Hazlitt's translation (1846).

166, 32. Hogstraten (or James Hoogenstraaten) : See Michelet's Life of Luther, p. 31.

167, 1. Eck : John Mayr von Eck, 1486-1543. For his "Disputation with Luther," see Michelet's Life of Luther, pp. 59, 93.

167, 7. Bellarmine (or Robert Bellarmin) : 1542-1621; wrote famous treatise on temporal power of the pope.

169, 29. Sansculottism : This term is also often used by Goethe; see Sammt. Werke, XIII, 396 (Stuttgart, 1873). Carlyle's explanation is found in Fr. Rev., Bk. VI, Ch. I; applied in derision to extreme French Revolutionists.

171, 7. Mohra : Also written Möhra, Möre, etc.

172, 6. singing for alms : For Luther's own statements, see Michelet's Life of Luther, p. 5.

172, 22, 23. Thor; Jötuns : See **24**, 9.

172, 25. death of Alexis : Cf. J. A. Froude's Life of Luther, pp. 9-11 (New York 1884): "The popular story of the young Alexis, said to have been killed at his side by lightning, is, in itself, a legend, but the essence of it is true. Re-

turning to Erfurt in the summer of 1505, he was overtaken by a storm. The lightning struck the ground before his feet; he fell from his horse. 'Holy Anne,' he cried, 'help me, I will become a monk.' "

173, 13. dissuasions from his father: For his father's strong objections, see Michelet's *Life of Luther*, p. 2, with note from Pfizer's *Luther's Leben*.

173, 20. pious monk: "I fasted, I watched, I mortified, I practised all the cenobite severities, till I absolutely made myself ill." Michelet's *Life of Luther*, p. 8.

174, 11. Latin Bible: Cf. Luther's statement, Michelet's *Life of Luther*, Appendix, p. 357.

174, 14. A brother monk: Probably John von Staupitz, vicar-general of monastery at Erfurt.

175, 17. he found it: See Luther's *Tischreden*, 441: "I would not for a hundred thousand florins have missed seeing Rome. . . . I should have always felt an uneasy doubt whether I was not, after all, doing an injustice to the pope. As it is, I am quite satisfied on the point."

176, 29. Augustine Monk . . . Dominican: This statement in Hume's *History of England*, Vol. III, p. 132, is refuted in Michelet's *Life of Luther*, notes, pp. 41-43.

177, 7. raise a little money: To finish St. Peter's, begun by Julius II.

177, 21, 22. first public challenge: For Luther's theses, see Michelet's *Life of Luther*, pp. 22-29.

178, 1. three years: Excommunication Bull, issued Sept., 1520.

178, 6. Huss: John Huss, Bohemian reformer, burned 1415. Jerome: Hussite preacher, burned 1416.

178, 8. Constance Council: 1414-1418. See *Ecumenical Councils in Lawrence's Historical Studies*, pp. 175-181 (New York, 1876).

178, 29. and burn it: "This day, the tenth of December, 1520 . . . were burnt all the pope's books, the rescripts, the decretals of Clement VI, the extravagants, the new bull of Leo X, the *Somma Angelica*, the *Chrysopasus* of Eck, and

some other productions of his, and of Emser's." Michelet's *Life of Luther*, pp. 64, 65.

179, 15. as was said above: See **164, 22.**

179, 18. Mahomet said: See **84, 25-30.**

180, 6. the greatest scene: Cf. Michelet's *Life of Luther*, pp. 82-95; also Froude's *Life of Luther*, p. 38.

180, 10. Charles Fifth: Successor to Maximilian, who had been Luther's friend. In Charles he found "a noble enemy." See Luther's *Werke*, IX, 106.

180, 16. Huss: See **178, 6.**

180, 25. Whosoever denieth me: See Luke xii: 9.

181, 16. I can do no other: Cf. Michelet's *Life of Luther*, p. 89: "I cannot and will not retract, for we must never act contrary to our conscience. Such is my profession of faith, and expect none other from me, I have done; God help me! Amen!"

182, 4. When Hercules: Example of Carlyle's dry, sardonic humor. For Labors of Hercules, see Ovid's *Metam.*, IX, 102-272.

182, 10. Reformation simply could not: Similar thought in John Tulloch's *Leaders of the Reformation*, p. 83 (Boston, 1860); also Edwin D. Mead's *Martin Luther; A Study of the Reformation*, XII, 171 (Boston, 1881).

183, 12. The Old was true: Cf. **54, 30.**

183, 21. logic-choppings: Cf. *Romeo and Juliet*, III, 5, —

"How now? how now, chop-logic?"

183, 20, 21. dull-droning drowsy: Good example of onomatopoeia.

185, 31. Karlstadt's wild image-breaking: Reference to Andrew Rudolph Bodenstein (born at Karlstadt), "the fiery preacher" and colleague of Luther. Despite Luther's protests, he destroyed altars, statues, etc., until banished. See Michelet's *Life of Luther*, pp. 113, 114, 149-153.

185, 32. Anabaptists: Revolutionary movement at Münster, 1534-1536. They denounced Luther as enemy to

their "Kingdom of the Saints." See *Michelet's Life of Luther*, pp. 230-248, Appendix, 401.

Peasants' War: The insurrection among the peasants of South Germany, April, 1525, against nobles and bishops was led by Thomas Munzer. For Luther's protests, see *Michelet's Life of Luther*, pp. 165-180.

186, 11. his dialect became: "He created the German language." Heine.

186, 25. Richter says: "Luther's prose is a half-battle; few deeds are equal to his words." Richter's *Vorschule*.

186, 32. Devils in Worms: See **180**, 20-22; see, also, *Michelet's Life of Luther*, p. 80.

187, 8. strange memorial: Cf. *Froude's Life of Luther*, p. 41: "That he threw his ink-bottle at the devil is unauthentic," etc. See, also, *Michelet's Life of Luther*, pp. 318-336; David Masson's *Essays* (1856), *The Three Devils*, — Luther's, Milton's, and Goethe's; also Luther's *Visions in Coleridge's The Friend*, First Landing-Place, *Essays II and III*.

187, 25, 26. Duke George: Luther wrote these defiant words to the Elector when returning from Wartburg to Wittenburg, March 1, 1522.

188, 23. poor Poet Cowper: Cf. Goethe-Carlyle Correspondence, p. 161. See, also, Leslie Stephen's *Hours in a Library*, Vol. II, Cowper and Rousseau (William Cowper 1731-1800).

188, 29. Table-Talk (or *Tischreden*): Translated by Hazlitt (London, 1848). This volume, preserved by Captain Henry Bell (1650), was entitled "Colloquia, Mensalia, or Divine Discourses at his Table, held with divers learned men and Pious Divines."

189, 2, 3. deathbed of . . . Daughter: See *Michelet's Life of Luther*, pp. 298, 299.

189, 13. Islam is all: See **75**, 8.

189, 14. Patmos: See Rev. i: 9. For Luther's letters from Castle of Coburg, April, 1530, to Melancthon and Spalatin, see *Michelet's Life of Luther*, pp. 219, 220.

190, 6. love of Music: Cf. Carlyle's *C. & M. Essays*, Vol. II, Luther's Psalm.

190, 16. Kranach (or Lucas Cranach, 1472-1553): An artist friend of Luther.

190, 21, 22. fine affections: For hints of Luther's home life, see Köstlin's *Luther's Leben* (Leipzig, 1883), *The Schönberg-Cotta Family* by Mrs. Charles, and Michelet's *Life of Luther*, pp. 196-198, 202-204, etc.

191, 24. Voltaireism: Cf. *T. C.*, Vol. I, p. 303.

191, 24, 25. Gustavus-Adolphus: See Schiller's *Thirty Years' War*, for heroism of Gustavus II, 1594-1632, and *Wallenstein*.

191, 27, 28. Presbyterianism . . . National Church, — in 1592. See Neal's *History of the Puritans*, Vol. I, p. 206 (New York, 1843); also, Green's *Shorter History*, Ch. VIII, Sec. V.

192, 16. strength, well understood: This furnishes a true presentation of Carlyle's much-condemned "gospel of force." Cf. *T. C.*, Vol. II, p. 6.

192, 19, 20. little Fact . . . Mayflower: Like many historians, Carlyle has confused the Mayflower, which joined the party at Southampton, with the Speedwell, which left Delfshaven. See W. E. Griffis' *Brave Little Holland*, Ch. XXVI (Boston, 1894), John Fiske's *Beginnings of New England*, Ch. II, and A. H. Bradford's *The Pilgrim in Old England* (New York, 1893).

192, 22. a Poem here: See *Poems of the Pilgrims*, collected by T. H. Spooner (Boston, 1881), containing poems by Holmes, Lowell, Mrs. Hemans, and others.

192, 32. Starchamber hangmen: Reference to unjust court established by Henry VII. See Neal's *History of the Puritans*, Vol. I, p. 127; also, Hallam's *Constitutional History*, Ch. I, p. 40, Ch. VIII, pp. 258, 259 (New York, 1851).

193, 7. the Mayflower: See 192, 20.

193, 9. In Neal's History: This description is in Vol. I, p. 246 (New York, 1843): "On July 1 (1620) the adventurers went from Leyden to Delfshaven, whither Mr. Robin-

son and the ancients of his congregation accompanied them. They continued together all night, and next morning, after mutual embraces, Mr. Robinson kneeled down on the sea-shore, and with a fervent prayer, committed them to the protection and blessing of Heaven."

194, 25. a whole nation : Cf. **170, 27.**

195, 3, 4. Westminster Confession : Adopted by council, 1643-1648. See Green's Shorter History, Ch. VIII, Sec. 8.

195, 17. James Watt : 1736-1819. Inventor of steam-engine. **David Hume :** 1711-1776. Carlyle was a close student of Hume's philosophy and history.

195, 23. A tumult : Reference to Knox's sermon at St. Giles' Cathedral in Darnley's presence, when he was accused of insulting Mary Stuart. See Knox's *Historie*, pp. 120, 128, and McCrie's *Life of Knox*, pp. 229, 230.

195, 27. Glorious Revolution : Revolution of 1688-1689. See Hallam's *Constit. History*, Ch. XIV, pp. 527-547 (New York, 1851) ; also Green's *Shorter History*, Ch. X, Sec. VII.

195, 30. like Russian soldiers : See **160, 22.**

196, 2, 3. Peasant Covenanters : Revolution of 1638. See Hume's *History of England*, Vol. V, pp. 106-110.

196, 7. official pumps, etc. : Reference to extravagant and affected dress of the age.

196, 8. universal three-times-three : Reference to the battle-cry, "A Free Parliament and the Protestant religion."

197, 18. St. Andrew's Castle : For siege of this castle by Regent Arran, 1547, see McCrie's *Life of Knox*, pp. 23, 24.

198, 1. grievous trouble : Knox's mental sufferings are told in his *Historie*, p. 83 ; or McCrie's *Life of Knox*, p. 34.

199, 10, 11. a narrow, inconsiderable man : Cf. John Tulloch's *Leaders of the Reformation*, p. 302 : "Far inferior to Luther in tenderness and breadth, he is greatly superior to Calvin in the same qualities."

199, 16, 17. Earl of Morton : Newly elected regent of St. Giles ; see McCrie's *Life of Knox*, p. 277.

199, 18. Old-Hebrew Prophet : For elaboration of this thought see Carlyle's *Portraits of John Knox*.

199, 25. conduct to Queen Mary: Hume is severe upon Knox; see History of England, Vol. IV, pp. 37-39. Refutation found in McCrie's Life of Knox, p. 388, note eee, also, Tulloch's Leaders of the Reformation, pp. 288-292. See, also, R. L. Stevenson's Familiar Studies, John Knox's Relations to Women.

200, 11. Guises: A prominent family in the French Catholic movement and at the court of Francis II and Mary in France.

200, 20. the hapless Queen: Cf. Carlyle's plea for Mary in Portraits of John Knox. Recent studies of Queen Mary's character include Saint-Amand's Women of the Valois Court; Lamartine's Mary Stuart; Swinburne's Dramatic Trilogy — Bothwell, Mary Stuart, and Chastelard.

200, 29. intolerance: "Intolerance coiled like a dragon round treasures which were the palladium of mankind was not so bad; nay, rather, was indispensable and good." T. C., Vol. II, p. 7, Spiritual Optics.

202, 14. drollery: Cf. Carlyle's Portraits of John Knox; also, McCrie's Life of Knox, p. 287.

203, 5. type of character: Seems applicable to Carlyle.

203, 14, 15. no hateful man: Another example of litotes.

204, 7, 8. Thy Kingdom come: See Matt. vi: 10; Luke xi: 2.

204, 14. Regent Murray: James Stuart, half-brother to Mary, assassinated 1569; see McCrie's Life of Knox, pp. 77, 366.

204, 25. Hildebrand: Gregory VII, 1073-1085. For biography, see W. R. W. Stephens' Hildebrand and his Times (London, 1888).

205, 18, 19. God's Kingdom: Luke xxi: 31, adapted. See John Fiske's Beginnings of New England, Ch. IV, p. 146, The Theocratic Ideal of the Puritans; also Bradford's The Pilgrim in Old England, pp. 79-83, Ideal of Kingdom of God.

LECTURE V

THE HERO AS MAN OF LETTERS. JOHNSON, ROUSSEAU,
BURNS

206. 16. Great Soul living apart: Carlyle's conception of the Man of Letters is fully explained in ¶¶ 5 and 6, pp. 208-210.

207. 4. copy-wrongs: Reference to Johnson, Addison, and their *confrères* in poverty.

207. 15. Odin for a god: Same thought in Past and Present, Bk. I, Ch. VI.

207, 26, 27. most important modern person: Cf. T. C., Vol. II, p. 77, Journal: "The only sovereigns of the world in these days are the literary men . . . the prophets."

208, 32. Fichte: Johann Gottlieb Fichte, 1762-1814. These lectures are in Fichte's *Sammt. Werke* (Berlin, 1845, 1846), Vol. VI, *Ueber das Wesen des Gelehrten, und seine Erscheinungen im Gebiete der Freiheit*. See, also, Carlyle's C. & M. Essays, Vol. I, *State of German Literature*, pp. 68-70.

209, 4, 5. Transcendental Philosophy: Cf. F. H. Hedge, *Prose Writers of Germany*, p. 383: "Among the illustrious four [Kant, Fichte, Snelling, and Hegel] . . . Fichte's function is that of a moralist; a preacher of righteousness; . . . The eloquence of Transcendentalism found in him its highest development."

210, 12, 13. Pillar of Fire: See Ex. xiv: 24, etc.

210, 23, 24. a Hodman: Cf. Sartor Resartus, Bk. II, Ch. III; Goethe-Carlyle Correspondence, p. 209; T. C., Vol. II, p. 80, Journal: "They are the hodmen of the intellectual edifice, who have got upon the wall and will insist upon building as if they were Masons."

210, 31. Goethe: Cf. tribute in Carlyle's C. & M. Essays, Vol. I, Goethe; also, Sartor Resartus, Bk. III, Ch. VII: "And knowest thou no Prophet, even in the vesture, environment, and dialect of his age? I know him, and name him — Goethe."

211, 22, 23. *general state of knowledge*: Carlyle really introduced English readers to modern German literature, by his essays and translations, yet appreciation came slowly.

212, 4. *bringers of the light*: See **149, 22**.

213, 18. *art of Printing*: Claimed for Gutenberg of Mentz, 1456, and also for Coster Laurens Janszoon, about 1426.

214, 6. *Odin's Runes*: See **36, 10**.

214, 15. *Agamemnon*: See **43, 19**; *Pericles*: 495-429 B.C. See G. W. Cox's *Lives of Greek Statesmen*, Ser. II.

214, 30, 31. *Celia . . . Clifford*: Types of characters in sentimental romance.

215, 6. *Hebrew Book*: Carlyle usually refers thus to the Bible.

215, 7, 8. *Midianitish herds*: See Ex. ii: 15.

215, 9. *Sinai*: See Ex. xix: 11, etc.

215, 23, 24. *Universities arose*: See **216, 8**.

215, 30. *Abelard*: Pierre Abelard, French scholastic and philosopher, 1079-1142.

216, 8. *the King*: Charlemagne had already organized the University of Paris where Alcuin taught and Abelard lectured. See J. B. Mullinger's *The Schools of Charles the Great* (London, 1877).

218, 1. *Newspapers*: Cf. Sartor Resartus, Bk. III, Ch. VIII: "A Preaching Friar settles himself in every village and builds a pulpit, which he calls Newspaper."

218, 12, 13. *lily of the fields*: See Matt. vi: 28.

218, 14, 15. *the handwriting . . . visible*: See Dan. v: 7.

218, 22. *a live coal*: See Isa. vi: 6.

218, 24, 25. *apocalypse of Nature*: See **107, 9**.

219, 1. *Byron*: See **127, 30**.

219, 3. *French sceptic*: See Voltaire, **19, 10**.

219, 11, 12. *worship . . . working*: Cf. Past and Present, Bk. III, Ch. XI: "On the whole we do entirely agree with those old Monks, Laborare est orare. In a thousand senses, from one end of it to the other, true work is worship."

219, 20. Witenagemote: The old Anglo-Saxon Parliament. See Freeman's *The Norman Conquest*, Vol. I, 3.

219, 26. Burke said: Edmund Burke, 1729-1797.

Three Estates: The Lords Spiritual, The Lords Temporal, and The Commons.

219, 28. Fourth Estate: The Press.

220, 30. thaumaturgic: Literally (Gr. *θαύμα* and *ἔργον*), wonder-working.

221, 26. Ishmaelites: See 12, 23; 214, 3; note Carlyle's frequent repetition of phrases and illustrations.

222, 3. Organisation: This passage suggests Literary Guild and Authors' Clubs now existent.

222, 29. Medicant Orders: These existed among the Franciscans, Jacobins, Augustinians, Carmelites.

223, 13, 14. a Johnson is not perhaps: It is recognized that Johnson's best work was done during his poverty.

224, 24. Printer Cave: Editor of *Gentleman's Magazine*: "A penurious paymaster." See Boswell's *Johnson*, p. 684 (Globe Edition).

224, 24, 25. Burns dying . . . as a Gauger: Explained, 257, 6-8. Carlyle exaggerated the injustice of compelling Burns to gain a livelihood as excise officer. The poet's letters declare that the work was not very repugnant to him.

225, 9, 10. Mr. Pitt: The younger Pitt, prime minister, 1783-1801 and 1804-1806.

225, 11. Mr. Southey: Robert Southey, poet, 1774-1843; see Carlyle's *Reminiscences*. Robert Southey.

225, 28: punctum saliens: Freely rendered, salient point.

226. 4: Chinese: "The true power of the government is in the literary class." James Freeman Clarke's *Ten Great Religions*, Ch. II, Sec. 2. See, also, W. A. P. Martin's *The Chinese*; their Education, etc., pp. 64-97, 228-252 (New York, 1881).

227. 26. millions of men: England was in dire social condition. 1840-1845; see *Past and Present*, Bk. III, *The Modern Worker*.

228, 19. Pandora's Box: Mythological casket, with ills for body and mind. See Hesiod's *Theog.*, 571, Op. 50; also G. Rossetti's *Pandora*.

228, 32. a godless world: Same thought in *Past and Present*, Bk. I, Ch. V: "When a nation is all unhappy," etc.

229, 4. Skalds: See 22, 1.

229, 5. Tree Igdrasil: See 27, 8.

229, 11. motives: Reference to utilitarian doctrines of Bentham, Paley, and Mill; see 232, 15.

230, 11. black malady: Disease of 1348, known as black death."

230, 13, 14. Belief against Unbelief: Same thought in Goethe's *Werke*, Vol. VI, p. 159, *Moses and his Exodus*.

230, 26. Bentham's theory: See 101, 23. Carlyle's emphasis of divineness in man and Nature was at variance with utilitarian doctrines.

231, 23. blinded Samson: See Judges xvi: 21-31.

Philistine Mill: Reference probably to John Stuart Mill.

232, 8. Witchcraft: Bull issued against it, 1484. See Fume's *History of England*, Vol. V, p. 409.

232, 13. caput-mortuum: Commonly used for "dead-head," by Hazlitt, Carlyle, Coleridge, etc. See *Fr. Rev.*, k. IX, Ch. VII: "So blazes out," etc.

232, 15. Doctrine of Motives: Especially directed against Paley and Mill and their scientific morality. Cf. Sartor Resartus, Bk. III, Ch. III: "But cannot he fathom the Doctrine of Motives?"

232, 26. Phalaris'-Bull: Invention of brass made by Erillos, for Phalaris, tyrant of Agrigentum, as cruel mode of punishment; see Pindar's *Pythian*, I, 185.

233, 3. Doubt: Cf. Tennyson's *In Memoriam*, XCV, 3, —

"There lives more faith in honest doubt,
Believe me, than in half the creeds."

233, 6. *análisis*: thought, inquiry, doubt.

234, 2. We call those ages: The same thought is in Goethe's *Moses and his Exodus*; see 230, 13, 14.

234, 15. *Cagliostro*: See 59, 31.

234, 21. *Walpole*: Horace Walpole, author of *Historical Memoirs and Letters*, 1717-1797.

234, 25. *mimetic life*: Contrast with closing sentences of Macaulay's *Essay on Earl of Chatham*.

235, 6. *Chartisms*: Carlyle's earlier views on Chartism had wholly changed. Contrast Chartism with Past and Present, and note differences in trend and beliefs.

236, 3. *a believing world*: Another repetition of 170, 25-30.

236, 10. *One Life*: Cf. *Sartor Resartus*, Bk. I, Ch. III: "Aus der Ewigkeit, zu der Ewigkeit hin, From Eternity onward to Eternity."

237, 10. *Mahomet's Formulas*: See 84, 25-30.

237, 18. *Bookseller Osborne*: Thomas Osborne, ridiculed in Pope's *Dunciad*, II, 167. For Johnson's quarrel with him, see Boswell's *Johnson*, p. 49 (Globe Edition).

237, 22. *loadstar* (*lodestar*): Icelandic *leidarstjarna*, star of conduct.

237, 30. *War of the Giants*: For revolt of the Giants against Zeus and the other gods, see Bulfinch's *Age of Fable*, pp. 149, 150; also Ovid's *Metam.*, I, 151; Pindar's *Pythian*, VIII, 19; *Paradise Lost*, I, 119, III, 464.

238, 1. *I have already written*: See Carlyle's *C. & M. Essays*, Vol. III, Boswell's *Johnson*; Vol. I, Burns; also many references to Rousseau in *Fr. Rev.*

239, 11. *diseased sorrow*: *Scrofula* and *hypochondria* caused Johnson much suffering.

239, 16. *Nessus'-shirt*: Famous tunic or shirt, steeped in blood of Nessus, the centaur, which became tenacious poison to the body of Ulysses; see Ovid's *Metam.*, IX, 100; also Lucian's *Tragopodagra*, 304.

239, 23. *eagerly devouring*: "His intellectual resembled his physical appetite; he gorged books." Leslie Stephen's *Life of Samuel Johnson* (*English Men of Letters Ser.*), Ch. I, p. 6.

239, 27. *fourpence*: Johnson's meagre income.

239, 29. story of the shoes: For details see Boswell's Johnson, p. 20 (Globe Edition).

240, 27. The essence of originality: Repetition of **168, 25, 26.**

241, 15. Church of St. Clement Danes: Johnson's pew, No. 18, is still shown; see Augustus Hare's Walks in London, I, p. 45 (London, 1845); for Johnson's religious views, see Boswell's Johnson, pp. 17, 136, 685-686 (Globe Edition).

241, 27. Formula: Used in literal sense. L., *forma*, *formula*, shape, form.

242, 24, 25. Idols, as we said: See **163, 17-32.**

244, 4, 5. chaff sown: See Psalm i: 4; Luke iii: 17.

244, 7, 8. preached a Gospel: See Johnson's Gospel in Augustine Birrell's Men, Women, and Books, pp. 42-45 (New York, 1894).

244, 20. Clear your mind of Cant: Johnson said to Boswell, "My dear Sir, endeavor to clear your mind of cant."

244, 27. Johnson's Writings: Notably Rambler, Rasselas, Lives of the Poets, Dictionary, etc.; see Leslie Stephen's Hours in a Library, Vol. II, Dr. Johnson's Writings.

245, 1. indisputablest: Carlyle's method of forming superlatives often caused lack of harmony in diction.

245, 5. buckram style: Unique, effective term.

245, 25. poor Bozzy: James Boswell, 1740-1795; see Carlyle's C. & M. Essays, Vol. III, Boswell's Life of Johnson.

245, 28, 29. Scotch Laird: Cf. Macaulay's Essays, Vol. III, Samuel Johnson: "That he [Boswell] was a coxcomb and a bore, weak, vain, pushing, garrulous, was obvious to all who were acquainted with him."

246, 5. witty Frenchman: Ascribed by Bartlett's Familiar Quotations to Marshal Catinat, 1637-1712. Coleridge and others trace the aphorism to the Prince of Condé; see The Friend, Essay II, Third Landing-Place. "No one is a hero to his valet" is often attributed to Mme. de Sévigné; also to Mme. Cornuel.

246, 14. a poor forked radish: Cf. Henry IV, III, 2: "When he was naked, he was for all the world like a

forked radish with a head fantastically carved upon it with a knife." (Part II.)

246, 24, 26. difficult confused existence : See Augustine Birrell's comparison of Johnson and Carlyle, *Obiter Dicta*, Ser. II, pp. 113, 114.

247, 3, 4. Spirit of Lies : Same thought in Novalis' *Schriften*, I.

247, 5. ultimus Romanorum : Carlyle used same expression regarding his father. See *Reminiscences*, James Carlyle.

247, 8. not . . . a strong man : Cf. Lowell's *Among my Books*, Ser. II, Rousseau and the Sentimentalists : "Intellectually, he was true and fearless ; constitutionally, timid, contradictory and weak ; but never, if we understand him rightly, false."

247, 10. the talent of Silence : The same expression found in T. C., Vol. II, p. 138, Letter to Mrs. Carlyle, Aug. 15, 1831.

247, 13, 14. consume his own smoke : See Psalm xxxvii : 20.

247, 21. convulsion-fits : Rousseau was a hypochondriac. See Sainte-Beuve's *Literary Portraits*, Vol. I.

247, 26. hold his peace : See Ex. xiv : 14 ; Job xiii : 13.

248, 13, 14. delirations : Cent. Dict. says this word is "archaic."

248, 25. Genlis : Stephanie, Countess Genlis, 1746-1830. See *Fr. Rev.*, Bk. VII, Ch. III ; also John Morley's *Rousseau*, Vol. II, p. 323 (London, 1873) ; also Austin Dobson's *Four Frenchwomen*, pp. 107-207.

249, 27. appeals to Mothers : Rousseau's treatises on Moral Education ; see *Émile*, II, 1, 2, 60.

249, 27, 28. Contrat-social : See John Morley's *Rousseau*, Vol. I, p. 134 (London, 1873) ; also Carlyle's *Fr. Rev.*, Vol. I, Bk. I, Ch. VII : "And now has not Jean Jacques promulgated his new evangel of a Contrat-Social ; explaining the whole mystery of Government, and how it is contracted and bargained for — to universal satisfaction?"

See, also, analysis in Coleridge's *The Friend*, Sec. I, Essay IV.

249, 29. life in Nature: Cf. Lowell's *Among my Books*, Ser. I, Rousseau and the Sentimentalists: "The strongest mark which Rousseau has left upon literature is a sensibility to the picturesque in Nature," etc.

249, 31. a Prophet to his Time: Cf. John Morley's *Critical Miscellanies*, Rousseau: "The Rousseau of these times for English-speaking nations is Thomas Carlyle. With each of them thought is an aspiration, and justice a sentiment and society a retrogression."

250, 13. stealings of ribbons: When a young man, Rousseau lived with Mme. de Vercellis; at her death a piece of old rose-colored ribbon was missing; Rousseau denied the theft, but was convicted. See Rousseau's *Confessions*, Vol. II; also John Morley's *Rousseau*, Vol. I, pp. 39, 40.

250, 24. His Books: *Confessions*, *Discourses*, *Émile*, etc. Rousseau's ideas on education are much studied by modern professors of child-study. See examination of his works in Guizot's *History of France*, Vol. V, Ch. LV, p. 228 (New York, 1884).

250, 32. Madame de Staël: Baroness Holstein, daughter of Necker, 1766-1817, author of *L'Allemagne*, *Corinne*, *Delphine*, etc. See Sainte-Beuve's *Portraits des Femmes* (1876).

250, 32; 251, 1. St. Pierre: J. H. Bernardine de St. Pierre, 1737-1814, author of *Paul and Virginia*, etc. See Sainte-Beuve's *Literary Portraits*, Vol. II.

251, 2. Literature of Desperation: This phrase suggests modern Decadent School.

251, 3. rosepink: Cf. George Meredith's *Diana of the Crossways*: "Philosophy is foe to rosepink and dirty drab and their silly cancelling effects," etc.

251, 4. Goethe: Cf. Sartor Resartus, Bk. II, Ch. IX: "Close thy Byron; open thy Goethe."

251, 5. Walter Scott: See Carlyle's *C. & M. Essays*, Vol. IV, Sir Walter Scott.

251, 17, 18. from post to pillar: Term of manège. Rousseau sojourned in France, Switzerland, and England.

251, 26, 27. French Revolution . . . Evangelist: Same thought in Carlyle's *Fr. Rev.*, Bk. VII, Ch. I.

252, 25. mimes: Gr. *μῖμος*, an ape, a masker.

253, 7. those children: Robert, born Jan. 25, 1756, was eldest of six children; Burns' father portrayed in *The Cotter's Saturday Night*.

253, 13. Schoolmaster: John Murdoch, student of divinity and teacher of boys at Lochlea.

253, 25. voting pieces of plate: This is sarcasm upon the patronage of Carlyle's time.

253, 31, 32. rustic special dialect: The thought amplified in Carlyle's *Critical Essay on the Genius and Writings of Burns*, p. 12.

254, 16. Harz-rock: Reference to mountains in northern Germany; last stronghold of Paganism; famous in history and folk-lore. See also, Goethe's *Faust*, *Walpurgisnacht*.

254, 23. Norse Thor See **24, 9.**

254, 29, 30. cutting peats: As a lad Burns worked on his father's farm.

254, 32. old Marquis Mirabeau: Victor Riquetti, Marquis de Mirabeau, 1715-1789, father of Mirabeau, the revolutionist.

255, 8. dewdrops from his mane: See *Troilus and Cressida*, III, 3, —

"And like a dew-drop from the lion's mane,
Be shook to air."

255, 9. laughs at the shaking of the spear: See **65, 31.**

255, 15. the most gifted: He means versatile; see **1. 23.**

255, 19. Professor Stewart: Dugald Stewart, philosopher, 1753-1828; friend and critic of Burns.

255, 31. led them off their feet: Cf. Allan Cunningham's *Life and Lands of Burns*, p. 81 (New York, 1841): "The accomplished and beautiful Duchess of Gordon de-

lared, in a latter day, that no man ever carried her so completely off her feet as Robert Burns."

255, 32 ; 256, 1. **Mr. Lockhart:** John Gibson Lockhart, 1794-1854, Life of Burns.

256, 18. **manfulness:** Cf. Andrew Lang's Letters to Dead Authors, p. 204, To Robert Burns: "No poet, since the Psalmist of Israel, ever gave the world more assurance of a man, none lived a life more strenuous, engaged in an eternal conflict of the passions, and by them overcome—mighty and mightily fallen."

256, 22. **Mirabeau.** See 106, 2, 3.

257, 9. **capture of smuggling schooners:** Burns was excise officer, 1789.

257, 12. **Ushers de Brézé:** Reference to Mirabeau's angry response to Marquis de Brézé, Supreme Usher to the King. See Carlyle's Fr. Rev., Vol. I, Bk. I, Chs. III, IV ; also Bk. V, Ch. II.

258, 32. **copy music:** Rousseau taught and wrote music at Lusanne and in Paris garrets.

259, 18. **Light ; or, failing, etc.:** Forceful epigram.

259, 30. **his visit to Edinburgh:** See Allan Cunningham's Life, pp. 104-133 ; also Lockhart's Life, pp. 103-144.

260, 7. **Regiment La Fère.** See 322, 14.

260, 9, 10. **escape disgrace and a jail:** Carlyle exaggerates for pictorial effect. Cf. Allan Cunningham's Life of Burns, p. 101 (New York, 1841).

260, 14, 16. **Adversity . . . prosperity:** This antithesis is often quoted.

260, 19, 20. **so little forgot himself:** Burns' indifference to patronage emphasized in Lockhart's Life, pp. 129, 130.

261, 2, 3. **impossible for him to live:** Cf. Carlyle's Critical Essay on the Genius and Writings of Burns: "Still we do not think the blame of Burns' failure lies chiefly with the world," etc.

261, 15. **Island of Sumatra:** Westerly of Sunda Islands, Malay Archipelago. See Carlyle's translations from Richter.

261, 20. **Great honour to the Fire-flies! But! An**

abrupt, elliptical ending full of graphic force. Carlyle shows great skill in his chosen imagery for illustration.

LECTURE VI

THE HERO AS KING. CROMWELL, NAPOLEON: MODERN
REVOLUTIONISM

262, 10. to command over us: "Mr. Carlyle's idea of the hero is a simple one. That characteristic is power." J. B. Mozley's *Essays*, p. 230 (New York, 1878).

262, 14. King . . . Canning: See 16, 3.

263, 7, 8. worship (worthship): A.-S. *weorthscipe*, state of worth. For expansion of same thought see Past and Present, Bk. I, Ch. VI.

263, 12. Hastings-speeches: See 137, 14.

263, 30, 31. Ideals can never be: Same thought in Past and Present, Bk. II, Ch. IV.

264, 3. Schiller says: Schiller's mandate is "Let no man measure by a scale of perfection the meagre product of reality."

265, 7. Sansculottism: See 169, 29. Cf. *Lectures on the History of Literature*, Lecture XI, p. 204: "Thus the French Revolution was only a great outburst of the truth, that this world was not a mere chimera, but a great reality."

265, 11. Divine right: Cf. T. C., Vol. II, *Journal*, Feb. 7, 1831: "Kings do reign by divine right or not at all."

266, 4. There is a God: Carlyle often thus exclaims. Cf. T. C., Vol. II, p. 11; also, Sartor Resartus, Bk. I, Ch. VIII; also, T. C., Vol. II, p. 78, *Note-book*: "God is above us, else the future of the world were well-nigh desperate."

266, 9. obedience: Cf. Emerson's *Lectures*, *Perpetual Forces*: "Obedience alone gives the right to command."

267, 5, 6. having your Able-man to seek: See Past and Present, Bk. I, Ch. VI.

267, 19. metallic coined money: See 164, 25, 26.

268, 4, 5. Camille Desmoulins: Benoit Camille Desmoulins, guillotined, 1794. Cf. Carlyle's *Fr. Rev.*, Bk. V, Ch. IV:

"But see Camille Desmoulins, from the Café de Foy, rushing out, sibylline in face; his hair streaming, in each hand a pistol."

268, 17. reigns of terror: In France, 1793, 1794. See Carlyle's *Fr. Rev.*, Bk. VII, Ch. I.

268, 23, 24. gone mad: For English sentiment, see Green's *Shorter History*, Ch. X, Sec. III.

268, 26. Bedlam: This word is a contraction for Bethlehem, a religious house, St. Mary of Bethlehem, changed into an asylum, 1547.

268, 30. Three Days of July: July 27-29, 1830, when Charles X, last of the Bourbons, was dethroned and Louis Philippe declared king.

269, 9. Niebuhr: Barthold Georg Niebuhr, historian, 1776-1831. See reference to him in *Goethe-Carlyle Correspondence*, p. 162.

269, 13. Racine: Jean Racine, dramatist, 1639-1699, court favorite. See *Sainte-Beuve's Literary Portraits*, Vol. III.

269, 25. Truly, without the French Revolution: The same words found in *T. C.*, Vol. II, p. 15.

270, 5. Trump of Doom: See I Cor. xv: 52.

270, 20. Sansculottic: This word in varied forms became a favorite synonym with Carlyle for revolutionary.

271, 10. Liberty and Equality: Cf. Carlyle's *Fr. Rev.*, Vol. II, Bk. I, Ch. IX. Carlyle's ideal government was not democracy, but an "Aristocracy of Talent," or "Government of Heroes."

271, 31. Bending before men: Quotation from Novalis, *Schriften*, II.

272, 8. Loyalty, religious Worship: Cf. same statement in *Goethe-Carlyle Correspondence*, p. 233.

273, 4, 5. necessary finish: Elaboration of thought in *Fr. Rev.*, Vol. II, Bk. IX, Ch. VII.

273, 16. as Kings: It is noteworthy that the title King was applied to neither Cromwell nor Napoleon.

273, 22, 23. wars . . . of Roses: See 147, 6.

273, 23, 24. Simon de Montfort: Earl of Leicester, leader of barons against Henry III, was killed 1265.

273, 25. war of the Puritans: Civil War, 1642-1649.

274, 6. Laud: William Laud, Archbishop of Canterbury, 1573-1645, "recognized as the centre of the varied opposition to Puritanism." Green's Shorter History, Ch. VIII, Sec. III.

274, 8, 9. unfortunate Pedant: Cf. J. B. Mozley's *Essays, Historical and Theological*, p. 107 (New York, 1878): "The stickler for obsolete forms, the obstinate old zealot about trifles, becomes the one popular figure of Laud."

274, 28. his doom: When the ministry fell, Dec., 1640. Laud was imprisoned and was executed, 1645.

274, 31. clothes itself in forma. Cf. Sartor Resartus, Bk. III, Ch. II, Church-clothes.

275, 29. upholsterer-mummery: One of Carlyle's compounds of unique coinage.

276, 9, 10. multiplied ceremonial bowings: See Hume's *History of England*, Vol. II, p. 68.

276, 27. suit-of-clothes: Cf. Hume's *Essays*, XIV, The Epicurean: "Art may make a suit of clothes, but Nature must produce a man."

277, 10. Charles Second: "To Charles the Second the degradation of England was only a move in the political game which he was playing," etc. Green's Shorter History, Ch. IX, Sec. III.

277, 11. Rochesters: John Wilmot, Earl of Rochester, a courtier poet during early days of Restoration. See Guizot's *History of Richard Cromwell and the Restoration of Charles II*.

277, 16. Puritanism . . . gibbets: The reaction against Puritanism is pictured in Butler's *Hudibras*.

277, 21. Habeas-Corpus: One result of later Revolution, 1688, 1689.

278, 3. Eliot, Hampden, etc.: See John Forster's *Statesmen of the Commonwealth* (New York, 1846); also Peter Bayne's *Chief Actors in the Puritan Revolution* (London,

1878), Pym, pp. 135, 221-223; Vane, pp. 347-387. See, also, Macaulay's Essays, Vol. II, John Hampden.

278, 5. Conscript Fathers: Senators of Ancient Rome.

278, 17. Tartufe (or Tartuffe): Reference to the hypocrite in Molière's comedy, *Tartuffe*.

278, 22. Washington: See **306, 11, 12.**

278, 27. As we said . . . Valet: See **246, 5.**

279, 22. Ship-moneys: Reference to contest begun in 1634 by king's demand for fleet-money. Hampden declared it "an illegal impost," and he was imprisoned and set free by Long Parliament, 1641.

279, 22. Monarchies of Men: The *Monarchy of Men* was written by Sir John Eliot, during his last imprisonment. It is added to John Forster's *Statesmen of the Commonwealth*, pp. 43-54 (New York, 1846).

280, 6. Baresark: The old form is *Berserker*, shirt of mail. In mythology, Berserker was grandson of eight-handed Starkader and beautiful Alfhide. The term is used of fearless, rough, unprotected warriors.

280, 7. Monarchy of Man: See **279, 22.**

280, 26, 27. incredible Creeds: See Hallam's *Constitutional History*, Ch. VII, pp. 227-229.

283, 17, 18. Pococke . . . Grotius: See **58, 27.**

283, 20, 21. not portraits: Earlier biographies of Cromwell are criticised in Carlyle's *Cromwell*, Vol. I, p. 16. Among recent contrasting biographies, see S. H. Church's *Oliver Cromwell* (New York, 1894), and R. F. D. Palgrave's, *Oliver Cromwell* (London, 1890).

283, 30. white Spectre: Reference to tradition of gigantic woman who appeared to Cromwell. See Mark Noble's *Cromwell* (London, 1787), Vol. I, 95.

284, 3. Worcester Fight: The story is told in Heath's *Flagellum* and other old chronicles.

284, 6. Huntingdon Physician: Dr. Simcott. See Church's *Oliver Cromwell*, p. 13.

Sir Philip Warwick: This Royalist in his memoirs tells many facts and rumors about Cromwell.

284, 16, 17. some of the dissipations of youth: Cf. Warwick's Memoirs, p. 276 (1638).

284, 18, 19. he is married: Aug., 1620, to Elizabeth Bowchier of Felsted in Essex. Cromwell's letters reveal his devotion to his wife. See, also, Southey's Life of Cromwell, p. 26.

284, 29. St. Ives and Ely: Towns near Huntingdon. See Carlyle's C.'s L. and S., Vol. I, Letter I.

285, 11. great Taskmaster's eye: Cf. thought in T. C., Vol. II, Note-book, March 31, 1833.

285, 15. Bedford Fens: See Warwick's Memoirs (1638), p. 250; also, Carlyle's C.'s L. and S., Vol. I, Letter II. Reference is to the long contest to secure drainage of Suffolk and Essex Fens.

286, 1, 2. envelopments at Dunbar: Sept. 3, 1650. See Carlyle's C.'s L. and S., Part VI, Letters XCI and XCV. When Cromwell's troops seemed hemmed in, he repeated with them the 117th Psalm.

286, 4. Worcester Fight: Sept. 3, 1651. See **284, 3.** See Hume's History of England, Vol. V, p. 417.

286, 6. Cavaliers: Partisans of king.

286, 7. love-locks: The affected curls worn on the temples.

286, 11. participation in the King's death: This was "the least creditable portion of his history." Church's Oliver Cromwell, p. 304. Carlyle makes little reference to it or attempt at defence. See Carlyle's C.'s L. and S., Vol. I, pp. 400-403. See J. B. Mozley's Essays, Vol. I, p. 273; Carlyle's Cromwell.

286, 25. Hampton-Court negotiations: Such were carried on with the king at his residence, but they only revealed his duplicity. See Carlyle's C.'s L. and S., Vol. I, pp. 227, 234.

287, 24. city-tapsters: Cf. Southey's Life of Cromwell, p. 59: "'Your troops,' said I, 'are most of them old decayed serving-men and tapsters and such kinds of fellows; and,' said I, 'their troops are gentlemen's sons,'" etc.

287, 27, 28. Cromwell's Ironsides: This name was given

at Marston Moor, July 2, 1644. Cf. Carlyle's *Frederick the Great*, Vol. V, p. 208.

288, 2. *I would kill the King*: This statement, made by Noble, Vol. I, p. 271, is denied by Gardiner, *Great Civil War*, Vol. III, p. 196: "There is no foundation for ascribing it to Cromwell," etc.

288, 19. *Huntingdon Farmer*: Cromwell lived quietly at Huntingdon until 1625.

288, 29. *vulpine intellect*: See **143, 21**.

289, 6, 7. *pie-powder court*: The pied-powder or Wayfarers' court was held at fairs to settle disputes, etc.

289, 13. *paltry plated coin*: Glib speech. See **289, 5**.

290, 11, 12. *Father of quacks*: See **59, 31**.

290, 16. *Sham-Hero*: Same expressions in Past and Present, Bk. III, Ch. XIII.

290, 28. *Euphemisms*: (Gr. *εὐφρέμια*). Literally well-spoken words, delicate expressions.

290, 29. *Falklands*: Lucius Cary, Viscount Falkland, orator, statesman, soldier, 1610-1643. See Carlyle's *C.'s L. and S.*, Vol. I, p. 144. Falkland was noted for refined tastes.

Chillingworths: William Chillingworth, eloquent English preacher, 1602-1644. Carlyle often used plurals thus.

290, 30. *Clarendon*: Edward Hyde, Earl of Clarendon, 1608-1674. See Carlyle's *C.'s L. and S.*, Vol. I, pp. 77, 109.

292, 5. *Faculty to do*: Cf. Goethe's couplet, —

"Life's no resting but a moving,
Let thy life be Deed on Deed."

Wilhelm Meister's Travels, Ch. XV.

292, 28. *Cause that was His*: The battle-cry was "God and our Cause."

293, 3. *Pillar of Fire*: See **210, 12, 13**.

293, 9. *be such prayer*: Cf. *T. C.*, Vol. II, pp. 17, 18, Letter: "Prayer is the aspiration of our poor struggling heavy-laden soul towards its Eternal Father; and, with or without words, ought not to become impossible, nor, I persuade myself, need it ever."

293. 20. Speeches: See 314. 7.

294. 18. 19. wearing his heart upon his sleeve: See Othello, I. i. —

"The native act and figure of my heart
In complement extern, 'tis not long after —
But I will wear my heart upon my sleeve
For daws to peck at; I am not what I am."

294. 21. house built of glass: Old proverb, —

"Qui a sa maison de verre
Sur le voisin ne jette pierre."

Proverbes en Rimes (1664).

Carlyle here refers to the transparent quality of glass rather than to its fragility.

295. 23. Fontenelle: Bernard le Bovier de Fontenelle, 1657-1757, "Dialogues des Morts," etc., "Entretiens sur la Pluralité des mondes," etc.

296. 16, 17. The vulgar Historian: Vulgar is used in literal sense, belonging to the multitude, common.

296. 24. *Yvespérès*: Literally play-actor, dissembler.

297. 15, 16. enact a brother man's biography: Cf. Emerson's Essay on History: "All history becomes subjective. In other words, there is properly no history, only biography. Every mind must know the whole lesson for itself. — must go over the whole ground."

298. 28. Whitehall: Palace of kings from Henry VIII to William III.

299. 11. windbag: This is a favorite word with Carlyle to designate a frivolous talker. See Past and Present, Bk. III. Ch. XIV, Sir Jabesh Windbag.

299. 18. Corsica Boswell: The reference is to Boswell's travels and book on Corsica, a tribute to Paoli. "Johnson in vain expressed a wish that he would empty his head of Corsica, which had filled it too long." Leslie Stephen's Samuel Johnson, Ch. IV (English Men of Letters Ser.).

299. 27. Empire of Silence: Carlyle's reiterated gospel (not always practised by him).

300. 12, 13. Solomon says: See Eccles. iii: 7: "A time

'rend, and a time to sew; a time to keep silence, and a time to speak."

300, 25. Cato: Cato, censor, about 234-149 B.C.

300, 30, 31. two kinds of ambition: Cf. Cowper's *able-Talk*, 591, —

"Low ambition and the thirst of praise;"

and Young's *Love of Fame*, *Satire VII*, 175, —

"The true ambition there alone resides,
Where justice vindicates and wisdom guides;
Where public blessings, public praise attend,
Where glory is our motive, not our end."

301, 3, 4. Seekest thou great things: See *Jer. xlv*: 5.

301, 15. Coleridge beautifully remarks: Cf. the poetic passage in *The Friend*, *Sec. II*, *Introduction*: "We have been discoursing (by implication at least) of infancy, childhood, boyhood, and youth, of pleasures lying upon the unfolding intellect plenteously as morning dew-drops, — of knowledge inhaled insensibly like the fragrance, — of dispositions stealing into the spirit like music from unknown quarters, — of images uncalled for and rising up like exhalations, — of hopes plucked like beautiful wild flowers from the ruined tombs that border the highways of antiquity, to make a garland for a living forehead; — in a word we have been treating of nature as a teacher of truth through joy and through gladness, and as a creatress of the faculties by a process of smoothness and delight."

301, 23. Mirabeau's ambition: See discussion of this thought in *Carlyle's Fr. Rev.*, *Vol. I*, *Bk. IV*, *Ch. IV*, and *Bk. X*, *Ch. VII*.

301, 28. a poor Necker: Jacques Necker, Minister of Finance under Louis XVI; see *Carlyle's Fr. Rev.*, *Vol. I*, *Bk. I*, *Ch. V*.

301, 31. Gibbon: Edward Gibbon, historian, 1737-1794; see *Carlyle's Fr. Rev.*, *Vol. I*, *Bk. I*, *Ch. V*: "How singular for Celadon Gibbon, false swain as he had proved; whose father, keeping most probably his own gig, 'would not

hear of such a union,' to find now his forsaken Demoiselle Curchod sitting in the high places of the world, as Minister! Madame, and Necker not jealous!"

302, 9. *Thy kingdom come*: See Matt. vi : 10, etc.

302, 23. *their ears cropt off*: Account given in Carlyle's C.'s L. and S., Vol. I, p. 92, note to Letter II.

302, 32. *once more a Parliament*: Short Parliament, April, 1640, was followed by the Long Parliament, Nov., 1640; see Carlyle's C.'s L. and S., Vol. I, pp. 102, 103.

303, 18. *devout imagination*: See **204**, 13, 14.

304, 19, 20: *Christian land*: Theocracy. See **303**, 14.

304, 23, 24. *Chancery Law-Courts*: The long and futile cases caricatured in Dickens' Bleak House.

304, 29. *Hume*: For Hume's treatment of Cromwell, see History of England, Vol. V, pp. 289, 336-347, 486-488 (Boston, 1850). See, also, Carlyle's comments on Hume, Lectures on The History of Literature, Lecture X, 182-184 (New York, 1892).

305, 12, 13. *Antæus-like*: The gigantic mythical wrestler, invincible if he touched the earth, as portrayed in Apollodorus, II, 5.

305, 20. *rugged Orson*: The twin brother of Valentine, who was carried off and suckled by a bear; later was known as "Wild Man of the Forest," and "Terror of France."

306, 11. *Diocletian*: Diocletianus Valerius, 245-313, Roman Emperor who, after twenty-one years of office and conquest, abdicated, and returned to his farm in Dalmatia, where he devoted himself to philosophy.

306, 11, 12. *George Washington*: Carlyle seems unfair to Washington; he could never sympathize with American democracy. Cf. T. C., Vol. II, p. 300, Journal: "Washington is another of our perfect characters; to me a most limited, uninteresting sort."

306, 26. *diplomatic Argyles*: Marquis of Argyle; be-headed 1685; Presbyterian leader. See Carlyle's C.'s L. and S., Vol. I, pp. 296, 493; also, Green's Shorter History, Ch. VIII, Sec. 8.

306, 30. Montrose: James Graham, Marquis of Montrose; Royalist leader; executed 1650. See Peter Bayne's *Chief Actors in the Puritan Revolution*, pp. 257-297 (London, 1878).

307, 6, 7. dashes headlong at the drilled armies: Montrose, a daring soldier, defeated the Puritans at Tippemuir, Perth, Aberdeen, Inverlochy, etc.

307, 19. lies the rub: This idiom is derived from the game of "bowls"; hindrance, impediment.

307, 22. Rump Parliament: See Pride's Purges, **212**, 21. Cf. Butler's *Hudibras*, III, 2, —

"The few
Because they're wasted to the stumps
Are represented best by rumps."

See Hume's *History of England*, Vol. V, p. 434.

307, 22, 23. assumption of the Protectorship: Though Cromwell assumed dictatorship when he dismissed Parliament, the title of Protector was not conferred until Dec. 16, 1653, at close of convention. See Carlyle's *C.'s L. and S.*, Vol. II, p. 350; also, Hallam's *Constit. History*, Ch. X, pp. 382, 383 (New York, 1851).

308, 4. Long Parliament: 1640-1648.

308, 27, 28. You Sixty men: For Cromwell's words of dismissal, see Carlyle's *C.'s L. and S.*, Vol. II, pp. 27-29, Letter CXXVI. The "Rump" is usually regarded as composed of fifty-one members. See *Parl. H.*, III, 1286; Church's *Oliver Cromwell*, p. 301.

308, 31, 32. Free Parliament, etc.: 1649. See Green's *Shorter History*, Ch. VIII, Sec. IX.

309, 5, 6. Pride's Purges: On Dec. 6, 1648, Colonel Pride entered Parliament with two regiments, arrested forty-six members of the Long Parliament, denied entrance to ninety-six more, leaving seventy-eight, of whom twenty-eight opposed Cromwell, and absented themselves. See *Parl. H.*, III, 1286; also, Carlyle's *C.'s L. and S.*, Vol. I, p. 327.

309, 8. fifty or three-score: Cf. **308**, 27, 28.

309, 13. diligent Godwin: Sir William Godwin, author of *History of the Commonwealth*, 4 vols. (London, 1824).

309, 30, 31. a kind of Reform Bill: For details of bill, see Church's Oliver Cromwell, p. 383.

310, 18. ordered them to begone: See **307, 21**.

310, 20. John Milton: 1649, Latin Secretary for Cromwell and Commonwealth; see *Panegyric and Sonnet on Cromwell*, "Our Chief of Men."

310, 32; 311, 1. Barebones's Parliament: Little Parliament or Barebone's Parliament, named after "Praise God" Barebone, or Barbone, a leather merchant. See Carlyle's *C.'s L. and S.*, Vol. II, p. 33.

311, 18. reform the Court of Chancery: See **304, 23, 24**; see Church's Oliver Cromwell, p. 392.

311, 18, 19. They dissolved themselves: Dec. 12, 1653.

312, 19. second Parliament: This was called on Cromwell's "lucky day," Sept. 3, 1654, but met Monday, Sept. 4; known as Pedant Parliament.

312, 25: concluding Speech: See Carlyle's *C.'s L. and S.*, Vol. II, pp. 390-394, Speech XVII.

314, 2. God be judge: "And I do dissolve this Parliament! and let God be judge between you and me!" Carlyle's *C.'s L. and S.*, Vol. II, p. 393.

314, 8. printed Speeches: These were collected and edited by Carlyle, 1845. For Carlyle's estimate of Cromwell, see J. B. Mozley's *Essays, Historical and Theological*, Vol. I.; also, Margaret Fuller's review in *Life Without and Life Within* (Boston, 1857), pp. 179-191.

314, 21. Histories and Biographies: See Carlyle's *C.'s L. and S.*, Vol. I, Ch. II, *The Biographers of Oliver*.

314, 27. Lord Clarendon: See **290, 29**; also, Peter Bayne's *Chief Actors in the Puritan Revolution*, pp. 435-502.

315, 14. the way of Despotism: For discussion of Cromwell's refusal of the crown, see Carlyle's *C.'s L. and S.*, Vol. II, pp. 273, 274; also, Church's Oliver Cromwell, p. 466, *Dallying with the Crown*.

315, 29. Pombal: Portuguese minister, 1750-1777.

315, 30. Choiseul : Minister of Louis XV, 1758-1770.

316, 8. Old Colonel Hutchinson : Governor of Nottingham, one of the regicides. See Carlyle's C.'s L. and S., Vol. I, p. 315.

316, 20. his poor Mother : This paragraph suggests Carlyle's tender devotion to his own mother. Cf. T. C., Vol. I, 38, 188, Vol. II, 97, 343.

316, 30. dead body was hung : At Restoration, Cromwell's body was hung at Tyburn.

317, 11, 12. this . . . got itself hushed-up : Carlyle's style became lax and hurried in these last pages. His treatment of Napoleon was wholly inadequate, and one regrets that he added this supplement to the forceful, if extreme, defense of Cromwell.

317, 13. in 1688 : Revolution against James II. Cf. Green's Shorter History, Ch. VIII, Sec. X : "In the Revolution of 1688, Puritanism did the work of civil liberty which it had failed to do in that of 1642."

317, 16. French Revolution : Cf. Carlyle's Fr. Rev., Vol. I, Bk. VI, Ch. I : "For ourselves, we answer that French Revolution means here the open violent rebellion and victory of disimproved anarchy against corrupt worn-out authority."

317, 23. In Church and State : Cf. Carlyle's C.'s L. and S., Vol. I, Ch. V, Introduction.

318, 12. Awful Unnamable : This phrase suggests Carlyle's earlier mystic expressions for God, — Verities, Eternities, Abysses, etc.

318, 21. Sceptical Encyclopédies : For Society of Encyclopedists and their publications see Morley's Rousseau, Vol. I, p. 227, Vol. II, p. 255.

318, 25, 26. dumb Prophet : See 290, 25 ; also, Carlyle's C.'s L. and S., Vol. I, Introduction : "Cromwell, emblem of the dumb English," etc.

318, 27. Hume's notion : See 304, 29.

319, 8, 9. no . . . liberty to tell lies : See Carlyle's attack on falsehood, Sartor Resartus, Bk. I, Ch. II.

319, 29. His savans : Notably Denon, Fourier, Dupuis; one hundred artists and scholars, Savans, were chosen to go on the expedition to Egypt, 1798, to gain scientific knowledge and antiquarian treasures. See Hazlitt's *Life of Napoleon*, Vol. II, pp. 97-114 (London, 1852).

319, 30. Bourrienne : 1769-1834. An early school-fellow, later secretary to Napoleon. His *Memoirs* are valuable to Napoleonic historians.

320, 18. Saint Helena : Napoleon exiled Aug. 8, 1815; died there May 6, 1821. See Scott's *Life of Napoleon*, Vol. III, Chs. XXX-XXXIV; also J. S. C. Abbott's *Napoleon at St. Helena*.

321, 3. La carrière : Commonly rendered, a career opens to talents.

321, 12, 13. On that Twentieth of June : "In the beginning of 1792 he became captain of artillery (unattached); and happening to be in Paris, witnessed the lamentable scenes of the twentieth of June, when the revolutionary mob stormed the Tuileries, and the king and his family, after undergoing innumerable insults and degradations, barely preserved their lives. Of Louis XVI, who appeared at the balcony, he said, 'Poor driveller! How could he suffer this rabble to enter? If he had swept away five or six hundred with his cannon, the rest might be running yet.'" Lockhart's *Life of Napoleon*, Ch. I.

321, 16, 17. On the Tenth of August : Date when the royal family took refuge in National Assembly and many Swiss guards were massacred. See Hazlitt's *Life of Napoleon*, Vol. I, Ch. V.

321, 21, 22. brilliant Italian Campaigns : 1796-1797; battles of Millesimo, Leghorn, Lonato, etc. See Hazlitt's *Life of Napoleon*, Vol. I, Chs. IX and X; also Guizot's *History of France*, VI, Ch. VI.

321, 22. Peace of Leoben : April 18, 1797. See Hazlitt's *Life of Napoleon*, Vol. II, Ch. XIII.

322, 4. Wagrams : Conquest of Austrians, July 6, 1809.

Austerlitz : Dec. 2, 1805.

322, 12. Petit Caporal : Napoleon was captain of artillery, 1792, and commander-in-chief of Army of Interior, 1795 ; he was often called "Little Buonaparte" or "Little Captain."

322, 12, 13. put him there : Napoleon was declared Emperor of the French, May 18, 1804.

322, 15. Lieutenant of La Fère : In August, 1785, when sixteen years old, he was appointed second lieutenant in the artillery regiment La Fère.

322, 18, 19. charlatan-element : Cf. W. M. Sloan's *Life of Napoleon*, Vol. III, Ch. XIX, p. 192 (1897) : "It seemed to Napoleon that in order to secure popular good will he must restore prosperity which was not easy and to assert a moral ascendancy over his court he must make a suitable match, which was easy enough. Neither must be half done ; his prestige required a great stroke," etc. See, also, Carlyle's *Frederick the Great*, Vol. III, 277, *Sham-Napoleon* ; also Guizot's *History of France*, VIII, Ch. XVII.

322, 21, 22. Austrian Dynasties : The reference is to the divorce of Josephine and marriage with Maria Louisa of Austria, April 2, 1810.

322, 24. found "his Dynasty" : His son, King of Rome, was born April 20, 1811.

323, 5. Pope's-Concordat : The recognition of Catholicism as National Church, etc. See Lockhart's *Life of Napoleon*, Ch. XXVII ; also Guizot's *History of France*, VI, Ch. VI.

323, 8. Coronations : Dec. 2, 1805, at Notre Dame, Paris, where he insisted that the pope should come to crown him ; he was crowned later, also, at Milan.

323, 11. Augereau : General Augereau, later Duke of Castiglione, victor at Lonato, 1796.

323, 13. Cromwell's Inauguration : This was more elaborate than Carlyle represents. See Church's *Oliver Cromwell*, Ch. XXII, p. 395.

323, 21. Dupeability : An unusual but effective word ;

see same thought in Scott's *Life of Napoleon*, Vol. III, Ch. XIV.

323, 23. build upon cloud: The reference is to *Nephelococcygia*, a town in the clouds. See Aristophanes, *The Birds*.

323, 28. Lead us not: See Matt. vi: 13; Luke xi: 4.

324, 8. Duke of Weimar: Charles Augustus, 1775-1828. Goethe's friend and patron.

324, 17. Bookseller, Palm: This Naumburg bookseller published a pamphlet accusing Napoleon of ambition. He was seized and shot at once; similar punishments were meted to Duke d'Enghien of Ettingen and Sir George Rumbold at Hamburg.

324, 31. ébauche: Literally, a first draught or sketch.

325, 10. Isle of Oleron: Uliarus, in Atlantic.

325, 22. pedestal to France and him: "Napoleon confessed more than once at Longwood that he owed his downfall to nothing but the extravagance of his errors. 'It must be owned,' said he, 'that fortune spoiled me.'" Lockhart's *Life of Napoleon*, Ch. XLII. For comparison of Napoleon and Frederick, see Carlyle's *Frederick the Great*, Vol. I, pp. 6, 7, 13.

326, 23. Good be, etc.: For similar ending see Carlyle's *Lectures on The History of Literature*, p. 225 (New York, 1892).

INDEX TO TEXT

more detailed Index to Notes and Introduction, supplementary to this general Index to Carlyle's text, will be found -417.

- | | |
|--|---|
| <p>an, 263, 264, 267. Eager, 25. . . . ry, 7, 8, 129, 130. on, true and false, 297, 300, 301. y, 166, 312. and the Arabs, 63-65, 63. writing, 214. m, 232, 236. . . . , 24, 46. 159, 232, 233, 273. anism, 231. Stone, 66. and Book-writers, 212, 217. r, <i>Stümper</i>, 210. Robert, early life, 252- versatility, 255; resem- ce to Mirabeau, 256, 257; stness, 256; sincerity, visit to Edinburgh, 259, 127, 223. . . . 1, 66. 18, 12. 164, 244. s I, 286, 287.</p> | <p>Chinese, 226. Choosers of the Slain, 42. Cromwell, false view, 278, 279; ambition, 285; practical eye, 287; speeches, 293, 303, 312- 314; hypocrisy, 294, 306. Czar of Russias, 153. . . . Dante, life, 115-117; song, 120; intensity, 123; painting, 124- 126; sincerity, 132. David, 62. Democracy, 220. Denial of Self, 76, 100. Dilettantism, 98, 112. Divine Idea of the World, 107. Divine Man, 68, 171. Divine Right of Kings, 265. . . . Eddas, 22, 23, 29, 41. Eighteenth Century, 228. Emblems, 13. Empire of Routine, 227. Empire of Silence, 299. Eternity, Time, 4, 119, 193. . . . Faults, 62. Forms, true and false, 275. Formulas, 241, 242. Fox, the, — vulpine intellect, 143.</p> |
|--|---|

- French Revolution, 60, 159, 183, 191, 268, 269, 317.
- Giant Skrymir, 49.
- Goethe, 109, 140, 210, 211.
- Government, 219.
- Great Men, 2, 57, 105, 282, 283.
- Happiness, 95.
- Hegira, 81.
- Heroarchy, 15.
- Heroes, 1, 37, 56, 170, 207, 208, 290.
- Hero-worship, 14, 15, 16, 20, 246, 270, 271.
- Hierarchy, 16.
- History, Universal, 1, 18, 39.
- Honour, 94.
- Hynde Etin, 48.
- Iceland, 21.
- Ideals, 263, 264.
- Idolatries, 73, 84, 161, 162, 163, 164.
- Infinite, the, 17, 61.
- Islam, 75, 76.
- Johnson, Samuel, sufferings, 239; originality, 240; sincerity, 241; prophet, 244.
- Jötuns, 23, 49, 172.
- Kadijah, 71, 77.
- Kingship, 262.
- Knox, early life, 196; trials, 196, 197; sincerity, 198; nature, 201-203.
- Koran, origin, 86; style, 87; sincerity, 90; prophets, 90.
- Koreish, 67, 79.
- Laud, Archbishop, 274, 276.
- Laughter, 146.
- Liberty and Equality, 166, 170.
- Life, a struggle, 63; a Fact, 89; between Eternities, 236.
- Light or lightning, 259.
- Lion-hunters, 261.
- Literary life, wild welter, 224.
- Literature, Apocalypse of Nature, 218.
- Luther, Martin, Breaker of Idols, 164; youth, 170-173; priest, 174; courage, 178; trial, 180, 181; writings, 186; belief in Devil, 187.
- Mahomet, Life of, 68-71; character, 71; ambition, 72; courage, 79; creed, 84, 97; miracles, 91.
- Man, the fatal, 257; the holy, 14, 272.
- Mecca, 66, 67.
- Mechanism of Universe, 28, 231.
- Men, Great, 2, 57, 105.
- Men of Letters, 206, 221; genuine and spurious, 208.
- Mimes*, 252.
- Miracles, 93, 171.
- Month Ramadham, 74, 100.
- Music, 157.
- Mythuses, 45, 51.
- Nature, preternatural, 10, 13, 40, 83; various aptitudes, 106.
- Norse System, 25-28, 38, 39, 54, 229.
- Odin, name, 31; Runes, 36, 37; Type Norseman, 38; as God, 38.
- Olaf, 53.
- Order, Truth, 203, 273.
- Originality, 61, 240.
- Paganism, 4, 5, 9.
- "*pented bredd*," 198.

- Persiflage, 18, 19, 250.
 Pilgrim's Progress, 8.
 Poet, 104, 105, 110, 140, 141.
 Poetry, 109; saints of, 114.
 Popery, 177, 178, 184.
 Poverty, 222, 223.
 Prayer, 232.
 Priest, 154, 155.
 "private judgment," 166, 167.
 Prophet, 58, 59.
 Protestantism, 165, 182, 183, 191.
 Puritanism, 102, 191, 192.
 Puritans, 274, 276-278, 280.

 Quackery and quacks, 5, 234, 264, 289.
 Queen Mary, 199, 200.

 Raphael, 125.
 Reformation, 181, 182.
 Reformers, 156, 157, 205.
 Religion, 3, 15, 35, 81, 136, 137, 160.
 Repentance, 62, 128.
 Right and Wrong, 101.
 Rousseau, face, 247; Egoism, 248; prophet, 249, 250; Books, 250; Evangelist of French Revolution, 251.

 Sabians, 12.
 Scepticism, 4, 59, 230, 233, 234, 288.
 Science, 10, 11, 23, 93.
 Scotch Literature and Thought, 195.
 Scotland at time of Knox, 193, 194.

 Shakspeare and Dante, 135; early life, 136; gift of Nature, 137; great intellect, 138, 143; sonnets, 145; historical plays, 146, 147; scroll, 148; no sceptic, 149; King, 152.
 Simulacrum, 61, 235.
 Sincerity, 60, 168.
 Song, 121.
 Speciosities, 59.
 Syrian Sects, 85.

 Taxes, 281, 282.
 Teachers and Teaching, 215.
 Theocracy, 203, 204.
 Thought, 27, 28, 220, 221, 257.
 Tolerance, 185, 201.
 Tree of Existence, 27.
 Truth, 83, 98, 167, 168.

 Understanding, not a tool, 226.
 Universe a Mystery, 11, 107, 155.
 University, a Collection of Books, 217.
 Utilitarians, 134, 151, 152, 201, 229, 230, 231.

 Valour, 43.
 Voltaire, 18, 19.
 Völuspá, 45.

 Well Zemzem, 66.
 World, Temple, 85; Divine Idea of, 107; godless, 228, 235.
 Worship, 12, 13, 219.



INDEX TO NOTES AND INTRO- DUCTION

topics in italics are the authorities quoted from or re-
ferred to in the Notes.

- | | |
|---|--|
| <p> sh, 353. Motálleb, 353. l, 379. <i>t of Embassy, An, Tur-</i> 40. la, Cow, 348. 344. mo, 364. us, 369. mmon, 348. <i>Fable, Bulfinch</i>, 382. art, battle of, 368. <i>Reflection, Coleridge</i>, 58. 371. . as Godlike," 341. y, 340; Dante's, 365. ul, 362. on, two kinds, 395. an Backwoods, 350. , 349. <i>my Books, Lowell</i>, 365, 367, 368, 385. tists, 373. , <i>Muir</i>, 355. ation of Self, 354. , <i>Voyages</i>, 344. -like, 396. ette, Queen, 343. </p> | <p> Apocalypse of Nature, 361. <i>Apollodorus</i>, 396. <i>Appeals to Mothers</i>, 384. Arabia and Arab character, 352. Argyles, 396. Arundel-marble, 346. Asgard, 343. Atahualpa, 347. Athanasiuses, 346. Augereau, 401. Ansterlitz, battle of, 359, 401. Austrian Dynasties, 401. Awful Unnamable, 399. Ayesha, 355. . Bacon, 366, 367. Balder, 344. <i>Balder Dead, Arnold</i>, 348, 350. <i>Ballads and Songs of Scotland</i>, <i>Murray</i>, 349. Banyan-tree, 348. Barebones's Parliament, 398. Baresark, 391. Beatrice, 361. Bedford Fens, 392. Bedlam, 389. Bedouin, 357. <i>Beginnings of New England</i>, <i>The, Fiske</i>, 375, 377. </p> |
|---|--|

- Bellarmino, 371.
 Bentham, 358, 381; Benthamism, 381.
 Bianchi-Neri, 362.
Biblical References, 340, 341, 342, 352, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 363, 364, 366, 368, 369, 371, 373, 374, 377, 378, 379, 381, 383, 384, 389, 395, 396, 402.
Biographia Literaria, Coleridge, 363.
 Biography, the true history, xvi, xxiv, 339.
 Black malady, 381.
 Black Stone, 353.
 Blake, Admiral, 348.
Bleak House, Dickens, 396.
Blot upon the Brain, Ireland, 356.
 Blumine of Sartor Resartus, xiii.
 Boccaccio, 359.
 Bookseller Osborne, 382.
 Bookseller Palm, 402.
 Boswell, James, 383.
 Boswell's Johnson, *see* Johnson.
 Bourrienne, 400.
Brave Little Holland, Griffiths, 375.
British Monachism, Fosbroke, 370.
 Brobdignagian, 345.
 Brunetto Latini, 363.
 Buller, Charles, xi.
 Burke, Edmund, 380.
Burns, Critical Essay, Carlyle, 386, 387.
Burns, Life and Lands of, Cunningham, 386, 387.
Burns, Life of, Lockhart, 386, 387.
 Burns, Robert: compared to Mirabeau, 359, 387; dialect, 386; early life, 386; versatilitiy, 386; "fire-flies," 387.
 Byronism of taste, 364.
 Caabab, 353.
 Cagliostro, xv, 351.
Cagliostro's Stammbaum, Goethe, 352.
 Calases, 343.
 Caliph Thrones, 365.
 Camille Desmoulins, 388.
 Can della Scala, 362.
 Canto fermo, 363.
 Caput-mortuum, 381.
 Carlyle, Jane Welsh, xii, xiv, xv, xxi.
Carlyle Personally, etc., Masson, x, xix.
 Carlyle, Thomas: bibliography, xxxiv-xxxvi; biography, x-xxi; literary summary, xxxi-xxxiii. (Carlyle's writings are indexed under their separate titles.)
Carlyle, Thomas, Conway, x, 367.
Carlyle, Thomas, Froude, ix, xvi, xviii, xx, xxi, xxiv, xxix, 348, 352, 357, 358, 371, 375, 377, 378, 384, 388, 389, 392, 393, 396, 399.
Carlyle, Thomas, Garnett, x, xxi.
Carmen, Horace, 370.
 Cat, Loki's, 349.
 Catholicism abolished, 366.
 Cato, 395.
 Cavalcante, 363.
 Celia . . . Clifford, 379.
Century Dictionary, 339, 341, 342, 352, 384.
 Cestus of Venus, 346.
 Chancery Law-Courts, 396.
 Charlemagne: conversion of

INDEX TO NOTES AND INTRODUCTION 409

- Saxons, 355; founder of University, 379.
 Charles V, Emperor, 373.
 Chartism, xix, 382.
 Chiaroscuro, 361.
Chief Actors in Puritan Revolution, Bayne, 390, 397, 398.
Childe Harold, Byron, 363, 365.
 Chillingworth, 393.
Chinese, The, Martin, 380.
 Choiseul, 399.
 Chosroes, 354.
 Church of St. Clement Danes, 383.
Citation and Examination, etc., Lander, 366.
 Clarendon, 393.
 Clouting, 357.
 Columbus, 370.
Conquest of Granada, Irving, 359.
Conquest of Peru, Prescott, 347.
 Conscript Fathers, 391.
 Consecration of Valour, 350.
 Constance Council, 372.
Constitutional History, Hallam, 375, 376, 391, 397.
 Contrat-Social, 384.
Contemporary Thought, etc., Hutton, xxii.
 Copy-wrongs, 378.
Corrected Impressions, Saintsbury, xvii.
 Corsica Boswell, 394.
 Cowper, poor poet, 374.
 Cranach, *see* Kranach.
 Cranmer, 370.
Critical Miscellanies, Morley, xxvii, 364, 367.
 Cromwell, Oliver: biographers, 391; ambition, 395; character, 394, 396; despotism, 396; speeches, 398.
Cromwell, Oliver, Church, 391, 392, 397, 398, 401.
Cromwell, Oliver, Palgrave, 391.
Cromwell, Oliver, Southey, 392.
Cromwell's Letters and Speeches, Carlyle, xix, 391, 392, 393, 396, 397, 398, 399.
 Dante: life, 361, 362; song, 363.
Dante, A Shadow of, M. F. Rossetti, 362.
Dante and his Circle, D. G. Rossetti, 361.
 Dasent, G. W., *see* Eddas.
Decline and Fall, Gibbon, 352, 354, 355, 357.
 Delhi, 353.
 Deliquium, 351.
 Delirations, 384.
Descent of Odin, Gray, 348.
Diana of the Crossways, Meredith, 385.
Die Gotter Griechenlands, Schiller, 360.
Digression sur les Anciens, Fontenelle, 342.
 Dilettantism, 358.
 Diocletian, 396.
 Diodorus Siculus, 353.
 Dios, 347.
 Disjecta membra, 368.
Distinctive Messages, etc., Matheson, 347.
 Divine Comedy, 362.
 Doctrine of Motives, 381.
 Dogberry, 368.
Don Juan, Byron, 359.
 Douanier, 343.
 Duke George, 374.
 Duke of Weimar, 402.
 Dunbar, battle, 392.
Dunciad, Pope, 382.
 Dupeability, 401.
 Earl of Morton, 376.

- Early Kings of Norway, Carlyle*, *xxi*, 350.
Earthly Paradise, The, Morris, 344.
Ébauche, 402.
Eck, John, 371.
Eclogues, 370.
Eddas, Elder and Younger, 343, 344, 345, 347, 348, 349.
Eliot, John, 390.
Ely, 392.
Encyclopédies, 399.
English Literature, Taine, *xxvii*, 361.
Epic of the Inner Life, Genung, 352.
Essay on Man, Pope, 354.
Essays, Carlyle's Critical and Miscellaneous, *xiii*, *xiv*, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 349, 351, 354, 359, 360, 366, 367, 375, 378, 382, 385.
Essays, De Quincey, 366.
Essays, Emerson, 339, 394.
Essays, Hume, 339, 340, 390.
Essays, Macaulay, 359, 364, 383, 391.
Essays, Masson, 374.
Essays, Mozley, 388, 390, 392, 398.
Essays, Schiller, 360.
Essays in Criticism, Arnold, 361.
Essays in English Literature, Sherer, 367.
Essays in Literary Interpretation, Mabie, 365.
Euphemisms, 393.
Faiths of the World, The, 350.
Falkland, 393.
Familiar Quotations, Bartlett, 383.
Familiar Studies, Stevenson, 377.
Farinata, 363.
Fatal Sisters, The, Gray, *341*, 348.
Faust, Goethe, 340.
Ferney, 343.
Festus, Bailey, 360.
Fichte, 378; *Sammt. Werke*, 378.
First Voyage, Magellan, 344.
Florentine Histories, Machiavelli, 362.
Flower in the Crannied Wall, Tennyson, 342.
Fontenelle, 394.
Force, 341.
Formula, 383.
Four Frenchwomen, Dobson, 384.
Francesca and her lover, 364.
Fraser's Magazine, *xv*, *xvi*.
Frederick the Great, Carlyle, *xx*, 371, 393, 402.
Freemason's Tavern, 366.
French Revolution, Carlyle, *xvi*, 342, 345, 352, 371, 381, 384, 386, 387, 388, 389, 395, 399.
Freycinet's Voyage, 344.
Friend, The, Coleridge, 370, 374, 383, 385, 395.
Froude's biography, see Carlyle.
Fue, 363, 364.
Gauger, Burns, 380.
Gehenna, 365.
Gemma, 362.
Genlis, Countess, 384.
German Critics, 360.
German Literature, *xii*, *xiii*, 378.
German Literature, Menzel, 349.
German Philosopher, 349.
Giant Skrymir, 349.
Gibbon, 395.
Giotto, 361.
Giovanna, 365.
Glorious Revolution, 376.

- n* *Shakspeare*, "*Clelia*," *Heroes of the Mission Field*,
Walsh, 345.
Herodotus, 350.
Higher Pantheism, The, Ten-
nyson, 341.
Hildebrand, 377.
Hindoo Mythologist, 349.
Historical Studies, Lawrence,
346, 372.
History, Universal, 339.
History of England, Hume, 370,
372, 376, 377, 381, 390, 392, 396.
History of France, Guizot, 343,
385, 400, 401.
History of Richard Cromwell,
Guizot, 390.
History of Spanish Literature,
Ticknor, 346.
History of the Puritans, Neal,
375.
Hodman, A., 378.
Hogstraten, 371.
Homoiousion, 355.
Homoiousion, 355, 356.
Horse-shoe vein, 353.
Hours in a Library, Stephen,
374, 383.
House built of glass, 394.
Hrolf, 348.
Hud, Prophet, 357.
Hudibras, Butler, 390, 397.
Hume, David, 376, 396.
Huntingdon Physician, 391.
Huss, 372.
Hustings, 366.
Hutchinson, Colonel, 399.
Hymir, 344.
Hyper-Brodingnagian, 345.
Igdrasil, 345.
Iliad, The, Homer, 347, 348.
Imbroglio, 340.
Immutable, The, Schiller, 350.
Inferno, Dante, 362, 363, 364,
370.
- n* *Shakspeare*, "*Clelia*,"
ünsch, 344.
n, 398.
s, xii, xiii, 367, 378, 389;
st, 340; *Werke*, 381.
s-*Carlyle Correspond-*
xiii, 374, 378.
da, 359.
Lamaism, 340.
fragments, 348.
Civil War, Gardiner,
Men, 339, 342, 351.
1, 344, 346.
s, 351.
Ghibelline, 362.
, 377.
us-Adolphus, 375.
berg, 379.
s-Corpus enacted, 390.
f Dite, 363.
f Odin, 347.
t, 368; source, 349.
er, Thor's, 344, 348.
ien, John, 390.
on-Court, 392.
Mount, 354.
l, *Lytton*, 345.
ock, 386.
w Book, 379.
., 355.
kringla, 346, 348, 350.
374.
IV, 383, 384.
V, 368.
VI, 351.
ius, 354, 358.
der, 349.
at all points, xxvi, 351.
worship, origin of term,
gone out, 342.
and *Hero-Worship, Car-*
xvii, xviii, xxiv, xxix.

- Infinite conjugation of verb, to do, 345.
In Memoriam, Tennyson, 381.
In the Key of Blue, etc., Symonds, 361.
Introduction to Study of Dante, Symonds, 363, 364, 365.
Introduction to Study of Shakespeare, Corson, 367.
 Invasions, Danish, 344.
 Ironsides, Cromwell's, 392.
 Irving, Edward, xi.
 Islam, 354.
 Island of Sumatra, 387.
 Isle of Oleron, 402.

 Jack the Giant-killer, 349.
 Janszoon, 379.
 Jerome, 372.
 Job, Book of, 352.
 Johnson, Samuel: poverty, 380; shoes, 383; writings, 383.
Johnson, Life of, Boswell, 380, 381, 382, 383.
Johnson, Life of, Stephen, 382, 394.
 Jokuls, 343.
 Jonson, Ben, 350.
Joseph Balsamo, Dumas, 352.
 Jötunheim, 343.

 Kadijah, xiv, 354.
 Karlstadt's image-breaking, 373.
 Keblah, 353.
 King, derivation, 342; divine right, 388.
 King Henrys, 366.
 Knox, John: character, 376; *Historie*, 376; influence, 377; intolerance, 377.
Knox, Life of, McCrie, 376, 377.
 Koran, 356; commentaries, 356; quotations, 357.

Koran, Wherry's Commentary on, 352, 355, 356.
 Kranach, 375.

 La carrière, etc., 400.
 Ladrones Islands, 343, 344.
Latter-Day Pamphlets, Carlyle, xix.
 Laud, Archbishop, 390.
Leaders of the Reformation, Tulloch, 373, 376.
Lectures, Emerson, 388.
Lectures on History of Literature, Carlyle, xvii, 388, 396, 402.
 Leoben, Peace of, 400.
Lessons from my Masters, Bayne, xxv.
Letters on Æsthetic Culture, Schiller, 347.
Letters to Dead Authors, Lang, 387.
Levana, Richter, 342.
 Leyden jars, 341.
 Lieutenant of La Fère, 401.
Life Without and Life Within, Fuller, 398.
Literary Ethics, Emerson, 360.
Literary Portraits, Sainte-Beuve, 384, 385, 389.
 Literature of Desperation, 385.
Lives of Greek Statesmen, Coz, 379.
Lives of the Fathers, Farrar, 342.
 Loadstar, 382.
Locksley Hall, Tennyson, 345.
 Lope, 346.
 Love-locks, 392.
Love of Fame, Young, 395.
 Lucy, Sir Thomas, 366, 369.
Luther's Leben, Köstlin, 375.
Luther, Life of, Froude, 371, 373, 374.

EX TO NOTES AND INTRODUCTION 413

- Life of, Michelet*, 371, 73, 374, 375.
 Martin: character, 372; ice to Pope, 372, 373; i, 372; *Werke*, 372, 373.
Martin; Study of Retention, Mead, 373.
- i, 348.
 e of the Universe, 345.
 et: biographers, 351;
 it hypothesis, 351;
 rs, 355; miracles, 357;
 rament, 356, 357.
et and his Successors, 7, 351, 353, 355, 356, 359.
et, Critical Examination of Ali Ameer, 351.
et, Life of, Muir, 351, 54, 355, 356, 357, 358.
et, Life of, Prideaux, of Florence, Mrs. Oli-, 361, 362.
 359.
 lge Pool, 362.
 Letters, 378.
 ough, Duke of, 368.
 ls of Louis XIV, 359.
 tuart, 377; *Lamartine*, Swinburne, 377.
 ver, The, 375.
 , Joseph, xxiv.
 , see Wilhelm Meister.
 s of Great Com-ers, James, 359.
 es sur Voltaire, 342.
 omen, and Books, Bir-83.
 ant Orders, 380.
Wives of Windsor, 366.
 , *Ovid*, 349, 370, 373, 382.
 John, 398.
 smithy, 350.
 386.
- Mirabeau: sincerity, 352; ambition, 395.
 Mirabeau, old Marquis, 386.
Modern Guides to English Thought, Hutton, xxi, xxiii, 341, 344.
Mohammed, das Leben, Sprenger, 351, 353.
Mohammed, der Prophet, Weil, 351, 356.
 Mohra, 371.
 Monarchy of Man, 391.
 Month Ramadhan, 354.
 Montrose, 397.
Much Ado About Nothing, 368.
 Mystery of Time, 341.
 Mystic, unfathomable Song, 361.
- Napoleon: campaigns, 400; charlatan-element, 401; power, 401.
Napoleon at St. Helena, Abbott, 400.
Napoleon, Life of, Hazlitt, 400.
Napoleon, Life of, Lockhart, 400, 402.
Napoleon, Life of, Sloane, 401.
Napoleon, Life of, Scott, 400, 402.
Nature and Elements of Poetry, Stedman, 361.
 Necker, 395.
 Nelson, 348; *Life of, Mahan*, 348.
Nem., Pindar, 350.
 Nephelococcygia, 402.
 Nescience, 340, 341.
 Nessus'-shirt, 382.
 New Holland, 369.
 Newspapers, pulpit, 379.
 Niebuhr, 389.
Nine Worlds, The, Litchfield, 343.

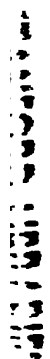
- Norman Conquest, The, Freeman*, 380.
Normas, 345.
Norse Mythology, Anderson, 344, 346.
Northern Antiquities, Mallet, 344, 347, 348, 349, 350.
Northern Mythology, Thorpe, 343, 344, 345, 349.
Novalis, 342. See also *Schriffen*.
Novum Organum, 366.
Obiter Dicta, Birrell, 384.
Odin, Wuotan, 346; a God, 347.
Edipus, Dryden, 354.
Olaf, 350.
Olympus, Pindar, 350.
On an Honest Man's Fortune, Fletcher, 358.
Open secret, 360, 369.
Orpheus, 370.
Orson, 396.
Osborne, Bookseller, 382.
Othello, 394.
Paley, 358.
Pandora, Rossetti, 381.
Pandora's Box, 381.
Papuans, 359.
Paracelsus, Browning, 360.
Paradise and the Peri, Moore, 350.
Paradise Lost, Milton, 382.
Paradiso, Dante, 364.
Paramatta, 389.
Parliament: Barebones's, 386; Long, 386; Free, 387; Pe-dant, 388; Rump, 387.
Parliamentary History, 387.
Past and Present, Carlyle, xix, 342, 343, 351, 355, 370, 378, 379, 381, 382, 384.
Pastorals, Pope, 385.
Peasant Covenanters, 376.
Peasants' War, 374.
Pericles, 379.
Persifleur, 343.
Petit Caporal, 401.
Petrarch, 359.
Phalaris'-Bull, 381.
Philistine Mill, 381.
Philosophical Essays, Hume, 339, 340.
Phoenix fire-death, 350.
Piasters, 365.
Pie-powder court, 393.
Pilgrim in Old England, The, Bradford, 375, 377.
Pindar's time, 350.
Pitt, William, 380.
Plato's fancy, 340; *Republic*, 340; *Charmides*, 346.
Plutus, 363.
Pococke, 351.
Poems of Pilgrims, 375.
Poetry, definition of, 360, 361.
Pombal, 398.
Pontiff of Encyclopedism, 343.
Pope's-Concordat, 401.
Pope's Homer, 348.
Portraits des Femmes, Sainte-Beuve, 385.
Portraits of John Knox, Carlyle, xxi, 376, 377.
Preliminary Discourse, Sale, 352, 356, 357.
Presbyterianism, 375.
Present Crisis, The, Lowell, 370.
Prideaux, 356.
Pride's Purges, 397.
Priest, prophet, 369.
Printer Cave, 380.
Printing, invention of, 379.
Progress of Poetry, Gray, 361.
Progress of species, 370.
Prize Writers of Germany, Heide, 378.
Proverbes en Rimes, 394.

- ens, 390.
Dante, 365.
idar, 381, 382.
 O.
ein, Richter, 341.
 oran.
 ked, 383.
 O.
 ter, 370.
 of forces, etc., 344.
Scott, 353, 354.
 398.
 ay, 377.
Fère, 401.
 ror, 389.
Shakespeare, The,
 368.
es, Carlyle, x, xi,
 380, 384.
 341, 342.
 90.
uliet, 373.
Émile, 384, 385;
s, 385; prophet,
 , 387.
orley, 384, 385, 399.
 .
The, Philpot, 345.
 .
 Eddas.
 Castle, 376.
 im, 342.
 369.
 oo.
 is.
 s, 366.
 , 352.
 m, 371, 388.
Sartor Resartus, Carlyle, xii,
 xiv, xvi, 339, 341, 342, 357,
 361, 371, 378, 379, 381, 382,
 385, 388, 390, 399.
 Savans, 400.
 Saxo Grammaticus, 346.
 Scandinavian Paganism, 344,
 347.
 Sceptical Dilettantism, 399.
Schiller, Life of, Carlyle, 347.
 Schlegel, August, 368.
Schönberg-Cotta Family, Mrs.
Charles, 375.
Schools of Charles the Great,
The, Mullinger, 379.
Schriften, Novalis, 342, 354, 366,
 367, 384, 389.
 Schweidnitz Fort, 371.
Scorn not the Sonnet, Words-
worth, 367.
 Scott, Walter, 385.
 Scroll, Shakespeare's, 368.
 Sergius, the Monk, 353.
Sesame and Lilies, Ruskin,
 365, 367, 368.
Shadow of Dante, A., M. F.
Rossetti, 363.
 Shakspeare, intellect, 366;
 dramas, 366; gift of nature,
 366; king, 369.
 Shakspeare and Dante, 365.
 Sheik, 354.
 Shekinah, 342.
 Ship-moneys, 391.
Shorter History of English Peo-
ple, Green, 367, 375, 376, 389,
 390, 396, 397, 399.
 Silence, Empire of, 394.
 Silvestre de Sacy, 353.
 Simon de Montfort, 390.
 Sinai, Mount, 354.
σκεψις, 381.
Sketches and Travels, Thack-
eray, 368.
Sketch Book, Irving, 369.

- Skrymir, 349.
 Smith, Adam, Rae, 346.
 Songs and Sagas of the Norsemen, Major, 348.
 Southey, Robert, 380.
 Spirit of lies, 384.
 Staël, Madame de, 385.
 Starchamber hangmen, 375.
 Statesmen of the Commonwealth, Forster, 390, 391.
 Staupitz, John von, 372.
 Stocks, 340.
 Stories retold from the Eddas, Mabie, 345.
 Studies in Religious History, Renan, 366.
 Sturleson, Snorro, 343.
 Symbol . . . the Universe, 340.
 Table-Talk, Coleridge, 352.
 Table-Talk, Cowper, 395.
 Tacitus, 363.
 Tales of a Wayside Inn, Longfellow, 344.
 Tartufe, 391.
 Tempest, The, 349, 350, 368.
 Ten Great Religions, Clarke, 355, 380.
 Terza rima, 363.
 Tetzel, 371.
 Teutonic Mythology, Grimm, 344, 346.
 Thalaba, Southey, 370.
 Theamaturgie, 380.
 Thebaid Eremites, 370.
 Theog., Hesiod, 381.
 Thirty Years' War, Schiller, 373.
 Thor, 344.
 Three Days of July, 389.
 Three Estates, 380.
 Tick, 365.
 Time, a Mystery, 341: resting on eternity, 340.
 Tordis, Loken, 372, 374.
 Tordis, Loken, 382.
 To Robert Browning, Lamb, 369.
 Tophet, 365.
 Torfaeus, 346.
 Tragopodagra, Lucian, 32.
 Treadmill, 369.
 Trebizond, Council of, 35, 36.
 Tree of Existence, 365.
 Trent, Council of, 365.
 Troilus and Cressida, 38, 36.
 Turenne, 359.
 Turner, Samuel, 340.
 Twelve, the number, 365.
 Twilight of the Gods, 380.
 Uhland, 349.
 Ulfila, 345.
 Ultimus Romanorum, 394.
 Universe . . . Thought of God, 360.
 'Troopers', 394.
 Ushers de Brézé, 387.
 Utilitarian spirit, 365.
 Va bon train, 343.
 Valhalla, 347.
 Valkyrs, 347.
 Valour . . . value, 348.
 Vanity Fair, Thackeray, 364.
 Vates, 360.
 Vauxhall, 360.
 Verges, 368.
 Vision of Justice, A, Addison, 359.
 Vita Nuova, Dante, 361.
 Voltaire and Voltaireism, 34.
 Voltaire, Morley, 343.
 Vorschule, Richter, 374.
 Voyage autour du Mont Freycinet, 344.
 Voyages, Anson's, 344.
 Vulpine intellect, 367.
 Wagrams, 400.
 Walks in London, Hare, 383.

TO NOTES AND INTRODUCTION 417

| | |
|-------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| race, 382. | 350, 358, 359, 360, 365, 368, |
| l, 347. | 393. |
| h, 347. | Windbag, 394. |
| 47. | Witchcraft, 381. |
| lc, 358. | Witenagemote, 380. |
| hants, 382. | <i>Women of the Valois Court,</i> |
| uritans, 390. | <i>Saint-Amand</i> , 377. |
| ir Philip, 391; <i>Me-</i> | Worcester Fight, 391, 392. |
| . | Worms, Diet at, 373. |
| re Squire, 366. | Worship, 388; worship-wonder, |
| George, 396. | 341. |
| l, 376. | <i>Wotton Reinfred</i> , 357. |
| , 347. | Wuotan, 346. |
| Catechism, 358. | |
| Confession, 376. | <i>Yankee in Canada</i> , xxv, xxvi. |
| 94. | |
| <i>ister's Apprentice-</i> | Zacat, 358. |
| <i>travels, Goethe</i> , xii, | Zemzem, Well, 353. |
| 2 | |



EXERCISES IN RHETORIC AND ENGLISH COMPOSITION.

BY

GEORGE R. CARPENTER,

Professor of Rhetoric and English Composition, Columbia College.

HIGH-SCHOOL COURSE. SEVENTH EDITION.

16mo. Cloth. Price 75 cents, net.

ADVANCED COURSE. FOURTH EDITION.

12mo. Cloth. Price \$1.00, net.

This work gives the student the very gist and germ of the art of composition." — *Public Opinion*.

G. R. Carpenter, Professor of Rhetoric and English Composition in Columbia College, has prepared a work under the title of 'Exercises in Rhetoric and English Composition,' in which not so much the science of Rhetoric is set out and defined as the practical workings of the art are furnished to the student with just enough of the principles to guide him aright. The work gives an abundance of exercises for the student to study and analyze, and this is the very best kind of help. The scheme of the subject-matter is what is unique and novel, but it is comprehensive and lucid. . . . A very readable and suggestive book to read and consult." — *Education*.

The text represents the substance of teaching which a freshman may be expected to compass, and it is set forth with a clearness and directness and brevity so admirable as to make the volume seem almost the realization of that impossible short method of learning to write which has often been sought for, but never with a nearer approach to being found. . . . We do not hesitate to give unreserved commendation to this little book." — *Nation*.

Seldom has so much good common sense been put within so brief a compass." — *The Boston Herald*.

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY,
66 FIFTH AVENUE, NEW YORK.

STUDIES IN STRUCTURE AND STYLE.

Based on Seven Modern English Essays.

By **W. T. BREWSTER, A.M.,**

Tutor in Rhetoric and English in Columbia University.

With an Introduction by **G. B. CARPENTER, A.B.,** Professor of Rhetoric and English Composition in Columbia University.

Cloth. 12mo. - - \$1.10.

The Seven Essays referred to are: J. A. Froude's "The Defeat of the Spanish Armada," R. L. Stevenson's "Personal Experience and Review," John Morley's "Macaulay," Matthew Arnold's "On the Study of Celtic Literature," James Bryce's "The Strength of American Democracy," John Ruskin's "The Crown of Wild Olive," and J. H. Newman's "What is a University?"

It is of too recent publication to have been in class-room use, but will be introduced at the beginning of another school year in a number of schools.

"It is well conceived, and the selections are excellent for their purpose."—PROF. FELIX E. SCHELLING, *University of Pennsylvania.*

"The selections seem to be chosen with good judgment, and the notes to be careful and instructive."—PROF. FRED P. EMERY, *Dartmouth College, Hanover, N. H.*

"I am even more pleased with the book than I had expected to be. . . . I shall certainly try to introduce the book into one of my classes next fall."—MISS ANNA H. SMITH, *High School, Binghamton, N. Y.*

"'Studies in Structure and Style' is, I think, the best book of the kind that has yet appeared, and I shall be glad to recommend it to my classes."—PROF. EDWIN M. HOPKINS, *University of Kansas, Lawrence, Kan.*

"I have delayed to acknowledge Brewster's 'Studies in Structure and Style,' which you kindly sent me, until I could examine it with some care. That examination is very satisfactory. The selections are well chosen, and the comments both on their structure and their style are distinctly valuable. The work can hardly fail to be of large service."—MISS E. G. WILLCOX, *Wellesley College, Mass.*

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY,

66 FIFTH AVENUE, NEW YORK.

THE INTERPRETATION OF LITERATURE.

BY

W. H. CRAWSHAW, A.M.,

Professor of English in Colgate University.

16mo. Cloth. - - \$1.00.

An Introduction to the study of *Æsthetics* as applied to Literature, brief but discriminating. A compact, convenient, practical text-book. Such a general outline as should precede any general course in Literature, and be continually applied during its extent.

It was published too late in the spring to be available for introduction, but we are advised of a number of summer classes which are to use it. Send for a fuller circular.

"I have read the greater part of it continuously, with unflagging interest and with lively approval. I have examined what I have not as yet continuously read, and I am satisfied that you have achieved an admirable success in an admirable attempt. No student can master your treatise without being thereby much better equipped for the appreciation and enjoyment of literature in its authentic and intimate spirit and essence. . . . I shall be glad to hear that your book meets with wide acceptance. I shall myself commend it to my classes." — PROF. WM. CLEAVER WILKINSON, *University of Chicago.*

"It impresses me as excellent in every way. The theory is fundamental, and it is worked out into a good practical method. It has the qualities of a good text-book, because it is the result of actual experience in the class-room; it is suited to the needs of young men, as young men are found to be, not as they are theoretically conceived to be. It deserves a large use." — PROF. GEORGE D. KNIGHT, *Hamilton School, Philadelphia.*

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY,
66 FIFTH AVENUE, NEW YORK.

THE HISTORY OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE

BY

OLIVER FARRAR EMERSON, A.M., Ph.D.,
*Assistant Professor of Rhetoric and English Philology in Cornell
University.*

Second Edition, Revised. 12mo. pp. 415. Cloth.
Price \$1.25, net.

"A work that, as a treatise for the instruction of the individual student as well as for class-room use, is to be warmly commended. . . . On every page of this admirably arranged volume is shown the fruit of original thought, profound erudition, and philosophical grasp of a subject which has been too often obscured by injudicious counsel." — *The Beacon*.

"An admirable work; the best results of recent research are embodied in it." — *Providence Journal*.

"The work is a valuable contribution to linguistic science, and it will be a welcome text-book in colleges and schools and to all students of philology." — *Home Journal*.

"In respect both of scholarship and of exposition, this volume is entitled to high praise. . . . There is no part of this book that cannot be read with pleasure as well as profit, and one is therefore embarrassed by the wealth of material worthy of illustration." — *New York Sun*.

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY,
66 FIFTH AVENUE NEW YORK.

4

ENGLISH PROSE

SELECTIONS WITH CRITICAL INTRODUCTIONS BY VARIOUS WRITERS,
AND GENERAL INTRODUCTIONS TO EACH PERIOD.

EDITED BY

HENRY CRAIK, LL.D.

In Five Volumes. 12mo.

-
- Volume I. From the Fourteenth to the Sixteenth Century.
Volume II. The Sixteenth Century to the Restoration.
Volume III. The Seventeenth Century.
Volume IV. The Eighteenth Century.
Volume V. Nineteenth Century from Sir Walter Scott to
Robert Louis Stevenson.

Cabinet Edition. Five Volumes in Box, \$7.50.

Student's Edition. Each Volume sold separately. \$1.10 per vol.

COMMENTS.

"If prose literature can ever be successfully studied by means of short extracts, it will be possible to conduct such a study with the aid of this book. As a companion book of Ward's 'English Poets' it is very interesting and satisfactory. In the Department of Rhetoric, this book will certainly be of greater value than any other work of the kind yet published." — PROF. H. H. NEILL, *Amherst College*.

"Mr. Craik and his coadjutors do their work admirably. Their remarks are appropriate, their selection of extracts is felicitous. We thank them for not a few happy hours." — *Literary World*.

"The extracts are carefully chosen and edited, and a brief sketch of each writer is given. These sketches are written by men who edit the different sections, and as these men are selected from the foremost of English critics, the result is that the books contain a valuable set of brief essays from able and distinguished pens. George Saintsbury, Alfred Ainger, Edmund Gosse, Norman Moore, and others besides the editor himself have contributed, and the book would have been valuable did it contain nothing but these introductory notices. The conclusions of the editors of the different authors who have summed up the characteristics of the separate men represented in the previous volume, have done their work so well, that the student is likely in the end to have a rather better idea of the writers than he would gather from his unaided study of the original and complete works of these old writers." — *Boston Courier*.

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY,

66 FIFTH AVENUE, NEW YORK.

THE ENGLISH POETS.

WITH CRITICAL INTRODUCTIONS BY VARIOUS WRITERS AND A GENERAL
INTRODUCTION BY

MATTHEW ARNOLD.

EDITED BY

THOMAS HUMPHRY WARD, M.A.

In Four Volumes. 12mo.

Vol. I. Chaucer to Donne. Vol. III. Addison to Blake.
Vol. II. Ben Jonson to Dryden. Vol. IV. Wordsworth to Tennyson.

Cabinet Edition. Four Volumes in Box, \$5.00.

Student's Edition. Each Volume sold separately. \$1.00 per vol.

"All lovers of poetry, all students of literature, all readers, will welcome the volumes of 'The English Poets.' . . . Mr. Matthew Arnold has written a most delightful introduction, full of wise thought and poetic sensibility. Very few books can be named in which so much that is precious can be had in so little space and for so little money." — *Philadelphia Times*.

"Altogether it would be difficult to select four volumes of any kind better worth owning and studying than these." — *Nation*.

"These four volumes ought to be placed in every library, and, if possible, in the hands of every student of English." — *Chronicler*.

"Ward's 'English Poets' has been acknowledged to be one of the most serviceable and discriminating contributions to the history of English poetry." — *Times*.

THE MACMILLAN COMPANY,

66 FIFTH AVENUE NEW YORK

5

1

2

3

§

•

•

•



Stanford University Libraries



3 6105 020 074 105

824.0

C28h

STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES
STANFORD AUXILIARY LIBRARY
STANFORD, CALIFORNIA 94305-6004
(415) 723-9201

All books may be recalled after 7 days

DATE DUE

MAR 1 1998
JUN 1 1998
DEC 13 1999
MAR 13 1999

JUN 10 1999
DEC 10 1999

MAR 27 2000
OCT 05 2001

